Universiteit
Leiden
The Netherlands

Institutionalizing elites : political elite formation and change in the KwaZulu-Natal provincial legislature

Francis, Suzanne

Citation
Francis, S. (2011). *Institutionalizing elites : political elite formation and change in the KwaZulu-Natal provincial legislature*. Brill, Leiden [etc.]. Retrieved from https://hdl.handle.net/1887/18561

Version: Not Applicable (or Unknown)
License:
Downloaded from: https://hdl.handle.net/1887/18561

Note: To cite this publication please use the final published version (if applicable).

Institutionalizing elites: Political elite formation and change in the KwaZulu-Natal provincial legislature

Afrika-Studiecentrum Series
/2011

Institutionalizing elites: Political elite formation and change in the KwaZulu-Natal provincial legislature

Suzanne Francis

Brill

Editorial board

copyright

Dedication

In memory of Thomas, a dear friend,
who sadly passed away in Canada
during the period in which I wrote this book

Contents

List of graphs and tables *ix*
Acknowledgements *x*
Glossary and abbreviations *xi*

INTRODUCTION *1*

1 A THEORY AND METHODOLOGY FOR THE STUDY OF ELITES *10*
The context of KwaZulu-Natal – methodological problems *18*
Methodology of the study *22*

2 HISTORICAL CONTEXTS AND POLITICAL ELITE FORMATION IN KWAZULU AND NATAL *32*
Defining political ideas and political spaces *33*
The roots of political elite formation *34*
Political elite formation during 'the struggle' *41*
Contested elite formation during the transition *57*
Key factors and contexts in elite formation prior to 1994 *71*

3 SOCIAL CHARACTERISTICS OF AN EMERGING POLITICAL ELITE *73*
Social characteristics among the political elite *75*
Social clusters of the political elite *131*
Conclusion *133*

4 POLITICAL, ORGANISATIONAL AND INSTITUTIONAL BACKGROUND OF AN EMERGING POLITICAL ELITE *135*
Initial political involvement *138*
Extent of former political involvement: Veterans and newcomers *144*
Types of former political involvement *147*
Patterns of party political identification *161*
Conclusion *173*

5 INTRA-PARTY DYNAMICS AND POLITICAL ELITE CIRCULATION *175*

The structure of opportunities within the provincial legislature *177*
Intra-party dynamics in the IFP and ANC *179*
Recruitment and circulation *184*
Volatility in political elite circulation *196*
Conclusion *200*

6 INTER-PARTY DYNAMICS, COALITION POLITICS AND CROSS PARTY ELITE BONDING *202*

The first term: Strengthening institutionalizing rules and procedures *203*
The 1999 IFP-ANC coalition: Institutionalizing certainty *210*
The IFP-DA alliance: Syncretic relationships *236*
Conclusion *247*

7 THE DEVELOPMENT OF INSTITUTIONAL CAPACITY *249*

Institutional factors that define the institutional capacity of political elites *251*
The provincial legislature and the committee system *255*
Case study: The National Council of Provinces Standing Committee in the KwaZulu-Natal provincial legislature *264*
Streams of political elites: Policy, politics and institutional capacity *274*
Conclusion *283*

CONCLUSION: THE POLITICAL ELITE OF KWAZULU-NATAL *285*

Theoretical development *295*

References *297*
Index *313*

List of graphs and tables

Graphs

3.1 Percentage of MPPs by race and party, 1994-2004 *77*
3.2 Time series of MPPs, 1994-2004 *80*
3.3 Time series of MPPs by race, 1994-2004 *81*
3.4 Percentage of MPPs by gender and party, 1994-2004 *90*
3.5 Time series of MPPs by gender, 1994-2004 *90*
3.6 Timeline of percentages of MPPs by gender, 1994-2004 *92*
3.7 Percentage of MPPs by educational qualification held *115*
3.8 Comparison of incumbent and new IFP MPPs in 1999 *118*
3.9 Number of graduate MPPs by specialisation *122*
3.10 MPPs by post-high school diploma specialisation *123*
3.11 MPPs by occupational class *124*
3.12 Percentage of types of businesses owned by MPPs *126*

Tables

3.1 Percentage of MPPs by district municipality and political party, 1994-2004 *99*
5.1 Recruitment and circulation by political party affiliation *185*
5.2 Volatility in circulation of seats by political party *198*
6.1 The total number of MPPs by party and political ideas *221*

Acknowledgements

I am deeply indebted to Alexander Johnston for his extensive comments and sage advice on all stages of the original manuscript and his unwavering encouragement during the long process of problem formulation, fieldwork research and writing. I am grateful to Nwabufo Okeke-Uzodike for his confidence in me and for providing me with the motivation that I needed to complete this book project.

I would also like to thank all the interviewees, the subject of this book, who gave up their time freely and provided me with candid insights into the inner workings of the provincial legislature and their respective political parties. This book could not have been written without such a rich empirical understanding based upon this knowledge.

I am also grateful to the National Research Foundation which provided financial support to me in the form of a Competitive Research Grant. I owe a great deal to the many people who assisted with the review process and production of this book. In particular, I would like to thank Harry Wels, Sabine Plantevin, Franca de Kort, Mieke Zwart and Dick Foeken as well as the three anonymous reviewers of the manuscript.

Finally, a special thank you to Michael Francis who created the photograph for the cover and provided me with much support during the writing of the book, and to Anastasia Elizabeth for some much needed distraction during the final editing process.

Glossary and abbreviations

ACDP	African Christian Democratic Party
Amakholwa	intellectuals, educated
Amakhosi	chiefs, chieftaincy
ANC	African National Congress
AZAPO	Azanian People's Organisation
BPC	Black People's Convention
CI	Christian Institute
CODESA	Conference for a Democratic South Africa
COSAS	Congress of South African Students
COSATU	Congress of South African Trade Unions
CPSA	Communist Party of South Africa
CST	Colonialism of a Special Type
DA	Democratic Alliance
DP	Democratic Party
FOSATU	Federation of South African Trade Unions
GEAR	Growth, Employment and Redistribution Strategy
IAM	Independent African Movement
IFP	Inkatha Freedom Party
Isolomuzi	eye of the township
Izikhulu	the great ones of the pre-Shaka period
Izingwevu	An older and more respected, higher court or assembly of leaders
JEA	Joint Executive Authority
JORAC	Joint Rent Action Committee
JSB	Joint Services Board
JTM	Joint Tagging Mechanism
KLA	KwaZulu Legislative Assembly
MAWU	Metal and Allied Workers Union
MF	Minority Front
MINMEC	Intergovernmental Relations Committee of Ministers and Members of Provincial Councils
MK	Umkhonto we Sizwe
MPPs	Members of the Provincial Parliament
NA	National Assembly
NCOP	National Council of Provinces
NCOPSC	National Council of Provinces Standing Committee
NIC	Natal Indian Congress
NNC	Natal Native Congress

NNP	New National Party
NP	National Party
NPA	Natal Provincial Administration
NPC	Natal Provincial Council
NRP	New Republican Party
NRT	Native Republic Thesis
NUMSA	National Union of Metalworkers of South Africa
NUSAS	National Union of South African Students
PAC	Pan-Africanist Congress
SACP	South African Communist Party
SADSM	South African Democratic Students Organisation
SADTU	South African Democratic Teachers Union
SDU	Self-Defence Unit
SPU	Self-Protection Unit
TEC	Transitional Executive Council
TGWU	Transport and General Workers Union
TRC	Truth and Reconciliation Commission
Ubuntu	A form of African humanism, respect of one another
UDF	United Democratic Front
UDM	United Democratic Movement
UP	United Party
UWUSA	United Workers Union of South Africa

Introduction

When I began this study I had two aims. My first aim was to contribute to a better understanding of political elite formation in an African context through an empirically rich and detailed study of the realisation, accumulation and exercise of political power. Whereas ethnicity and social class are ever present in the political life of the state they are not the key to understanding the institutional life of politics (cf. Bayart 1993). In this book I use the framework of political elite formation to aid an understanding of power. This project is a study of the agents that construct, define and bring about change through the exercise of institutionalized political power. Thus, the following questions are considered. How are political elites formed? Does the process of political elite formation affect the way political elites exercise power in KwaZulu-Natal? In what ways and with what implications do attitudes and value systems held by the political elite impact upon political institutions in KwaZulu-Natal? In what ways do parties and institutions constrain their behaviour?

Second, I wanted to find out what happened to the prolific writing on the state and political parties in what is now the Province of KwaZulu-Natal in South Africa. In the 1980s and early 1990s politics between the Inkatha Freedom Party and the African National Congress gripped political scientists, sociologists, historians and social anthropologists alike. Politics was primarily reduced to the frameworks of "ethnic conflict" and/or "class struggle" and described as youthful comrades pitted against a bureaucratic bourgeoisie and removed from any institutional context. Yet in 1994, after the first multi-party elections, this prolific writing stopped. Yes, there are some remnants of the earlier period with politics described as ethnic nationalist in normative terminology, but for the most part academics have turned elsewhere. Why is this? Is it because all the questions about politics in the province have now been ans-

wered? I do not think so. Rather, the frameworks which were used to describe politics often provided little understanding. In the post-1994 period the concepts of ethnicity and social class have even less relevance than before in aiding an understanding of institutionalized political power. Instead, I draw together and expand fragmented approaches to the study of political elites.

I redefine the study of political elites in two key ways. Firstly, an understanding of agency in institutionalized political power must draw together the elements of social and political composition, recruitment, circulation, value systems and attitudes and institutional capacity of political elites in a new framework. Political elite formation encompasses all of these factors, these factors influence each other and cannot be studied independently of one another. Secondly, any interrogation into political elite formation must exist within the context of the way in which those elites negotiate, exercise and accumulate power, that is, within the confines of institutionalized power – within the institutions of power in which they are located. Hence the character and constraints of parties and political institutions and their relationship to political elites is a key component in political elite formation and thus in understanding agency and institutions, including why post-colonial democracies in transition suceed and fail.

Political science is fundamentally about power. Investigations into the exercise of power in a variety of micro-settings are a primary way through which political scientists recognise and define power. Thus power is not independent of its object. Instead, studies of the way in which power is exercised, accumulated and tempered by a multiplicity of actors in a variety of institutional settings provides the substance from which political scientists can define and recognise the very nature of power. Central to these investigations of power are agents that define and bring about change. Without agents, power does not exist. These agents are individuals or groups who exercise their power within the context of their environment, often empowered to act within it but constrained by its framework. The most important of these – in a democracy at least – are the members of the power elite that exist within political institutions and whom the public have mandated to act. These agents are the political elite.

The term political elite is, for the purposes of this book, defined as a group of individuals whose legitimate relationship to the institutions of power enables them to possess the key political influence or take the most important political decisions about that environment. There are many types of political elite and political elites coexist (and overlap) with other elites. However the approach of this book is limited to an analysis of the political elite that is made up of the elected members of the provincial government of KwaZulu-Natal over two terms of office from 1994-2004. There are two reasons for this. Firstly, they are identifiable and accessible. Secondly, they occupy the key institutional positions

and therefore legitimately exercise political power, and make choices and decisions that effect change in the province and reflect the perspectives of their political parties in their interactions with each other. Furthermore, such elites, while exercising power, are constrained by the actual and potential power of political institutions (national and provincial), political parties and one another. Hence, this book is a study of legislative political elites and the analysis of political elites within political parties focuses upon parliamentary parties and not the "party in the county" which falls outside of its remit.

A powerful and influential "elite theory hypothesis" holds that political power is concentrated in the hands of a few. In this book, this is taken as a given but uninteresting factor. From this hypothesis there are two distinct approaches to the study of political elites. The first is a normative approach in which two distinct trends are evident. The first trend combines the capacity of political elites with the operation of power. As such, the special talents that political elites possess are viewed as a justification for their domination, with the public playing a subordinate role. In the second trend, the operation of power is measured against the desirability of a democratically based polity. As such, the key egalitarian aspiration is the creation of an elite group that is responsive to the public and shares power with them. These two trends are rejected for the purposes of this book, for two reasons. Firstly, by focusing on what should be rather than what is, they contradict the central elite theory hypothesis upon which they are based – that some level of elite domination is inevitable. Secondly, in seeking primarily to evaluate and either justify or improve the relationship of elites to society, the approach does not sufficiently recognise that the character of the elite group within the context of the particular institutional arrangement may be the primary factor in shaping the form of power.

The second approach to the study of political elites, and the one adopted for the purposes of this book, is an empirical approach. In this approach, theorists maintain that in any political dispensation, despite the relative desirability of the form and character of it, political power is concentrated in the hands of a political elite. Such studies of political elites have a long, but fragmented, history in political science. In this empirical approach, the key elements in political analysis are the recruitment, behaviour or ideology of the political elite group, with very few studies linking these three criteria into a comprehensive analysis (Baker 1997: 59-66). Moreover, research on the political recruitment of elites has tended to be narrowly focused, examining their social background, drawn predominantly from a range of documentary sources and in the context of questions which evaluate the level of political representation by elites. Furthermore, studies that consider the behaviour of elites focus upon the membership of committees by elites, voting records and the visible minutes of parliaments.

Finally, research on political ideology has tended to focus upon the attitudes and values that political elites possess.

In this book I examine, through extensive empirical fieldwork research, political elite formation in the Provincial Legislature of KwaZulu-Natal over a ten-year period from 1994-2004. The period of this study covers two successive provincial government elections and two terms of office. The first election was the founding election of South Africa's new democracy. The time period of this book is deliberate. The first 10 years following the founding election in KwaZulu-Natal represent the most substantial period in which patterns and trends are established. The "two turnover test" in transition theory provides time period markers in which to measure the prospects for democracy of any given country (Huntington 1991). Hence, the patterns and trends established during this period set the path for the future.

I adopt an empirical approach to the study of political elites based on extensive fieldwork research. This approach expands and redefines the study of elites in three ways. Firstly, my investigation draws together the elements of recruitment, behaviour and ideology in a new methodological analysis of political elite formation. Secondly, I interrogate the relationship of political elite formation to the various ways in which those same political elites, negotiate, exercise and accumulate power. Thirdly, I contend that an understanding of the agency of political elites requires contextualisation within and through the dynamics in which political parties co-exist and within the institutions of power within which they are located. Hence, the character and constraints of parties and political institutions and their relationship to political elites is a central component in political elite formation.

KwaZulu-Natal is one of nine provinces in South Africa, established on the eve of the first multi-racial democratic elections in 1994.[1] The province consists of the territories of the former KwaZulu homeland and the former province of Natal, each with former separate administrative structures. In 1994, provincial political institutions were established in KwaZulu-Natal, the middle sphere of government juxtaposed between national and local government in South Africa's, at best quasi-federal, three-sphere system of government.

The powers and functions of the provincial parliament are divided into legislative (parliament) and executive (government) authority. Executive authority to prepare and initiate provincial policy and legislation and to implement national legislation in the province is vested in the Premier and Executive Council com-

[1] The new South Africa was created by the final act of the Tricameral Parliament through the instrument of the Republic of South Africa (1993) *Constitution of the Republic of South Africa* (Act No.200 of 1993) which was assented to on 25 January 1994 and came into effect on 24 April 1994.

prising the Members of the Executive Council (MECs). Legislative authority to maintain oversight and monitoring of provincial executive authority and to ensure that executive organs are accountable to the provincial parliament remains with the Members of the Provincial Parliament (MPPs). A provincial parliament may prepare such mechanisms as is deemed necessary to perform its functions. In the province of KwaZulu-Natal these oversight and accountability mechanisms comprise of parliamentary portfolio and standing committees for each functional and policy area and of legislative sittings of parliament.

Constitutionally, the province has exclusive powers of provincial competence in functional areas listed in Schedule 5 of the constitution and shares competence with the national sphere of government in functional areas listed in Schedule 4 of the constitution. However, there are further institutional links between national and provincial spheres. In terms of executive functions, the Intergovernmental Relations Committee of Ministers and Members of Provincial Councils (MINMEC) gives effect to the principles of cooperative government and the intergovernmental nature of the South African policy environment. The national minister for a policy sector and the nine corresponding provincial MECs in that policy area meet on a regular basis in this sectoral forum to discuss policy and legislation within that particular policy sector. In terms of legislative links between the national and provincial spheres, The National Council of Provinces (the second legislative house in the national parliament) is comprised a ten member delegation from each province to ensure that provincial interests are considered in the national sphere. The NCOP provides scrutiny of national policy and legislation and provides a forum through which provinces can initiate national policy recommendations.

However, the clearest links between the national and provincial spheres lies not in the institutional arrangements, but rather in political parties. The main parties in KwaZulu-Natal – the African National Congress, the Inkatha Freedom Party and the Democratic Alliance (formerly Democratic Party) – are also represented in the national government, albeit with a national overwhelming ANC majority.

The provincial legislature of KwaZulu-Natal is one of only two provincial administrative structures in which the African National Congress (ANC) has not held an overwhelming majority of seats, and is the only provincial legislature in which the Inkatha Freedom Party (IFP) remains a significant political contender for political power.

My examination of the key issues of this book, within this political and institutional framework, is divided into seven chapters. In Chapter 1, I locate the study in the main debates on political elites and explicate the various ways in which research on political elites has been previously problematised. I further consider the literature pertaining to the study of political parties in this political

context and explain why it does not adequately capture the realities of power accumulation.

In the second chapter I locate political elite formation within the historical contexts of contested political ideas and shifting institutional spaces. Through these concepts I discuss the roots of political elite formation in early political movements, political elite formation during the struggle period and political elite formation during the democratic transition. I make a series of claims. Firstly, the political elite was ideologically fractured[2] in increasingly entrenched camps of contradictory and internally fragmented alliances. At different points in time, particular ideological discourses were stronger than others. Despite this, both the IFP and ANC contained particular forms of Africanist political ideas that competed with other discourses. Secondly, the political parties represented in the legislature that is the focus of this study had prior experience of institutionalized power through one of three parallel systems of legitimate authority. These included formal political institutions, informal institutions created through the merging of struggle components and the institution of traditional leadership. In the course of this experience, spaces were claimed by parties as elites personalised their positions and came to be seen as the institution. Thirdly, as a consequence of the autonomy of provincial political elites located in the territory that made up KwaZulu and Natal, provincial political discourses from this province came to influence disproportionately national political dynamics.

In Chapter 3, I explore, through empirical data, the social composition of the political elite and categorise the elite by race, gender, age, regional identification, family and lineage ties, religion, education, professional occupation and community related activities. My account depicts a political elite which despite its diversity has become, in many of its characteristics, increasingly homogenous. I claim that this indicates that social bias is present in elite formation. Although heterogeneous, the political elite is unrepresentative of the provincial population and in many cases, political elites already possessed elite status prior to their political involvement. In comparing the political elite by political party, I illustrate that discernible clusters of elites are apparent within and across parties. Within and across parties, social capital exists and serves to provide an additional guarantee to political elites. Syncretic affiliations further serve to integrate elites into a series of discernible clusters and to knit those clusters together. The key element in most political parties is an elite that has become, in the post-1994 period, both fluid and fragile.

In Chapter 4, I turn to an examination, again through empirical data, of the political institutional and organisational composition of the political elite. I

---

[2] The term fractured refers to divisions on the basis of attitudes, values and ideologies as well as organisational and institutional divisions.

explore the reasons for, circumstances of, extent and types of former political involvement by the political elite and divide the elite into specific political categories based upon these experiences. I demonstrate a measure of continuity with elite actors of the past and explicate the types of political experiences that different clusters of elites possess. I claim that specific political experiences have guaranteed clusters of the political elite a place within the provincial legislature. Despite this, I further claim that political elite affiliations were, for the most part, initially based upon local contexts and personal circumstances rather then the grand political context. In some cases, limited choice and a desire for political involvement led individuals into political affiliations which further injected a multiform dimension to political parties. This to some extent explains the formation of particular political clusters within parties. For many, the reasons for their particular affiliations were not pertinent in the post 1994 period. While some have become assimilated within party structures to such an extent that an alternative political home would be inconceivable to them, in other cases political elites have little present day affinity to their political party. I contend that the consequence of this is twofold. Firstly, in some cases, political elites have come to identify their interests with the legislature. Secondly, the potential for increased fluidity within the legislature is present as some political elites struggle to redefine their affiliations.

In Chapter 5, I explore recruitment and circulation within the provincial legislature through the intra-party dynamics that exist in the IFP and ANC. I explain the institutional context and the relevance of political parties that operate within the legislature which provide boundaries and opportunities for elite movement. I explore the party list processes in 1994 and 1999 and the floor crossing processes and events that occurred, locating these within political party political culture and social and political capital as it has emerged within political parties in the legislature. I make a series of claims, in relation to the character and composition of the elite. Firstly, the character of the political elite that has come to occupy key institutional positions has changed markedly since 1994. Secondly, the fluidity of the political elite has increased, in part, as a consequence of this changing composition and as a consequence of internal party political culture. These political cultures are fractured and fragmented, with clear differences within and between political elites in both the ANC and IFP. Thirdly, circulation of the political elite in the legislature is not a democratic indicator. Instead it is the result of an increasing volatility due to non-democratic behaviour by the political elite.

In Chapter 6, inter-party elite bonding is explored in the context of the post-1994 institutional dynamics. I examine the roots and character of the IFP-ANC coalition formed in 1999 and the impact of this upon parties and institutions in the legislature. I then turn to an exploration of the breakdown of this coalition

and the emergence of an IFP-DA alliance. I make a series of claims. First, I contend that the coalition brought together a series of value and belief systems that was not congruent with the new institutions and, in fact, began to undermine them. In addition, I show how one of the signatories to the coalition was undermined by it through a disruption of organisational ties, the subordination of the party to the state and a changing relationship with core constituencies. I then claim that conflict between the IFP and ANC in the use of prevailing rules of political etiquette (as a part of political culture) was the key reason for the coalition breakdown, despite it being manifested through political issues. I further claim that the alliance between the IFP and DA formed in November 2003 was reflective of a shift in the character and composition of the political elite in the DA and that unlike the unity project of the IFP-ANC coalition, this alliance is reflective of shared values and policy orientations.

In Chapter 7, I interrogate the developing institutional capacity of the political elite as it is relevant to political elite formation. I explore the level of active participation of elites, types of issues that elites prioritise and dominate the parliamentary context, support systems provided to the elite and availability of training provided, as understood by the elite. I make a series of interconnected claims. Firstly, I argue that the institutional capacity of political elites is influenced by their previous political experience, educational levels, occupational types and other forms of individual abilities. Secondly, I argue that elites are bounded by their understanding of the institutional environment, comprehension of their role within it, and ability to navigate the parliamentary environment. There are two further consequences of this. Firstly, the types of issues that dominate the legislature are a product of an undeveloped capacity among elites in general. These issues that are prioritised further reinforce instability in the legislature as they are not central to the development agenda of the province. Secondly, I further claim that the dominance and longevity of some elites is the product of their developed capacity in relation to other elites. In some cases, these elites become the policy representatives of their parties seeking to influence the agenda. In others, their longevity influences fluidity in the legislature as they are offered an "additional guarantee" across party lines.

In the final chapter, the conclusion, I draw the sub-parts of the study together by focussing upon the nature of political elite formation and the characteristics of the emerging political elite. I claim that although political elite formation remains guided by the history of party fracture lines that exist in the province, the new institutional context has provided for greater party fluidity and instability in the legislature of a political elite that came to power through fragmented and contradictory alliances. The political elite has become more homogenous, and for some, their contradictory affiliations tie their interests to the legislature. In addition, an emerging political culture of value systems and

ideology is beginning to take shape across political parties in a manner that has the potential to undermine the democratic institutions of government. As a product of this, and an underdeveloped institutional capacity, certain issues dominate the provincial agenda as the elite come to redefine their interests. Alongside this the longevity of a few is guaranteed. As such, political elite formation in KwaZulu-Natal has the potential to undermine the basis of institutions on which democracy in the province rests.

1

A theory and methodology for the study of elites

The concept of a political elite is a simple one; that all societies no matter their ideology or social structure are in fact ruled by a small group of individuals designated variously as a political elite, a ruling class or a power elite. In this book I use the term political elite. In the context of KwaZulu-Natal, this is a political elite in a constitutional democracy with a violent political history of acute political fractures. The term political elite is most commonly used among elite theorists. I set aside the term ruling class because of its relationship to the term class. A political elite is not simply a group of people that rule politically but belong to an economic class. Their basis of power is not necessarily related to the means of production and they are not necessarily primarily driven as an economic class. I further set aside the term power elite because the term power does not designate precisely enough the essential relationship to the state, politics and rule.

Elite theorists take as their starting point the causes and consequences of inequality in society. The key characteristics of any society are consequences of the characteristics of the political elite. The historical transformation of all states is a history of political elites. Hence, for the majority of elite theorists a classless society with political equality belongs to the dreams of utopia. While they may or may not be *anti-democratic*, on the whole they are sceptical of the possibilities of realising democracy in whichever of its forms. While the concept of a political elite is relatively simple, elite theory remains a divided field and the operational definition of a political elite is contested and inadequate.

The theory of the ruling class put forward by Italian classical political scientist Gaetano Mosca posits that society is divided into two groups, a minority which rules and a majority that is ruled (Mosca 1939). For Mosca, the organized nature of groups within the political elite is based upon common material interests. But the location of that grouping is undefined. Extending Mosca's argument is American classical sociologist C. Wright Mills' famous study of the power elite in America in which he posits the idea that the organizational basis of an elite group is the foundation upon which the elite have the capacity to rule. Three unified and interdependent elite structures that consist of the key political, corporate economic and military personnel together constitute the power elite. Trade unions and interest groups make up a middle level of power and the general public or the masses are confined to the bottom level in which they are effectively powerless (C. Wright-Mills 1956). Like Mosca, Mills' thesis suffers from a failure to fully operationalise his own definition in the context of political power and political institutions. While he discusses the spheres in which the elite is located and through which its members coalesce, he does not specify at what levels within those spheres they exist or how they deny access to power to other groupings within those spheres. Hence, for Mills it would seem that the political elite is simultaneously everyone within those spheres, but no-one specific.

French-Italian classical sociologist Vilfredo Pareto saw rule by elites as inevitable, though he emphasised their cyclical quality of rise and decline, and he focused closely on the institutions of government as the crucial sites of elite power and influence. Thus in contrast to Mosca and Mills, Pareto's upper stratum consists of a *governing* elite. They are political and most likely to be parliamentarians (Pareto 1935). In this theory, the political elite is directly related to the environment and instruments through which power operates and they are active rather than passive entities within it. Drawing upon Pareto's distinction, I define the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal as the elected members of the Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal, because their legitimate relationship to the institutions of power enables them, within constitutional and institutional constraints, to take the most important political decisions in the post-1994 period.

While operational definitions of the political elite are contested, the focus of literature on political elites in political institutions is also fragmented with the key works devoted to singular studies of either the recruitment, or the behaviour or the ideology of elites in what is a literature that predominantly explores political elites in the context of Europe and America.

In this study, I am concerned to integrate existing fragmented theoretical and methodological approaches to the study of political elites and then to extend

them in a study of the political elite in the context of KwaZulu-Natal. As such I explore a number of key themes.

The first key debate of this study is the social composition of the political elite, which is a salient concern of classical elite theorists and contemporary analysts of political recruitment alike. In particular, classical elite theorists are concerned with the relationship between elites and classes and the social class of the political elite. In general, such theorists posit that there is a high degree of self-recruitment among elites of the same social class. Do the political elite share a common social background which leads to similar beliefs and attitudes among them? (Pareto 1935) Are these beliefs, intertwined with self-interest, exhibited by members who best serve their own material interests through collective social reproduction? Mosca would agree in that the political elite in his analysis is an organized group formed on the basis of common material interests that include social position, property or class (Mosca 1939). Such elites, in his view represent the social values of their own social background in what is a complex social tapestry of privilege, ideological conformity and common interest. Extending this argument is Mills, whose thesis of the power elite posits that the capacity of the three interdependent elite structures has a particular organizational basis for its rule (C. Wright-Mills 1956). While sharing social composition, these elites can represent divergent interests because each interlocking structure is able to coalesce around its components' interests in a manner that perpetuates their power.

More recent studies of the social composition of the political elite are located within the framework of political recruitment in the study of legislatures. A key question in this body of literature is how far the social composition of parliament is reflective of the electorate? Commonly a-typical of the electorate the social background of the political elite has a key influence on their attitudes and behaviour (Norris *et al.* 1997). In the United Kingdom, the political elite essentially represents the 'chattering classes' (Norris & Lovenduski 1997) of professional occupations through supply side variables of political recruitment. That is, candidates for political recruitment demonstrate some evidence of self-segregation. Those who make themselves available for office are primarily a-typical in terms of social class, age, education and professional occupation.

In the African literature there is a near total absence of studies of the social composition of the political elite. One notable exception, and a key influence of this study, is Kuper's 1850-1930s study of the African bourgeoisie in which he discusses the boundaries to professional development among Africans caused by the racially restrictive practices of the segregationist state (Kuper 1965). Despite this, members of the African political elite in South Africa were an educated elite drawn from the professional classes. They held employment in the fields of teaching, law, medicine, religion and journalism that provided them

with the capacity and resolve to combine their profession with politics. Hence, Kuper's conclusions in the context of the South African elite support studies that focus on Europe – that the political elite was drawn predominantly from the middle classes and was certainly a-typical of the broader population.

Contemporary elite theorists discuss this emerging trend of social differentiation among the electorate and the political elite as evidence of the increasing availability of careerist politicians for whom politics is certainly a professional career. Max Weber could assert of his own time that politicians are frequently living *from* politics as well as *for* politics (Weber 1958). In present day for the political elite, politics is now a profession (Wessels 1997). This professionalisation of politics is thus thought to produce parliaments that are more socially homogeneous and potentially less responsive to the diverse views and needs of the electorate.

There are, however, a number of key weaknesses to these previous approaches to the study of the social composition of the political elite that this study addresses. The first is context specific. There are no previous studies of the social composition of the political elite in the KwaZulu-Natal context. In addition, with the exception of Kuper's study, most studies of the social composition of the political elite have been conducted in a context where there is an absence of acute political fractures and take place in the context of advanced democratic institutions. That is, elite recruitment takes place in a stable political environment where the key questions of who holds power in those environments are not life and death matters. As citizens become more apathetic it is likely that the social composition of the elite might become similar in such contexts. However, this assumption in the literature is not necessarily the case in other contexts because it has not been tested there.

Secondly, a key weakness of these previous studies is discipline specific. By and large, these studies are located within the realm of sociological theory and as such they focus almost entirely upon the social background of the political elite through an analysis of educational levels, professional occupation and social class. As such, there is an inability among these theorists to explain the success of these political elites in institutionalizing their own interests – as they are related to social composition. While I would agree that social composition is an important and essential component of any study of political elites, including this one, the *political* aspect of the political elite is largely marginalized or ignored. As a result, these studies of the agency of power miss the key methods of agency. Where it is included the focus is almost entirely upon the party political affiliation of the political elite and the political experience that members of the elite possess. While these factors might provide insights into the behaviours and attitudes of the political elite they may not be the most important factors in assessing elite affiliations and associative patterns in a

political context where the choices of the political elite were restricted by an authoritarian and brutal political environment. Nor do they explain the reasons for the continued political affiliations of some elites and the fluidity of others when environments change. Hence, the political composition of the political elite needs to be studied, and within it, the political choices in terms of patterns of affiliation should be analysed.

Do the political elite constitute a self-conscious political class transcending party political affiliations? Do they live from politics, determine their own composition and at times act in unity? Schumpeter, for example, rejects democracy as a method of public participation and asserts instead that democracy is simply a structured arrangement for reaching decisions among an elite through the open competition for the people's vote (Schumpeter 1954). As such, he presents the abstract possibility that a political class is more likely in certain electoral systems. The party list system of proportional representation employed in KwaZulu-Natal means that the candidate lists are constructed by party bosses, albeit with some measure of grassroots support, and this factor inserts a significant demand side variable into the selection of the political elite. That is, the criteria by which the political elite are selected and recruited are determined by party bosses or selectors. Hence, an incumbent political elite in KwaZulu-Natal is provided with the possibility to choose likeminded candidates. Whether or not they do indeed constitute a political class is dependent upon their political composition and political choices.

Closely related to the concept of a political class is the theory of elite circulation. Elite theorists do not provide a general theory for the rise and fall of the political elite, as class theorists do. Instead, political elite circulation refers to the replacement of an elite by another elite in its entirety or partly. It can imply accommodation or assimilation of individuals or groups into an existing political elite as well as their marginalisation. Pareto implies that political change only occurs in the form of elite circulation. For Pareto it does not matter whether a government espouses democracy or fascism because popular representation does not exist. Rather, political change occurs when new groups are absorbed into the political elite as old elites become weak and lose their will. For Pareto, there are two kinds of political elite. The first consists of those in power whose aim is to protect their own positions of power and privilege by conserving the existing entrenched institutional format.

The second consists of an innovatory elite who, once they replace the existing elite, become conservative like the former grouping. And the cycle continues. Hence, for Pareto, the basis of political elite circulation is competition predominantly between the political elite and a new emerging political elite from the lower strata, who may or may not have been previously excluded. Whether an established political elite survives is dependent upon whether or not

it possesses the necessary attributes to do so. The political elite may use a whole range of strategies to fend off challenges ranging from trickery and manipulation to the use of state power. Under what circumstances in KwaZulu-Natal is competition not the basis of elite circulation and can competiton and the restriction or absence of competition co-exist across elite groups and both simultaneously form the basis of circulation?

In what ways do the political elite keep order and maintain position by the use of ideology and political values? According to Mosca the bureaucratization of the state allows for a ruling elite of diverse interests to come to power since there is no longer the need for extraordinary individuals to rule. Although he does not discuss the concept of elite circulation he implies that it exists through new organized interests seeking power. Through competition for pre-eminence winners and losers are produced, the winners are ultimately the political elite.

While Pareto links the capacity of individuals to their status as an elite, and Mosca discusses the elite as organized groups, a third perspective exists among eite theorists. This is a virtual absence of elite circulation. The power elite are unified in contrast to a passive and fragmented mass society (Wright-Mills 1956). Indeed if social position is the central factor positions of power of the political elite may not always be open to challenge. Rather, each new generation of the political elite comes to perpetuate the same interests as the old. In explaining the reformism of European social democracy, German political sociologist Robert Michels shows in an interesting test case of elite circulation that assimilation rather than outright replacement is a mode of circulation (Michels 1915). This is in keeping with Dye and Zeigler's study of contemporary American politics – that compromise and accommodation shields the political elite from the public. While the political elite make deals amongst themselves to further their own interests it provides the political elite with autonomy and shields them from losing power. It is the irony of democracy that the very survival of democracy depends upon the actions of the political elite (Dye & Zeigler 1990).

A key weakness of both classical and more recent preceding studies of elite circulation is that "circulation" is rarely applied within and among the existing political elite. Rather, it is contextualised in discussions of a political elite and an excluded non-elite seeking to enter already established and consolidated democratic institutions. This differs in this study. First, in this book, circulation is examined within and between the political elite and across political parties. Secondly, in the context of this study, the institutions are new so there are no incumbents within them. A second weakness in the literature on elite theory is the absence of any extensive discussion about the differences and distinctions between political elites that result in replacement, accommodation and marginalisation within the political elite because the theory has not been extensively

applied to empirical studies. Elite theorists consider that the attributes or capacity or organized nature of the elite to force or fend off circulation is the key factor. Hence the methods by which replacement, accommodation and marginalisation occur is the focus, rather than the underlying social and political characteristics and attitudes and values that elites possess that lead to circulation. A key reason for linking the different and fragmented approaches to the study of political elites in this study is because the underlying characteristics of social and particularly political composition, and the behaviours and ideology of the political elite may explain elite circulation. In turn, circulation may also impact upon behaviour and ideology. It is my contention that they form an intrinsic link and should be studied together.

Hence, a third debate that is explored in this book is the attitudes and values that the political elite possess. Rather than simply considering these as they impact upon public policy, these I extend into a discussion of the impact of attitudes and values upon the institutions of power. I explore this in a cross-party manner in an examination of inter-party elite bonding and the impact of this upon individual political parties and the political institutions of the legislature. Elite attitudes and values refer to the belief systems that the political elite possess. It can refer to substantive belief systems such as ideology. Sereno's work places ideology at the heart of the reproduction of power. His claim that 'in the realm of politics, beliefs, no matter how absurd, are the common patrimony of rulers' (Sereno 1962: 109) illustrates the contention that elite actions are governed by their ideological passions. All members of a political elite believe, however minimally, in the ideology they express. These ideological beliefs can be an important method through which they coalesce. Attitudes and values can also refer to a method of politics such as a form of political etiquette which is acceptable and understood among a political elite. Customary cultural values can transcend party politics and shape the behaviour of the political elite (MacGaffey 1970). The rules and procedures of customary good manners can be the formula through which informal political relationships operate. These rules can act as the basis for inter-elite interactions and draw the boundaries of inclusion and exclusion of the group (MacGaffey 1970). Hence, both types of value system are explored in this book as they impact upon power accumulation.

The Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal was constructed in the period 1990-1994 out of a pacted transition at the national level of politics in South Africa. The new institutions of government that emerged accommodated a political elite of acute political fractures. Within the body of contemporary democratic elite theory, researchers have been concerned to construct ideal type models of democratic transitions. In these studies, theorists intrinsically link the substantive and procedural value systems of political elites to the concept of

democracy. Karl and Schmitter's comparative focus upon four transition types and the implications of these for democracy illustrates that, through foundational pacts in new democracies, the substantive policy and procedural interests of dominant groups are included. Through agreements the scope of interests is bounded (Karl & Schmitter 1991). Foundational pacts thus limit representation to dominance by existing pre-pact groups of power holders. In addition, they marginalise challengers negotiating a new basis for inclusion. Both the substantive policy and procedural agreements that emerge from such elite pacts result in a compromised democracy. The success of the agreements made also lies in the co-optation of groups. In contrast, Burton & Higley distinguish between substantive and procedural ideal elite types as they manifest in three configurations. The first of these typologies is disunified elites where politics is constructed in zero-sum terms, there is little cooperation and consensus, political elites do not restrict competition to within the system and there is often violent confrontation. In the second ideal type, that of ideologically unified elites, the political system is highly centralized, elites are characterized by shared value systems on substantive programmes and dissent is not tolerated. Finally, in the third type, that of consensually unified elites, politics occurs through bargaining and compromise within the realm of political institutions. Such elites agree upon the fundamental rules and procedures even if their substantive programmes differ (Burton & Higley 1987). Contemporary democratic elite theorists who are concerned to construct ideal typologies focus predominantly upon the founding period of institutions. Hence, the question is what happens afterwards and how do the political elite change and transform while in power? The answer to this can only be found through a longtitudinal study such as this.

Political theorists who focus primarily upon institutional democracy claim that the behaviour of political elites is moderated by, and within, democratic political institutions. Indeed the substantive test of democracy is whether the political elite hands over power to a set of rules. In the principle of institutional compromise elite groups in constant struggle submit their interests to competition, so that conflict becomes structured within institutions and procedures. As such, compromise becomes the main method through which conflict is processed and uncertainty is institutionalized (Przeworski 1995, 1986). Closely connected is the thesis that modern democratic institutions will somewhat moderate the values and attitudes of the political elite. In Italy, real political institutional change metamorphosed the informal relationships between the political elite (Putnam 1993).

None of the aforementioned studies so far have considered the reverse analysis – what is the impact institutionally when the attitudes and values of the political elite change or are not re-moulded? Can established values and atti-

tudes re-mould political institutions? This is a key debate in this book. This ties in conceptually with the theory of the *longue duree*, that modern institutions sometimes show themselves to be fragile and un-entrenched in relation to other deeper, and not explicitly political traditions and values which may be consolidated among a population (Bloch 1924). If this is the case, is it possible that such traditions and values may penetrate political institutions and that the political elite may come to coalesce around them? This study seeks to answer this question.

A final debate in this study concerns the development of institutional capacity among the political elite. There are very few existing studies of political elite institutional capacity yet in focusing upon what the political elite *do* in office, and whether they succeed, should be a key means to evaluate their inter-elite relationships and longevity. For example, in Brazil, although the political elite were acutely sensitive to the pervasive socio-economic problems they were unable to institute any concerted efforts to improve the situation substantially (Reis & Cheribub 1995). The authors were unable to explain why this was so. This raises the question of what happens in terms of inter-elite relationships when institutional capacity is not evident? On what basis does the political elite operate? Does this impact on the durability of the elite or does the agenda have to be reformulated in order to correlate with available abilities?

In Poland's transition from communism to democracy the legislative programme of the political elite failed as a consequence of political elite incapacity. As a consequence, it led to the collapse of one of the political parties in the legislature (Wesolowski 1992). Hence, in some cases incapacity may lead to elite circulation and replacement. Thoenes, posits that in welfare state systems there are no longer any real ideological discussions and policy discussions are reduced to the technical sphere. The political elite become beholden to those with technical expertise and so the system becomes a-political (Thoenes 1970). In cases where political parties agree on the essentials of policy what then differentiates the political elite from one another? How does this impact upon the policy agenda and inter-elite relationships in the absence of technical expertise? Who holds power in the absence of capacity and what does this mean for the institutionalization of democracy?

Having set out the key theoretical debates that this study contributes to I now consider the political context of KwaZulu-Natal.

The context of KwaZulu-Natal – methodological problems

The contextual literature on KwaZulu-Natal is largely disconnected from political science concepts and meanings. There are no studies of the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal in the post-transition period. Political scientists have largely

shied away from this fractured and contested political context. However in the period of late apartheid and during the transition there is a proliferation of writing on the province,some of which has serious methodological problems of validity.

The main challenge faced by political scientists writing during the period of late-apartheid political tensions was methodological. Firstly, the authors had very limited access to primary information through fieldwork interviews as Inkatha had essentially "closed shop" to providing extensive academic and media interviews. In fact, there is no literature on Inkatha that bases its findings on empirical and/or qualitative primary sources. Authors chose to, or were forced to; rely upon documentary sources and/or newspaper articles and/or secondary sources. While such sources are valid, they are certainly not enough to understand the complexity of the *internal* dynamics of Inkatha which has an operational culture that is multiform. Simply, in order to write authoritatively about elites one must interview them.

Some of the other literature on Inkatha in this period contains serious methodological problems that may be considered as visible bias. One such example is Mzala's work (Mzala 1988) which is presented as an authoritative text on Inkatha. The book has been reviewed in at least 13 serious academic journals. Mzala is a pseudonym for Jabulani Nobleman Nxumalo, an ANC and SACP member and Umkhonto we Sizwe (MK) soldier involved in the war with Inkatha. He possessed knowledge about the ANC and SACP perceptions of, and *approach to,* Inkatha. Two methodological challenges remain. First, Mzala's own role is not stated openly in the publication and hence the author's broader influence on the findings are hidden. Secondly, and more importantly, the validity of much of the subject matter which required knowledge about the *internal* workings of Inkatha or Inkatha's perceptions of the ANC and SACP is highly questionable. The reason for this is that the author by way of his role as an MK operative did not have access to the inner workings of this party so could not have known about this. In reality then, the control of the intellectual space was also part of the political war in this province and some of the texts must be seen as such.

A further key area in which there are methodological problems in the literature is that of political violence in KwaZulu-Natal between the ANC-United Democratic Front (UDF) and the IFP. My first criticism of this body of literature is that it is heavily pro-ANC and anti-IFP. As the body of literature on violence has grown this trend is repeated without any interrogation of the previous literature. Some, but not all, of this literature is written by intellectuals who themselves sympathised with the ideas and aims of the UDF and were writing at a time when the conflict on the ground was most intense. This somewhat translates into the frameworks that are then employed in analysis. For

example, different frameworks are employed to analyse the ANC and the IFP. The ANC – UDF role in political violence is primarily considered in the framework of a "just war" including the establishment of Self-Defence Units (SDUs) whereas IFP orchestrated violence including the establishment of Self-Protection Units (SPUs) is seen as within the realm of warlord[1] politics. Part of the problem is that the predominant form of analysis was class-based analysis that developed out of the sub-discipline of area studies.[2] Within the social sciences and development studies, class-based analysis became the hegemonic analytical framework through which colonialism, oppression and struggle politics was discussed. Other frameworks were sidelined and class theory overshadowed other frameworks (cf. Etzioni-Halevy 1993). The dominant intellectual analysis was thus closer to the rhetoric of the ANC during the 1980s and early 1990s than it was to the IFP rhetoric. Hence, the activist-type discourse employed by the ANC became the dominant discourse in both struggle politics and within intellectual analysis. Examples of this literature include John Saul's work (Saul 1991) and that of Robert Price (Price 1991).

Moreover, because political violence often became diffused through other conflicts and because of the refusal of the IFP to participate in the Truth and Reconciliation Commission, the total figure of casualties from political violence will never fully be known. The South African Truth and Reconciliation Commission failed to establish a framework of reference to consider political violence that was committed in KwaZulu-Natal by ANC-UDF perpetrators against IFP victims and by IFP perpetrators against ANC-UDF victims. Its mandate was established to hear human rights violations in the context of state and victim and thus failed to provide an effective framework through which "black-on-black" violence could be considered. As a result, the IFP did not fully participate in the TRC investigations and no-one can say with accuracy, whether the ANC-UDF or the IFP fared better or worse from the political violence. Moreover, in tending to ascribe blame through a count of the number of human lives claimed in political violence, the central factor of who profited is lost. This can only be considered in relation to politics; that is, in measuring who fared better or worse one should consider the level of moral power gained from the violence, rather than a simple count of human lives.

Because the majority of literature on political violence is not written from the discipline of political science it tends not to consider political institutions

---

[1] For a detailed discussion of the term warlord and its contextualisation, see Reno 1999.

[2] See for example, the core readings and key themes that make up area studies course curricula in university departments, particularly in the United Kingdom during this period. The curricula taught during this period at the Institute for Development Studies at the University of Sussex is one example.

and political structures. As such, it does not consider the different impact that these had on the mobilising strategies of the political movements. Instead, the prevailing contention is that political violence was in the interests of, and controlled by, political movements as part of a grand design. Little interest is taken in competing centres of power within political movements or in the way in which competing centres of power and their institutional location forced an almost inevitable conflict between the ANC-UDF and IFP.

A further problem is source validity. Chalenges of source validity occur in two main ways. First, most literature relies heavily upon "independent sources" that witnessed violence or, who were quoted in newspaper articles as witnessing violence, whose own ideological preferences are not interrogated. With the merging of the ANC's armed wing, Umkhonto we Sizwe (MK) with civic movements in KwaZulu-Natal as part of a concerted strategy, many independent sources within the civics in the province were not ideologically independent. A case in point is Levine's account of violence in the Natal midlands where the eye-witness accounts of violence between the ANC-UDF and IFP were provided by people who were ANC and UDF affiliated, and so was the key author, none of which is stated in the publication (Levine 1999). A second challenge of source validity is when authors unproblematically use politically motivated texts without interrogating them. A case in point might be the use of Mzala's conclusions on the internal workings of the IFP as fact by later authors without considering the relationship to the site of knowledge of the author.

In terms of methodological validity I rely upon two authors to provide a partial account of political violence in KwaZulu-Natal. The first is Anthea Jeffrey and her 900-page account of the different theories of political violence developed by the ANC and the IFP (Jeffrey 1997). This volume provides a significant contribution to understanding the wide chasms of interpretations of violence that were held by members of the different movements. The second author is Alexander Johnston who illustrates in its proper political context how there was more than one centre of power within the ANC in KwaZulu-Natal that had different approaches to the question of violence and to negotiations with the IFP (Johnston 1997 and 1994). These two authors provided the basis through which I was then able to explore political violence as it related to political elite formation in KwaZulu-Natal in my fieldwork.

In light of the theoretical debates and questions that guide this study and the previous problems of methodology in this context I now turn to a discussion of the methodological framework employed in this study.

Methodology of the study

In designing the study, I took cognisance of the various concepts of method, methodology and epistemology. The term "methods" has been defined as specific research practices or techniques used in the study to collect information. The term "methodology" has been used to refer to a broad, theoretically informed, framework that guided the choice of methods and interpretation of data appropriate to the study. By "epistemology" I refer to the theory of knowledge appropriate to the consideration of questions such as, what constitutes knowledge, who can be a knower and what can be known? The methods used in the study have been guided by the questions central to the study, the particular methodological framework and epistemological considerations. It is to this framework that this chapter now turns.

My approach to the study has been guided by the purpose behind the research as well as assumptions about the nature of social science. Crucial to the study is an investigation into the beliefs, perceptions, relationships, and decision-making patterns of political elites.I approached the study from a constructivist perspective of knowledge; that is, the perceptions of how things are or how they ought to be, as well as relationships and interpretations, are human and social constructs that are often formed on the basis of actions and within cultural and social frameworks. Thus, qualitative methods are the primary form of data collection because the central questions of the study indirectly explore individuals own beliefs.

This study is based upon empirical research of the political elites and parties in the KwaZulu-Natal Provincial Government over a ten-year period from 1994 onwards. As such, the respondents chosen were all elected members of the Provincial Parliament of KwaZulu-Natal at a point or points in time between the years 1994 to 2004. The powers and functions of the Provincial Parliament of KwaZulu-Natal stem directly from the South African Constitution that sets out exclusive provincial competencies and concurrent competencies with the national legislature. In terms of these competencies a provincial legislature is empowered to pass, amend, reject, initiate and prepare legislation and to maintain oversight of executive authority in the province, and have an input into national legislation through the National Council of Provinces, the second legislative house at the national level. One of the key functions of provincial legislatures is policy implementation, the capacity of provinces including much of the delivery functions of the South African state. In addition, provincial legislatures are also the building blocks of party organisations. Through provincial policy implementation much of the party policy mandates become reality.

The period of this study covered two terms of office since the founding election in 1994. As the party-list electoral system of proportional representation is employed in KwaZulu-Natal, each interviewee was or is also a member of a political party. These parties are the Inkatha Freedom Party (IFP), African National Congress (ANC), Democratic Party (DP), New National Party (NNP)[3], African Christian Democratic Party (ACDP), Pan Africanist Congress (PAC), Minority Front (MF) and United Democratic Movement (UDM). Some interviewees held government office in the provincial legislature with more than one party during the course of the study due to party political defections. Some held office in the provincial legislature with the same political party for one term of office or less. Others held office in the provincial legislature for the same political party for the full duration of the study.

Some of the IFP interviewees were previously members of the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly or the Natal Provincial Administration (see chapter four). Many of the DP and NP members were members of the Natal Provincial Administration, the MF members were mainly former Tricameral Parliament members and the ANC and PAC members for the most part had no experience of representation in formal institutions as they were banned organisations prior to 1990. Although many political organisations were acknowledged, they were not legal in the South African political context and so individuals working for the party were exiled or underground individuals working in 'struggle' structures. The ACDP is a party formed shortly prior to the first democratic elections in 1994. Some respondents were entering political structures for the first time in 1994 whereas many had previously held an active role in politics. In this light, it can be seen that there was both continuity with previous systems of government and substantial change.

The choice of interviewees reflects a belief that this "group" constitutes those who legitimately exercise power and influence in the provincial government. They are elected and are responsible for the decision-making at provincial government level. In addition, all the parties in the province recognise that their party caucus members are amongst the most senior of the party members and that decision-making within the parties themselves is often directed by such individuals, all of whom are members of the most senior decision-making bodies of their respective provincial parties. Hence, the perceptions, activities, relationships and decision-making roles of this group are of central importance in a study of this kind. No other group shares the same level of access to information about such activities, nor can the perceptions of this group be accessed through a choice of other respondents. It is therefore believed that any

[3] The National Party (NP) was reconstituted at the ending of apartheid and competed in the first democratic multi-racial elections as the New National Party (NNP).

study of this kind that ignores this group or focuses upon other interviewees would be seriously limiting the results of the inquiry.

The main thrust of the study was attempting to understand the perceptions of the individuals in the group in the belief that this would reveal valid information about the very nature of political relationships and go some way to explaining the dynamics of elite actions and political power.

Methods

Several types of documentary sources contributed to the study. Two types of government records were employed. The first comprised debates of parliament, committee minutes and reports, administrative records, ministerial records and policy documents produced by the Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal. The second type comprised records from commissions established by government and included commission reports as well as public submissions, some by the interviewees themselves. Party materials were also used in the study, including official party records such as technical reports, party constitutions and rules as well as policy documents. In addition, use was made of party speeches, press statements, and letters. Personal documents such as biographies, autobiographies, photographs and some personal papers of MPPs were also used in the study. Finally, media reports from wide variety of sources added to the available documentary sources.

One of the obstacles in using documentary records was the lack of official records managed by the provincial government. Tracking individual MPPs perceptions and viewpoints through documents held in parliament was extremely difficult. Attempts to ascertain, through parliamentary administrative structures, individuals' dates of appointment and resignation, the actual committees they attended rather than those they could attend, and what kind of support systems were in place for MPPs all proved futile. Parliamentary documents detail MPPs only by the committees they can attend, provide no dates and are updated only infrequently. There are no complete set of committee minutes available for the public to view and they are not in a central filing system. Each individual secretary who attends to a particular committee holds the minutes for that committee. As secretaries are moved from position to position, they are often lost.

Attempts to locate documents through political parties also proved difficult. No party has on record a full complement of curricula vitae for all its MPPs although submission of a C.V. is a requirement when applying to be on a parliamentary list. Securing copies of such documents has been the result of the researcher's own leg-work. Perhaps what this illustrates is the obstacles facing researchers in transitional democracies. Many of the documents readily available in a developed, consolidated democracy simply do not exist or are difficut to locate in KwaZulu-Natal.

In using these documentary sources they were assessed in term of the process and social and political context of their construction. In addition, they were considered in terms of the characterisation of events they supposedly reflected, including the possible exclusion of information and possibility that events might be presented in a particular way and according to particular interests.

Interviews were the main method of research for this book. Firstly, interviewing enables the researcher to discover information that cannot be directly observed or located in documentary sources. Such information might be both factual and/or contextual. Secondly, interviewing provides the only means to explore the meanings and actions of the interviewee. Thirdly, as no interviews or research of this kind has been conducted on this topic before in KwaZulu-Natal, interviewing is essential in providing a new primary source of information for future researchers.

Two types of interviews were used. The first and less important type was a series of structured questions of a basic biographical nature, asked of every interviewee as a precursor to more open ended questions. It was believed that this would allow comparability between interviewees in terms of social and political composition and assist with interpretations of the information gained from semi-structured interviews. Such questions were not devised with the intention of subjecting the information gained solely to numerical manipulation, from which, although some comparability was attained.

The second, and more substantial type of interview, was of a semi-structured nature, tailored to each individual interviewee. Semi-structured questions were used in order to gain an understanding of interviewees' own perceptions, experiences and actions through their own frames of meaning. These enabled a greater understanding of complexities by providing a more enriched interview. They also allowed for the minority of dissenting voices to be heard in ways that structured interviews do not. The use of semi-structured interviews also allowed me to develop new questions as they became appropriate throughout the study, and to omit those questions from which conclusions could easily be drawn after some interviews.

In constructing the interview questions, I adopted a semi-personalised approach for each interviewee. This consisted of drawing up a list of topics, closed and open ended questions for all interviewees in order to enable a comparative approach, but tailored according to the particular MPP, his/her political party, government position and any special roles the individual might have fulfilled. The redrawing and review of the questions to be asked before each interview was time consuming, but enabled the most relevant questions to be asked.

Fieldwork and the process of interviewing

The names, addresses and telephone numbers of most MPPs were provided to me by the administrative staff at the provincial parliament in Pietermaritzburg. These details, however, often changed with the high turnover of MPPs. Each MPP was contacted directly either by telephone or in person. In the case of those MPPs whose contact details were not provided, I attempted to contact them by attending the committee meetings in which they participated and speaking to them at the end of the sessions. Many of the interviewees who held executive positions had a gatekeeper in the form of an assistant through whom requests were channelled.

The main difficulties interviewees appeared to face in establishing an appointment for an interview was a lack of available time. I learnt the qualities of patience, persistence and perseverance during this phase. Often months (in one case two and a half years) passed between the request for an interview and one being granted. Interviews were conducted over four years. On occasion, interviewees did not honour the appointment once I arrived. For example, one interviewee took me into a committee meeting that resulted in the need to arrange another appointment. Another arranged an appointment at the same time as his party caucus meeting thus resulting in a wait for a number of hours until the end of the meeting. In addition, many were unavoidably late because of government obligations, three did not arrive for the interview at all and one interviewee only permitted an interview with four other people present. Some interviewees were interviewed twice because the initial interview was cut short due to time pressure or because they were interviewed early on in the study and it was deemed necessary to monitor any changes that might have occurred or confirm information received from other respondents. An attempt was made to interview the least controversial interviewees first in the hope of piloting the questions and using those interviews to gain access to other MPPs. This approach was successful, with some interviewees even making personal introductions to other MPPs, suggesting alternative contact details for those who were difficult to contact and offering assistance should such methods fail. One factor that became clear midway in the fieldwork was that some of the interviewees discussed the research with one another as some requests for interviews were not wholly unexpected.

In addition to negotiating access for interviews, I also attended party conferences, government committee meetings and debates in parliament in the opinion that it was necessary for the study to monitor the public display of relationships, attitudes of interviewees and even their physical positions in such meetings. Access to such events was not difficult to obtain. Parliamentary

debates are open to the public as are most committee meetings[4]. Attendance at conferences often required accreditation, which simply translated to prior registration. As a result of the sheer number of interviewees and the factors pertaining to negotiating access, the study has not conformed to the neat typologies and stages presented as the idealised image of the interview in methodology texts.

The level of responsiveness in elite interviews is a product both of the relationship which develops between the interviewer and interviewee and the level at which the interview is pitched. This is in turn dependent on the background knowledge of the interviewer. In addition I ensured that I had completed as much background research as possible on each relevant individual, party and issue before interviewing each MPP. This was in the hope that such knowledge would facilitate a good quality interview by demonstrating an informed interest in the interviewee and allowing the author to ask the most important and relevant questions which could not be answered elsewhere. This was done by collecting a wide range of primary and secondary materials and using them to prepare thoroughly for each individual interview. As all questions were tailored to each individual interview this proved invaluable. Interviewees were asked at the beginning of each interview to simply say if they did not feel comfortable answering a particular question, rather than offering an untruthful response. Some took the opportunity to do so. The interviews varied in length from approximately one hour to six hours in duration depending on the interviewee's willingness to continue.

The timing of the requests for the interviews appeared to impact upon the responsiveness of the interviewees. On a number of occasions interviews were requested with interviewees very shortly after they had defected from one party to another, or resigned or been implicated in some way in something reported by the mass media. The more sensitive and controversial topics were ap-

---

[4] This is with the exception of the Special Sitting of Parliament in 2002, where access was closed except for a specified number of supporters of the IFP and ANC and specially accredited media. I was permitted entry after making an on the spot request to the Secretary of the IFP who came to the security gate and facilitated entry for me. Public access to the political elite has become more restricted since the moving of the legislature to Pietermaritzburg. The public is now required to sign in to the legislative buildings by security guards and is escorted to their destination. Should the person that they wish to see not be available, they are not necessarily able to then see the secretary to make an appointment as used to be the case. In addition, the legislative buildings in Pietermaritzburg do not accommodate the opposition as there is not enough space. To then locate the opposition members is not a simple task. In terms of public interest it has remained the same since the study began, with very few citizens attending committee meetings and parliamentary sittings. The absence of the media at meetings and sittings is also apparent.

proached later in the interview when optimum trust was established and when the time felt right rather than such topics simply being slotted into the schedule of questions. Sometimes an unexpected opportunity simply allowed the topic to be introduced. For example, one interviewee had been the subject of frequent media reports, just prior to the interview, on the subject of military training camps and arms caches. During the interview he received a telephone call from a journalist asking him for an interview. The conversation clearly made him uncomfortable. At the end of the call he said 'I have been in the media a lot lately'. I responded by saying, 'yes you have. Can we talk about the camps?' He said 'Yes'and the topic was introduced without tension. It was found throughout the interviews that interviewees were willing to discuss even the most sensitive issues if the introduction into the discussion was a form of natural progression and if they were phrased sufficiently sensitively. Whether such openness was also as a result of such sensitive and controversial factors being fresh in their minds, wanting to provide all the details which were not reported in the media or somehow reflect for their own benefit as well as mine on such issues is not clear.

The locations of the interviews were chosen by the interviewees which meant that I travelled extensively around the province to conduct the interviews. Frequently, I travelled to the Ulundi and Pietermaritzburg parliaments and met with all the interviewees in their party offices. On a number of occasions interviews were conducted in private residences in places such as Richards Bay, Newcastle, Umlazi, KwaMashu and Nongoma. With the exception of three interviews, all were conducted in an environment which was private.

Analysis and use of data and biographical information

A number of specific factors were taken into consideration in the analysis and use of information. I do not take the position that meanings can only be understood in relation to the whole. I deliberately set aside the use of a standard computer qualitative assisted package in the analysis of the data[5] because such packages, by coding data, decontextualises the text and leads to the high possibility of overlooking the form of the information so essential in term of its high analytical validity and explanation of means. Instead, I chose to both highlight the form and to take it carefully into account when constructing meanings. I provide easily readable graphs and tables for a range of information and analysis, which draws upon biographical data that I collected through inter-

[5] Such as NVivo introduced in 1999. The term NVivo is a play on words, not an acronym. When something is carried out "in vivo" it means that it is done in a real life experiment as opposed to "in vitro" which is carried out in a test tube experiment. NVivo is a play on the words "in vivo".

views. The whole text of the study represents, in the main, the information gathered during interviews. In giving weight to the use of such information in its analysis and explanation, I have taken into account four further factors. First, the interviewees' likely knowledge of a topic has been considered given his or her political party, position in party or government and the relationship of the interviewees to the topic itself. Secondly, because each interviewee has held a number of different positions over a period of time and because many interviewees entered office in the second election, or left office after the first election or somewhere in-between, or had no party affiliation prior to 1994, consideration was given to two factors. Factor A was whether the interviewee could possibly have been privy to information on the topic given the period in question and whether he/she held office at the time. Factor B was whether it was possible that something had changed since the individual held power or was different before they came into power. The third factor that I took into account was whether the information obtained is consistent with any available documents on the topic. If such a response conflicts with available documentation, further consideration has been given to the possibility of the document omitting information or being written from the perspective of certain interests and within a certain framework, or the reasons why the interviewees' perception is different to the written form. Finally, I have considered how the information obtained was supported by other interviews. If there are anomalies in information, the form of the information has been considered when constructing meanings.

Special research challenges

The questions of whether to offer the interviewees anonymity and/or confidentiality proved to be a special research problem for a number of reasons. I recognised at the outset of the study that controversial or sensitive topics could lead to wariness amongst interviewees linked to doubt that they might have about providing information. This was compounded by the fact that they were political elites, in the public eye and dependent upon their parties for their parliamentary position. I was concerned that the study might be seriously affected by a lack of willingness among political elites to engage on such sensitive topics.

I recognised my responsibility to prevent harm to those interviewed whilst also reporting accurate findings in the study (cf. Becker 1964). 'It is important that interviewers convince respondents that responses to controversial questions cannot be traced to individuals' (Kotze 1989). Yet, where anonymity is guaranteed, the recording of specific information might still lead to interviewees being recognisable in the public domain, even where no names have been used. A conflict of interest exists, not only between interviewees' confidentiality and

the interpretative goals of the research, but also between confidentiality and public interest. This is particularly acute when participants are public figures. In taking cognisance of this acute conflict, I define "harm" as applicable to individuals only. It would be impossible to conduct any form of analytical work without drawing conclusions. Such conclusions, however, focus upon trends and groups and not on the activities of any named individual.

For this purpose, three types of information have been identified, addressed and recorded in different ways. The first category consists of basic biographical information, information that is already, or should be, a matter of public record and information in respect of which the interviewees required no confidentiality. The central question of whether informed consent was necessary for such information is debatable given that the interviewees are all members of the provincial parliament. This category of information has been treated as not requiring anonymity or confidentiality given that such information is either already in the public domain and, therefore, by definition, not confidential to start with. The second category is information that is given and is not in the public domain but concerns matters that are in the public domain. Category three consists of information and matters, neither of which is in the public domain. For categories two and three, interviewees were offered a choice of confidentiality or anonymity, if required. Confidentiality is defined as information received that could only be used to further my understanding but could not be disclosed elsewhere or form part of the text. In contrast, in the case of anonymity, information received could be recorded in the study without using the name of the individual, such as in the form of a non-attributable quotation.

For reasons of anonymity and confidentiality, the majority of information in the study has not been referenced as attributable to the specific interviewee and the names of interviewees have not been provided. In the case of direct quotes by interviewees they have been coded with a number to guarantee their anonymity, in some cases the interviewees they discuss have been detailed using the terms "MPP X" or "MPP Y" to guarantee further anonymity, and on some occasions the position held by the interviewee at the time of the interview is not disclosed to prevent unintended disclosure. The references section of the study omits the complete names of interviewees.

As anticipated, there were vastly differing perceptions of "the truth" amongst interviewees form different political parties. The most useful perceptions revealed were those of the IFP. Much of the information gathered presented very different images of the organisation and reasons behind certain decisions to those presented in the majority of academic papers on the organisation. Interviewees' perceptions of role in the struggle between the ANC and IFP were difficult to reconcile amongst interviewees, particularly explanations of events surrounding the negotiations for a democratic South Africa. Pre-eminent in this

was a portrayal of the interviewees party actions as "good, just and moral" and those of the opposing party as "bad, unjust and immoral" even if their actions were remarkably similar. For example, in discussions of the ANC self-defence units (SDUs) and IFP self-protection units (SPUs) the response of some ANC MPPs was that the SDUs were legitimate, defensive and necessary to protect the people whereas the SPUs were somehow illegitimate, offensive and morally inappropriate. The same perceptions were portrayed towards factors such as arms caches and violent activity. This was particularly revealing in the sense that some respondents were unable to differentiate between "a just war" and "justice in war", projecting the image that because in their particular perception their party had the moral high ground, all their actions were legitimate and just.

Having discussed the questions and debates I wish to contribute to, the methodological challenges faced by many authors writing about KwaZulu-Natal politics and the methodology of this book, I now turn to an examination of historical contexts and political elite formation in KwaZulu-Natal.

2

Historical contexts and political elite formation in KwaZulu and Natal

'A collection of disparate leaders' (Tangri 1985: 28).

Central to the patterns of elite formation in the first KwaZulu-Natal Legislature since 1994 have been struggles for hegemony manifested in two interrelated themes. These are, firstly, the development of political ideas through contest and time and secondly, political space and its occupation. Elite formation in KwaZulu Natal occurred in tandem with national scale contests over "ideas" and "spaces" as well as at this discrete provincial level which often contradicted national ambitions. This chapter traces these factors and through them the development of a fractured political elite in KwaZulu-Natal. The combination of these factors led to the emergence and entrenchment from 1994 of a number of elite groupings in the KwaZulu-Natal Provincial Legislature. It also goes a long way in explaining the relationships between and within elite clusters and political parties in the provincial legislature in 1994 and which contributed greatly to the patterns of elite formation, which are explored further in this book.

Indeed, this chapter is not an attempt to *explain* the successes and failures of liberation movements, their responses to the state, the transition itself or the varying party positions on the form of the state or the new constitution. As such, it is not a chronological narrative. Rather, this chapter explores elite formation in KwaZulu Natal through national and provincial "political ideas" and "poli-

tical spaces" up to and during the period of transition. What is interesting for the purposes of this chapter is not a general history of the region and the struggles that shaped and were shaped by it, but rather the specific features of those struggles that still have an impact upon political elite formation.

Defining political ideas and political spaces

For the purposes of this study, political ideas are defined and understood in terms of the developed form of fundamental concepts, beliefs and abstractions, which motivated and served political action by political elites. In literature assessing "the liberation struggle" in South Africa only cursory references are provided on the debates that were internal to the development of political ideas inherent in the development of strategies in the struggle. Instead, the literature on South Africa has been structured around key campaigns and strategies as turning points in the struggle – such as the defiance campaign in 1952, the armed struggle from 1961, the Morogoro Conference in 1969, the formation of the UDF in 1983, the release of Mandela in 1990, the Conference for a Democratic South Africa (CODESA) from 1992, and so on, as well as discussions and analyses of the shifting strategies of the political movements.[1] Yet it is in the essence of the internal debates and contested political ideas that informed them, that the romanticism and teleology of struggle disappears, that the fluidity of internal politics becomes evident, and most importantly for this study, that the process of elite formation becomes apparent. The interplay of these contested national and provincial ideas fostered the emergence of a political elite that was fractured ideologically, institutionally and spatially. Indeed, KwaZulu-Natal political issues and elites were at the centre of many of the contested national debates, and yet at times sought to thwart the very strategies that emerged from them.

I define an institution in this context as a formal or informal body, structure or activity with established legitimacy or recognition. Institutionalization refers to the process or action of becoming institutionalized. Institutionalized refers to

---

[1] See Chapter 1 in this book where I have argued that some of the literature is inherently biased by suppressing other 'voices in the struggle', but also that scholars have frequently failed to employ and analyse documentary sources and interviews in the construction of their papers. Newspaper articles have become a prominent source of information for scholars, yet they often depend upon opinions that have been canvassed in a limited geographical and ideological 'space' which may or may not be dominated by supporters of a particular political persuasion, draw conclusions which are often without foundation, and in most cases would not stand up in court, and have sometimes failed to subject their ideas to the rigors of any theoretical framework (cf. Jeffery 1992).

the acquisition of symbolic legitimacy as a formal or informal body, structure or activity. I have, for the purposes of this study, defined "political space" in several ways. Firstly, space has been defined geographically as in the territory in which political movements were able to act and could restrict the actions of others. Secondly, space has been defined as capacity or the ability to do and to act. Thirdly, space is defined as the extent or range over which something extends.[2] The term "form" of politics as distinct from "substance" was often shaped by political space. That is, the various ways in which political elites interacted with one another was often defined by the political environment from within which they operated. This environment was shaped *internally* within political parties and factions within them, and *externally* by other parties, movements and the political climate.

Historically, as this chapter will show, the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal was as internally divided (within parties and alliances) as it was externally (across the range of political movements). Indeed, contradictions in many of the alliances during the struggle and transition are still hindering scholars' attempts to explain provincial politics. Scholars seeking to explain politics in KwaZulu-Natal frequently focus upon the uniqueness of the province in terms of its geopolitics, rivalries for the votes of Africans, potential for ethnic mobilization, high level of political violence up to 1994, and rural and urban divisions. Yet, politics in KwaZulu-Natal in the pre-1994 period was both a part of the broader processes of struggle and simultaneously distinct in its own struggles. Thus, the political space in which politics took place was defined simultaneously as national, provincial and local. Individual parties and movements faced various challenges to their capacity to act, defined by their relationships to one another, to the state and by their ability to address internal crises.

The roots of political elite formation

Political ideas and organisation in the roots of elite formation

Formed by King Solomon ka Dinuzulu in 1928 on foundations laid by him four years previously, Inkatha Ka Zulu represented the interests of the Zulu royal family and an African petite bourgeoisie who desired the protection of the Zulu royal house and greater access to land respectively. This group included rent paying cash crop cultivators, clerks, traders, craftsmen and qualified professionals such as teachers, preachers and lawyers. They were sons of Zulu chiefs and aristocrats who had been mission educated, and although scattered across urban and rural areas were a self-consciously distinct group connected through their roots of Christianity and Victorian liberalism (cf. Marks 1978: 172-194;

[2] For heuristic purposes, all three frameworks have been employed simultaneously.

Cope 1990: 431-449 and Cope 1993). The kholwa[3] communities viewed a rapprochement with the rural tribal elite as a potential route to private land ownership and commercial agricultural production at a time when the state's growing commitment to segregationist policy dashed hopes of enfranchisement and middle class aspirations. The educated African elite in Natal, such as Reverend John Dube,[4] advanced the political ideas found in international black political thought, including those of Booker T. Washington. Washington contended that self-help and racial cooperation were the keys to socio-political equality. This could only be achieved through education, industry and self-improvement. The Zulu royal house believed that educated Zulus could help to recreate Zulu pride and unity. In turn this "traditionalism" would resuscitate respect for elders and amakhosi,[5] with the Zulu royal house at the centre of Zulu national unity. Despite Inkatha Ka Zulu ceasing to function as an effective organisation by 1933 because of the death of King Solomon and the defrauding of the financial bastion of Inkatha – the Zulu National Fund (cf. Cope 1995: 249-271) – a "modernised" Zulu monarchy was still supported by a substantial section of the intelligentsia in Natal among whom Zulu ethnic identity was a strong force (Marks 1987: 46). Other organisations (such as the Zulu Society founded by Chief Albert Luthuli and in existence until 1949) were formed through the actions of what Marks calls 'organic intellectuals' (Marks: 1987: 46). They also sought recognition of the Zulu king, the restoration of traditional values and their influence may account for the conservatism and absence of militancy amongst Africans in Natal during this period. Certainly, as Hughes demonstrates, the kholwa elite 'did not … set themselves apart from an older order of leadership' (Hughes 1995: 289). These circumstances in Natal may be seen in stark contrast to the Cape where African societies were disintegrating (Maylam & Meintjies 1988: 8). In Inanda, Natal the Qadi elite was an alliance of kholwa, individuals such as Dube, and "traditionalists" helping to sustain and perhaps modernise the institution of the chieftaincy by acquainting the chief with opportunities and resources from the wider world (cf. Hughes 1995). It is this pattern of elite formation, which continued in Inkatha Yenkululeko Yesizwe, established in 1975 in the KwaZulu homeland by Chief Buthelezi. This

---

[3] In isiZulu the term 'kholwa' has two interrelated meanings. It refers to a person who wears European clothing as well as to someone considered to be Christian. The opposite is 'bhinca' which refers to a person who is considered to be non-Christian and wears traditional clothing. Kholwa is also interpreted in a cultural rather than a religious sense (cf. Cope 1993: 127).

[4] Reverend John Dube was the first President of the South African Native National Congress formed in 1912, later renamed the African National Congress (cf. Hughes 1995).

[5] Chiefs. Singular is 'inkosi'.

elite sought to embrace modernity, as provided in the modern state and capitalist economy, but to encapsulate it in a particular form of traditional social structure.

However, the amakholwa in Natal was far from a homogenous group, characterised as it was by internal contradictions and tensions closely related to post-World War One worker radicalism. Elsewhere in South Africa, particularly in the Transvaal, the African elite sought its fortunes in a new discourse of black separatism and racial pride. These Garveyist[6] ideas among Natal intellectuals were syncretic, constructed within a discourse of self-help and competing with the language of Zulu nationalism (cf. Le Hausse de Lalouviere 1994). Members of a new kholwa generation in the Transvaal identified themselves with the methods of the worker movement, abandoning the *hamba kahle*[7] method of protest (cf. Bradford 1984: 295-310; Bonner 1982: 270-313). From 1917[8] the South African Native National Congress (SANNC[9]), later African National Congress (ANC), took a radically different path to the Natal Native Congress (NNC), reflecting a new urban-based intelligentsia 'in touch with the increasingly volatile urban African population on the Rand' (Cope 1990: 431-449). The ambiguities, contradictions and tensions between the two were only resolved in the early 1950s when Chief Albert Luthuli became president of the regional and then national movement (cf. Grest *et al*. 1988).

In Natal, a fractured elite tussled for control of the Congress. Dube's hold on the movement was tenuous and from 1932 was challenged by the populist A.W.G. Champion, who in 1929 had organised the first beer boycotts (cf. La Hausse 1988) in Durban under the banner of the Industrial and Commercial Workers Union (ICU). Divisions in the NNC reflected the diversities of the African elite in Durban and Pietermaritzburg. Dube and his Durban colleagues were confronted by members of the midlands NNC, who rejected the *hamba kahle* politics, were increasingly less accommodationist and espoused an increasingly Africanist agenda. This group, who came to be seen as "Pietermaritzburg's disrespectful Congress leadership" by their Durban colleagues, shared more diverse social origins than the Durban group. Increasingly, new members elected to the NNC Executive in the mid 1920s came to reflect this new activism. For example, in late 1923 Reverend Petros Lamula, whose most outspoken supporter was A.W.G. Champion, denounced whites as "snakes in

---

6 Marcus Garvey advocated a separatist ideology based upon black exclusiveness and race pride, in contrast to Washington's prescription of racial cooperation.

7 Translated as 'go carefully'.

8 Dube was ousted as president in 1917 and replaced by S.M. Makgatho, President of the Transvaal branch of Congress.

9 The South African Native National Congress was formed in 1912 to coordinate national resistance to political exclusion and territorial separation.

the grass" at a meeting of the Joint Durban Council, and was elected to the NNC to make representations on African land purchase. The African newspaper, Ilanga lase Natal, refused to publish the text of his speech (cf. La Hausse de Lalouviere 1994: 38-42).

Two broad and contradictory sets of Africanist political ideas were developing and becoming increasingly divergent by the late 1920s in Natal. Yet to use the expressions of "traditional" and "modern" to specify their variances would be too simplistic. One sought a regional political alliance between a conservative kholwa elite and tribal leaders, which embraced appeals to both modernity, of the modern state and capitalist economy, and tradition and espoused Zulu nationalism. The other sought to construct through Africanism and Zulu Nationalism, a form of politics which had populist legitimacy and intellectual authority. This combination could embrace a modern radicalising African urban constituency. In this construct, Zulu cultural identity was to be redeemed in so far as it would speak to a modernising and radical Africanism (cf. La Hausse de Lalouviere 1994: 40). These constructs were forged by an elite and their political ideas took shape across political movements in very contradictory ways. It is these divergent sets of political ideas, which were moulded and shaped by architects of nationalism, that lie at the root of many modern political ideas developed further in the struggle years and which have a resonance in KwaZulu-Natal today.

Another set of political ideas flourished from 1919 onwards in Clements Kadalie's populist ICU which rapidly cultivated a mass base in rural Natal (but not Zululand). Kadalie was a qualified teacher from Nyasaland who had been influenced by socialist A.F. Blatty's Industrial Workers Union and his attempts to organise unskilled black workers into general workers' unions (cf. Bradford 1987; Wickens 1978). Under A.W.G. Champion's leadership it was to grow into the leading branch nationwide (cf. Drew 2000). The ICU's core social base was migrant workers, but it represented farm workers more than an industrial proletariat. It was a worker organisation, populist rather than socialist, and gave a voice to African labour tenants and sharecroppers seeking to retain possession of their meagre means of production during a period of intense social dislocation (cf. Drew 2000; Lodge 1983; Mamdani 1996). This was caused by land alienation, labour migrancy, taxation and the expansion of indirect rule (cf. Mamdani 1996: chapter 3). The ICU was a militant mass movement, calling for open defiance and boycotts in contrast to the methods of petition of other movements at this time. In Natal, this militancy found a particular resonance among the rural and urban poor, whose grievances had not been championed by Congress's political elite. As such the ICU injected a radical element into African discourse, populist rather than nationalist or elitist. It established a tradition of African worker resistance in parts of Natal, yet like traditional

populist movements had no logically consistent ideology and embraced the concept of popular equality under the direction of charismatic leadership. As one ICU member reasoned, 'although the initials (ICU) stood for a fancy title, to us it meant basically: when you ill treat African people, I See You; when you kick them off the pavements …, I See You … When you kick my brother, I See You' (Baskin 1991: 8; Mamdani 1996: 236). Although by 1928, factionalism among ICU leaders had led to the splintering of the ICU nationwide, such was the strength of support in Natal that Champion established the ICU *yase* Natal (Drew 2000: 84).

The ICU also proved receptive to the political ideas of the Communist Party of South Africa (CPSA).[10] Although these political ideas were represented in the CPSA in the Cape and Johannesburg, in Durban the weakness of the CPSA party organisation and the efforts of Johannes Nkosi[11] resulted in the ICU becoming an obvious target for party workers. To the ICU in Natal, the CPSA contributed organisational skills, although conflict over political ideas led to the expulsion in 1926 of all CPSA members from its ranks. CPSA members' attempts to reorganise the ICU into industrial branches was strongly resented by its populist political elite. This elite did not view the struggle in class terms, particularly the struggle waged by white only CPSA members who had supported the white miners in the Rand revolt of 1922. The CPSA responded by claiming that the ICU was dominated by 'boss-class instruments' (SACP 1981: document 36; South African Worker 1926).

Rejected by the ICU, the CPSA from 1927 onwards painfully confronted and reviewed its core political ideas. This process threatened to tear the party apart and remained the core debate throughout its entire history (and that of its successor, the SACP). This debate centred on the relationship between socialist struggle and national liberation struggle, and coincided in this instance with the influence of Garveyism in the Natal wing of the ANC. Under pressure from the Comintern, the CPSA adopted the Native Republic Thesis (NRT) which laid the path for future cooperation with African nationalist organisations. Recognising that South Africa was a colony and that the struggle in South Africa was primarily anti-imperialist in nature, the NRT offered to socialists a resolution of South Africa's national question. In this way, majority African rule would be one stage on the route to a socialist state. Imperialism was defined not entirely

---

[10] The CPSA was formed in 1921 and after disbanding in 1950 reformed in 1953 under the new name South African Communist Party (SACP) reflecting a nationalist influence.

[11] Johannes Nkosi was a cook and ICU organizer who joined the CPSA in 1926. He was the leading activist in the Durban branch of the CPSA but was murdered during the Dingaan's day celebrations on 30 December 1930. By 1931 the Durban branch of the CPSA was in disarray (cf. Drew 2000: 125).

by its capitalist character, but by its colonial character – both foreign and racial. By promoting an 'independent native South African republic as a stage towards a workers' and peasants' republic', the CPSA sought to 'combat effectively the efforts of the bourgeoisie … (and) … transform the embryonic nationalist movement into a revolutionary struggle' (Communist International 1928; cf. South African Communist party 1981: 91; cf. Drew 2000: 94-108). Thus a nationalist democratic revolution whereby the CPSA cooperated with reformist African petit-bourgeoisie organisations would be the first stage of a socialist revolution.

These political ideas resonated within a section of the Natal wing of the ANC under Josiah Gumede[12] and came partly to define the relationship between the ANC and SACP elites in later years. Gumede, influenced by Garveyism, was also receptive to the CPSA's NRT. This view was, however, not shared by all the amakholwa or amakhosi in the Natal wing of the ANC. These contradictions and tensions are illustrated by a response to Gumede's report back on a trip to Moscow at an ANC convention in 1928. On discussing the overthrow of the Tsar a member shouted, 'do you intend to kill our chiefs?' (Drew 2000: 99; cf. Meli 1988: 74-79). The message here is clear. To this political elite, the political ideas of the CPSA were anathema to their particular discourse of Africanism.

These conflicts of discourse and interests show how in the early part of the twentieth century in Natal and Zululand a multiplicity of political ideas emerged. These ideas were contradictory and in competition with each other. They were shaped and employed by elites in their alliances and competition during the later struggle for liberation, and today in KwaZulu-Natal.

The occupation of political space in the roots of modern political elite formation

Locked into a multitude of competing centres of power, this African political elite in Natal and Zululand contended for political space in overlapping arenas. Organisational labels in Natal did not correspond to the political ideas which they channelled. Parties and movements were fluid, protean and multiform. This means that political ideas crossed party lines which had no stable political shape but which embraced a multiplicity of ideas and elites, and took up various shapes and forms as these ideas evolved and changed. At various stages certain ideas could be seen as more dominant for a brief period. A characteristic of the political elite in Natal was the tendency to remain affiliated to a particular

[12] Josiah Gumede was born in Natal, was a co-founder of the NNC and belonged to the generation of founding fathers of the ANC. He was president of the Natal wing of the ANC from 1927.

organisation label – such as the ANC – even if the prevalent political ideas at that time were not those that the elites subscribed to. Thus, within political parties and movements a range of elites existed.

Similarly, in Natal, elites straddled organisations which had internal contradictions with apparent ease, indicating that such organisations were not consolidated and were indeed fluid. These movements operated in diverse and overlapping political spaces. At a regional level in the mid-1920s Inkatha, the CPSA, the NNC under Dube, the ANC Natal branch under Gumede and the ICU under Champion all co-existed. The political elite often found a home and a role in more than one of these movements and a small circle of leaders played a disproportionate role. For example, all three of the personalities mentioned above had voting rights in the 1930 ANC National Congress where Gumede was ousted in favour of Pixley ka Izka Seme (cf. Walshe 1987: 230). The ANC executive in 1939 included Seme, Dube and Champion (cf. Walshe 1987: 232). Relationships among the political elite in Natal were fragile, fluid and competitive, with the provincially based organisation serving as power bases for their national positions. Only the Natal ANC branch worked in alliance with a corresponding national body and was subject to national influences. Inkatha was a regional alliance, Champion withdrew the ICU from affiliation with its national body and the purpose of the ANC Natal Branch was to provide a regional branch for the ANC since the NNC was opposed to this idea. Thus at one level, many elite relationships and movements were able to grow independently in Natal and Zululand without being subjected to the directives and influences of a national body with pretensions to presence and leadership everywhere in the country. On another level this elite significantly influenced the relationships and direction taken by the national body. Thirdly, other elites in the national body were only able to influence relationships and the direction of the ANC Natal Branch.

Consequently, elite circulation in the national ANC was relatively high in comparison to movements and parties in Natal because personal rivalries played themselves out nationally while political elites were relatively shielded from their rivalries back in Natal. Furthermore, rivalries among the Natal elite were to influence both the style and substance of politics at the national level. In Natal politics was not "provincialised",[13] rather, certain political ideas were channelled to a national level, whilst simultaneously Natal partly "opted out" of a reverse wave of idea flows. Accordingly, the range and scope over which the ANC extended and took root in Natal was limited by the political elite, political ideas and movements located there.

---

[13] I use the term "provincialised" to refer to the process of ensuring that provincially based political elites and discourses do not dominate national debates.

Conflict between political elites was only partly 'institutionalized' (Przeworski 1991: 14), in the *national* body of the ANC. In essence, this meant that political action was partly governed by the limitations of rules and procedures, rather than by questions of personal political power, rivalries and factions. Consequently, elite theory that examines the type and form of elites in relation to their actions may be applied in this context. Whilst alliances and factions did form in this body, the political elite could be said to be 'consensually unified' (Field & Higley 1985: 1-44), 'pluralistic' (Fleron 1969), or 'competitive coalescent' (Putnam 1976). As such, despite their opposing ideological positions, the political elite was somewhat tacitly committed to abide by certain forms of conduct and shared some access to key positions of influence. In Natal, however, relationships between elites became 'disunified' (Field & Higley 1985: 1-44), 'divided' (Beck & Malloy 1964), or 'competitive' (Putnam 1976). In essence, the character of relationships between elites was based upon distrust without the adherence to rules and procedures that would modify conflict. However, because of the fluidity of parties and movements and affiliation of some elites across movements in Natal, the result was partial political protection of the elite at the provincial level.

Political elite formation during 'the struggle'

Political ideas and organisation in elite formation during 'the struggle'

Political alliances and cleavages during the struggle consisted of complex and contradictory political ideas. On one level divisions became increasingly complex because of the fluidity of elite political consciousness and the multiform nature of parties. On another level, the political ideas espoused in official party documents became increasingly fortified within party cleavages, thus hardening party divisions made up of contradictory alliances. The complexity of these relationships is inadequately captured by contrasting the ANC with Inkatha, Africanism with non-racialism, collaboration with non-collaboration, armed struggle with non-violence, and radicalism with conservatism. Political ideas harnessed by struggle movements transcend these very simple contrasts. There is simply insufficient space to do justice to these political ideas in this book and thus only a brief overview will be provided. Political ideas and the political space developed during this period by the ANC in exile have had a significant impact in KwaZulu-Natal today.

- Africanism, communism, populism, workerism and traditionalism

Africanism as developed in the first part of the twentieth century had to compete and co-exist with elements of other political ideas during the struggle to produce an eclectic variety of broadly Africanist political ideas across political parties. The ANC, Pan-Africanist Congress (PAC), Inkatha Yenkululenko ye Sizwe (Inkatha) and the Black Consciousness Movement (BCM) espoused Africanism, but in varied forms and in various strengths within these movements.

Inkatha's relaunch in 1975 by Mangosuthu Buthelezi and other members of the former KwaZulu homeland, such as Inkosi Simon Gumede, continued the patterns of elite formation earlier in the century. This was expressed in an alliance of a modernising intellectual class, an emerging African middle class in KwaZulu, Zulu elders and amakhosi. What helped bind these elements together was a project of sustaining and modernising the institution of the chieftaincy and forging relationships with white business interests. However, Inkatha was not a replica of its earlier parent movement. By the early 1980s its own ability to utilise the resources of the state through the homeland system, combined with reactions to urbanisation, influx control, the rise of trade unions and proletarianisation brought into its fold the populist political ideas of a new group of non-unionised, peri-urban and peri-rural, neither workers nor peasants, who felt the full brunt of land alienation and joblessness combined with the acute pressures to conform to the boycotts and strikes called for by the ANC alliance. This class included individuals predominantly from rural areas with no long term formal history of employment and especially of the labour movement. As one interviewee contended, 'There was that time at SARMCOL[14] Rubber Factory in Howick when COSATU called a week long strike. When the employees left, unemployed people took a temporary job at the factory. The UDF killed those unemployed people who were working temporarily at SARMCOL. My father was murdered because he was separating people who were fighting on that day' (Pers. IFP Interview 65). In providing the "scab" labour, the migrant labour, and utilising the services of the KwaZulu Government, this underclass identified with a conservative strand in Inkatha's ideology and forged a new conservative yet populist alliance with the intellectual, middle class and hereditary elites in Inkatha. This resonance with a conservative strand includes an identification with Inkatha's political stance against violence whether through armed struggle or emerging through individuals' refusal to participate in political boycotts, as well as reactions to "the comrades" escalation of political power and dispensation of "peoples justice" to individuals "convicted" of non-participation in strikes and boycotts. Limited in choice, this

[14] South African Rubber Manufacturing Company Limited. Workers began strike on 1 May 1985.

underclass formed an alliance with established Inkatha elites in the hope that this would provide an alternative method of liberation without the dislocation and destruction of family and community life they had experienced or feared as a consequence of "people's power" mobilisation.

There were also indications of a new form of Africanism moulded by a new intellectual elite, that sat uncomfortably but not in contradiction with existing political ideas. This new found Africanism is most evident in the aims and objectives of the movement which included 'to foster the spirit of unity among Black people, … to help promote ... the development of Black people spiritually, economically … and politically, … to promote worthy indigenous customs and cultures, … to inculcate and foster a vigorous consciousness of patriotism … and national unity, … to cooperate with all progressive African and … nationalist movements, … to strive for the attainment of African unity' (KwaZulu Government 1987). Unlike other literature on Black Consciousness that focuses upon the growth of the student movement, John Brewer identifies the staple constituency within Black Consciousness as essentially middle class (Brewer 1989: 190). Brewer rightly identifies the main internal support base for Black Consciousness in South Africa as being urban constituents. However, AZAPO did not take root in Natal. Brewer misses (as do authors who focus on Biko's anti-Bantustan party stance) the similarity of Black Consciousness political ideas (cf. Biko 1971; 1970) with a strand of those in Inkatha. In particular, the ideas of self-help, racial pride and self respect that run through the distinctly middle class and traditional political ideas of Inkatha during the struggle. These ideas found a popular outlook in Inkatha's Ubuntu school syllabus during the 1980s. Indeed as one IFP MPP put it, 'I was more aligned to the ideas of Black Consciousness than any other party … I joined Inkatha when Steve Biko died … as did many of us … we were all Black Consciousness back then' (Pers. IFP Interview 78). Locked within the KwaZulu homeland, Inkatha elites struggled to reconcile broader Africanist political ideas with their targetable constituency in the apartheid created Zulu homeland, particularly after 1980 when the moral legitimacy of the movement was questioned. The questioning of the moral legitimacy of Inkatha took the form of highly symbolic rejections of Buthelezi and the Inkatha movement. For example, on March 11 1978 Buthelezi was forced to leave the funeral of Robert Sobukwe (former Pan-Africanist Congress leader) when mourners organized by the Soweto Action Committee verbally abused and threatened to assault him (cf. Karis & Gerhart 1997: 325). Accounts of Inkatha during the struggle period recognise little more than an attempt at political mobilisation by a middle class alliance through ethnic nationalism[15].

[15] The work on Inkatha that is most commonly cited during this period is Mare & Hamilton 1987; Mare 1992; Mare & Hamilton 1994: 101-113.

However, the primary research material of this work suggests that appeals to modernity and tradition as well as a broader Africanism, populism like the former ICU and conservatism, is evidence of a political elite that despite its division successfully forged an African cross-class alliance.

Inkatha was not the only movement that was fractured ideologically. Contradictions in what became the Congress Alliance are most evident in the conflict over competing political ideas. The breakaway of Africanists to form the PAC in 1959 did not strip the ANC of an exclusive form of African nationalism or an Africanist elite. Although Congress stood publicly for non-racialism, Kuper argues that in the 1950s it 'denied these principles within its own organisation' (Kuper 1965: 371), yet handled such contradictions through the establishment of the Congress Alliance. As Joe Matthews[16] argued in 1959, '… the Congress could switch at any time. It is an illusion to think that with the Africanists out, … nationalist sentiment is out … (T)he Africanists (are) blunderers who have let the cat out of the bag too early … there is nobody (currently) in the Africanist group of sufficient prestige to put it across. The extent of … nationalism can be seen from the fact that you cannot get support for the idea of one Congress, the leadership dare not do it' (Matthews in Kuper 1965: 373).

Colonialism of a Special Type (CST) (cf. Bundy 1989; Everatt 1991) and Internal Colonialism (IC), the marriage of African nationalist and class theories in an indigenous (and ingenious) elaboration of a two stage revolutionary struggle were the political ideas which gave validity to the alliance between the SACP[17] and the ANC during the struggle. The ANC in 1969 asserted that '… our nationalism must not be confused with chauvinism or narrow nationalism of a previous epoch. It must not be confused with the classical drive by an elitist group among the oppressed people to gain ascendancy so that they can replace the oppressor in the exploitation of the masses' (African National Congress 1969). Since the Native Republic Thesis, many black communists had been dual members of both the CPSA and the ANC. The extent of this line of thinking is revealed as early as the 1949 ANC elections where Walter Sisulu beat the communist candidate for the post of General Secretary by a mere six votes. The ANC Youth League, however, consisted of a fiercely Africanist elite – Anton Lembede, Robert Sobukwe, Nelson Mandela, Walter Sisulu among them. Since

---

[16] Joe Matthews was a senior ANC strategist, one of the nine members of the ANC NEC elected at the Morogoro Conference in 1969 when the NEC was reduced from 23 to 9, first Secretary of the ANC's Revolutionary Council and a SACP member.

[17] The CPSA disbanded itself and deliberately reconstituted itself underground in 1953 as the South African Communist Party. The name was deliberately chosen to give a national flavour to the party. The reconstituted communist party consisted of those members who supported a closer relationship with the African nationalist movement (cf. Bunting 1987: chapter 11).

the disbanding of the CPSA, many black communists (such as Kotane, Marks and Tloome) continued their work in their capacity as ANC members, as well as from 1953 through the secretly established SACP. The alliance forged by the ANC and SACP in exile represented the interests of an African elite desperate to recruit and harness the population, and communists who sought to transform the African nationalist movement into a revolutionary movement. The key question for a group of SACP members was how to prevent the interests of the working classes being abandoned by the ANC once the first stage of the revolution was established and an African bourgeoisie in power (cf. Everatt 1991: 19-39). The autonomous organisation of Umkhonto we Sizwe established by the ANC and SACP brought both parties closer together. MK was articulated and established by both the ANC and SACP and directed by the Revolutionary Council from 1969 (cf. Ellis 1981). By 1969 a majority of the exclusively African ANC NEC members were also members of the SACP, as were the majority of members on the Revolutionary Council (cf. Karis and Gerhart 1997: 37) that directed MK from 1969. Industrialisation, land shortages, influx controls, urbanisation and proletarianization increased the potential for a class interpretation of 'the struggle'. Although the ANC capitalised on the Black Consciousness recruits that fled into exile after 1976 and who were ideologically closer to the PAC than the ANC, this influx was not reflected in the upper echelons of the movement. Following the Kabwe Conference in 1985, only eight of the thirty-five ANC NEC members were not also members of the SACP (cf. Ellis 1981: 446).

After the Morogoro Conference in 1969 where ANC membership was opened to non-Africans and the doctrine of Colonialism of a Special Type was adopted, elite competition in the alliance centring on debates of Africanism and communism were clearly evident. The expulsions of outspoken Africanists during the struggle years and the consolidation of the ANC's symbiotic relationship with the SACP confirm this impression of elite competition. The strength of Africanism and anti-SACP sentiment among some members of the ANC is found in historical documents.

> 'The ANC has been hijacked by non-Africans … nationalism is pooh-poohed … The label of racist which the non-African clique uses against all Africans who oppose the control and the manipulation of the ANC by non-Africans is an anomalous one. It is anomalous because Africans suffer from the jack boot of white racism from the cradle to the grave … Now this cruel form of white racism is extended, albeit covertly, to the Africans' own national organisation, … Opposition (to this) …

> carries heavy political penalties like isolation, character assassination and alienation … The ANC must be redirected to its true nationalist cause' (Makiwane 1975).[18]

The complexity of the relationship between the ANC and the SACP has thus far remained insufficiently studied. On Robben Island ANC and SACP member Harry Gwala of the Natal Midlands took the position that the ANC and SACP were one and the same, a position contested by Mandela with confirmation from Lusaka (cf. Karis & Gerhart 1997: 32). One source interviewed for this study, an MPP from Southern Natal, who went into exile in the post-1976 wave disagrees with Gwala, 'we were the young lions, yes, and we found common ground in exile, but we joined the ANC because we were Africans suffering under white oppression …' (Pers. ANC Interview 87). This is important because although the ANC NEC following Kabwe was overwhelmingly dominated by joint ANC-SACP members, the rank and file had been drawn predominantly from Black Consciousness recruits who went into exile in the post 1976 period. The ANC was provided with not only a lifeline but a new constituency in potential contradiction with its pro-communist elite.

In 1979 the ANC reiterated its commitment to the political ideas of the two-stage revolution. The most important expression of this and one of the most important ANC exile documents was the NEC-adopted Report of the Politico Military Strategy Commission known as the Green Book. This report states,

> 'Seizure of power by the people must be understood … by the masses as the beginning of the process in which the instruments of the state will be used to … destroy … national and social inequality. To postpone … this perspective until the first stage of democratic power has been achieved is to risk domination within our revolution by purely nationalist forces which may see themselves as replacing the white exploiters at the time of the people's victory' (African National Congress – South African Communist Party 1979: part 2, point 2).

While the fault lines of communist versus nationalist struggle remained blurred during the struggle years, they opened wider later in Natal during the transition as the narrowing legitimate institutional spaces and struggles to establish a new form of state within which to harness institutional power intensified already existing political cleavages.

Interdependence and partial integration of the ANC and SACP in exile resulted in more than agreement on substantive policy. Indeed, the 'form' of politics became intertwined in very particular ways. The practice of democratic centralism pervaded decision-making. As Duverger states, the object of demo-

---

[18] Known as the Makiwane 8, Ambrose Makiwane and seven other members of the ANC (Alfred Kgokong Mqota, George Mbhele, Jonas Matlou, Tennyson Makiwane, O.K. Setlapelo, Pascal Ngakane and Thami Bonga) were expelled from the ANC in 1975 when they declined to retract their criticism of the movement (cf. African national Congress 1975). Ambrose Makiwane was later assassinated.

cratic centralism is, 'first to make known to the centre with the greatest possible accuracy the point of view of the rank and file, so as to allow it to make valid decisions; second, to ensure that the decision taken by the centre is applied at all levels, strictly and exactly but with understanding … Thus, the system is centralised, since decisions are made at the top; it remains democratic, since they are arrived at in light of opinions from below …' (Duverger 1954: 57). This form of decision-making presupposes a hierarchical structure whereby intermediate levels act as channels of communication upwards as well as to teach through directives downwards. It is premised on the assumption that discussion takes place at the lower levels before a decision is taken at the top, but once a decision is taken, lower levels unquestioningly accept and carry out this ruling. In practice, while the leadership was accused internally of elitism during the struggle, autonomous spheres of influence also developed from the late 1970s onwards.

The political ideas of the UDF reflected the broad and short-term aim of unity against Apartheid, without unified concrete long-term aims, objectives or ideologies. Whilst some of the major organisations that were affiliated to the UDF subscribed to the Freedom Charter, by no means all Charterist organisations were affiliated to the UDF and some of the more militant did not support it at all (cf. Seekings 2000: 25). The political language of the UDF was populist, and although Lodge identifies three strands of political thought within the movement – nationalist, socialist, and national democratic – he rightly suggests that the 'nuances of … (these) theoretical expositions' (Lodge 1989: 213) were not widely understood at all. Expressed in terms of idealised notions of "people's democracy", "people's power" and the "will of the people" the affiliates were united in opposition to capitalism and apartheid through non-cooperation with, and non-participation in, the state. Alongside, the affiliated groups the UDF also attracted a broader constituency through its simple populist anti-apartheid stance. As an ANC MPP asserted, 'I was a township girl in KwaMashu and so I knew about politically minded things. At the time it was the UDF in KwaMashu. I think it started with the civics … but I was recruited by my brother. We were all UDF then. There wasn't anything else … What did it stand for? We were the people, we came together as the people because of the politics …' (Pers. ANC Interview 71). Despite the broad based affiliation of the UDF, its political elite remained drawn from the intellectual and professional middle classes. In Natal, the Regional Executive Committee was dominated by an established African and Indian elite, excluding organised labour in Natal.

The lack of attention to the black trade unionism in the UDF did not go unchallenged. The Congress of South African Trade Unions (COSATU) formation in 1985 was the result of a long drawn-out process of populist versus workerist debate. The key challenger to populism's hold in Natal was the Federation

of South African Trade Unions (FOSATU). The key difference between populism and workerism was the relationship of the movement to the leadership of the liberation struggle (cf. Ritchken 1981: 40-52; Plaut 1986: 62-72; von Holdt 1987: 94-108; Plaut 1987: 104-106). Populists sought political leadership from the UDF (and ANC) and, by implication, many unions of this kind were affiliates of the UDF. This was complicated in Natal, however, as many populists and pro-Charterists remained outside the UDF (particularly in the midlands). Workerists, some affiliated to FOSATU, sought to establish effective organisation based upon the political line directed by their members. As Foster contended, 'It is … essential that workers … build their own powerful and effective organisation even whilst they are part of the wider popular struggle … to ensure that the popular movement is not hijacked by elements who will in the end have no option but to turn against their worker supporters' (Foster 1982: 67-86). This was not to suggest that workerists did not engage in political action as a part of a liberation strategy, but rather rejected a subordinate position within a broader popular based alliance that dictated the ideology of nationalism. Indeed, the ideas of the workerists were not altogether anathema to what became a core constituency of Inkatha in the mid 1980s. FOSATU had represented migrant workers, with links to rural Natal and KwaZulu, many of whom later sought the IFP as protection against the "ungovernability" and boycotts that pervaded the province. As one MPP from Southern Natal put it 'we thought that whichever political movement gained power they would always be an opponent of labour' (Pers. ANC Interview 104). In the mid-1980s the organising strength of COSATU was born upon earlier FOSATU organising, and in Southern Natal both workerism and anti-Charterism prevailed alongside pro-UDF charterist and anti-UDF charterist organisations.

The complexity and juxtaposition of contradictory political ideas within political organisations during the struggle years were sometimes simply the result of sporadic circumstances resulting from locally planned collective actions that by chance led to the choice of one political movement over another. The Africanist-socialist-traditionalist and workerist-charterist debates certainly shaped elite formation. Although elites with contradictory political ideas often found a home in the same political organisation, in the post-1975 period there was limited elite circulation from one party to another. Instead, as the next section will show, consolidated elite spaces, hardened the boundaries of the movements and forced elites into semi-permanent contradictory relationships. Within some movements there was increasing autonomy within political spaces from which decisions were made, and in others a disproportionate number of members of elites wore many political hats.

The impact of political ideas during the struggle on the many political identities in Natal is a useful example of the juxtaposition of conflicting and

contradicting forces. For example, the cry of the black workers during the Durban strikes in 1973 was "Usuthu!" (Institute for Industrial Education 1974: 96-7; Guy 1994: 246). As Guy notes, this was 'a slogan which originated as a reference to raided cattle, in a homestead of the Zulu Prince Cetshwayo kaMpande more than 125 years previously' (Guy 1994: 246). Here the identity of workerism is clearly combined with that of nationalism – but through the conscious and proud identity of the ancestry of the collective Zulu, in what became the anathema of the revolutionary struggle, yet part of it all the same.

Political space and its occupation in modern political elite formation during "the struggle"

• Institutional spaces: A regional option for KwaZulu and Natal

The self governing KLA[19] provided the institutional affiliation necessary for members of Inkatha to interact on common ground with 'white' parties and elites in Natal. Through the institutional space of the KLA, Inkatha proposed a series of institutional initiatives for the re-engineering of administrative structures in KwaZulu and Natal that were to catapult Inkatha into a closer relationship with white business interests, the Progressive Federal Party (PFP) and New Republican Party (NRP)[20] (formerly the United Party or UP), anti-Afrikanerdom white elites who became committed to greater regional autonomy in opposition to the NP's proposed further fragmentation of the region (cf. Beall *et al*. 1986). The NRP, initially opposing political cooperation until 1984 focused upon economic and spatial integration of Natal and KwaZulu as a basis for fiscal rationalization (cf. Glaser 1986). For Inkatha's elites, a negotiated option for the region was a logical extension of their concerns to avoid an armed solution[21] and within their own ideological tradition, offered protection to a

---

[19] The KwaZulu Legislative Assembly was established in 1972 out of the Zululand Territorial Authority 1970. The specific apartheid acts which provided for homelands were the Republic of South Africa (1951) *Black (Bantu) Authorities Act* (Act No.68 of 1951) and the Republic of South Africa (1959) *Promotion of Bantu Self-Government Act* (Act No.46 of 1959) in which individuals that were categorized under the Republic of South Africa (1950) *Population Registration Act* (Act No. 30 of 1950) as 'native' were also classified by 'ethnic group' and later assigned to a designated homeland by way of their ethnic categorization. The Republic of South Africa (1961) *Urban Bantu Councils Act* (Act No.79 of 1961) provided for homeland rule of community councils in the townships.

[20] When the Provincial Councils were disbanded in 1986, the NRP split and a large group of which joined the National Party. The other significant force in white politics was the PFP, later DP.

[21] See Chapter 4 in this book where 42 IFP MPPs expressed the view that opposition to the armed struggle in South Africa was one of the key reasons for their choice of the

middle-class of traders and bureaucrats, traditionalists as well as urban and rural poor seeking employment and protection against boycotts and dislocation of family and social structures. For organised business, particularly organised agriculture, the benefits of fiscal and infrastructural efficiency, a mobile regional labour market and stable land values within a pro-capitalist economy, provided a significant impetus to participation in the proposals.

The Lombard proposals were commissioned by the South African Sugar Association (cf. Lombard 1982). The association was concerned at the potential loss of sugar farming lands to the homeland consolidation needs of grand apartheid. The proposals advocated cooperation between KwaZulu and Natal rather than the consolidation of the homeland of KwaZulu and further suggested a constitutional dispensation to enable coordination that included separate but equal representation for KwaZulu, Natal and the Durban Metroploitan Area (cf. Lombard 1979 and Nattrass 1989: 165-183). The proposals were rejected by the government and this motivated the first step in a constitutional process that aimed for the interdependence of KwaZulu and Natal and proposed representation for KwaZulu, Natal and the Durban Metropolitan area (Nattrass 1989: 196) in a second sphere arrangement. Nattrass contends that the who contends that the Durban Metropolitan Area (the incorporated townships of Umlazi and KwaMashu, Inanda informal settlement, the unincorporated townships of Chesterville and Lamontville and the 'white' zones in between) increasingly dominated the spatial economy of the region (Nattrass 1989: 165-183). The Buthelezi Commission, initiated by the Central Committee of Inkatha in 1980, proposed a consociational model for a single provincial sphere administration (Buthelezi Commission 1982). However, it too was rejected by the nationalist government. By 1984, South Africa's political landscape had changed. The changing landscape of protest embodied in the establishment of the UDF provided an impetus for a reconsideration of negotiated power sharing solutions by 'white' provincial elites. The Ulundi Accord, signed by the Natal Provincial Council's Executive Committee (Exco) and the cabinet of the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly, in November of 1984 initiated a three-phase schedule for a federal government in the region. Phase one of this plan established administrative, technical and service cooperation between KwaZulu and Natal through the Joint Action Committee and Strategic Planning Group. Phase two, implemented in 1987 after the passing of the Joint Authority Bill, established a Joint Executive Authority (JEA)[22] for the region while retaining KwaZulu and Natal as separate bodies.

IFP as a political home. In most cases this information was not solicited but offered in response to open ended questions.

[22] The Joint Executive Authority was established following the Republic of South Africa (1986) *Joint Executive Authority for KwaZulu and Natal Act* (Act No.80 of 1986) and comprised members of the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly and Natal Pro-

The 1985-6 KwaZulu / Natal Indaba produced a constitutional proposal for a regional legislative structure that would incorporate a first chamber of parties established on the basis of electoral competition and a second chamber on consociational principles of power sharing by ethnically identified groups (cf. Mansfield 1991).

The Indaba proposals were rejected by Stoffel Botha, Administrator of Natal acting for the National Party Government. The rejection was on the basis that the proposals did not offer sufficient protection to groups (specifically the first chamber). However, the proposals were to take Inkatha elites in a radically new direction and to provide new impetus for the federal solution advocated by the IFP during the transition period (cf. Erwin 1987 and Felgate 1981). These institutional initiatives were also to shape the relationship between Inkatha's elites and a provincially established white elite over a period of more than twenty years. Some such individuals later used the springboard of these former provincial relationships to secure a place in the 1994 provincial parliament on the Inkatha ticket (see chapter three). In utilising the public space provided by the KLA in negotiating new institutional arrangements for the region, Inkatha was able to institutionalize the party both as a regional power and within the structures of the KLA.

• Institutional spaces: Fusion of legislature and party

The KLA provided Inkatha with much more than an institutional home. It also served as an essential mechanism through which the political ideas of the party were protected and in which individuals constituted themselves elite members. In effect, one may draw a comparison with the way in which SACTU provided protection to the SACP/ANC/MK earlier.[23] During the struggle years of the late 1970s and 1980s the political and policy perspectives in the KLA and KwaZulu Government did not develop independently in any significant degree from those of Inkatha.[24] Where there is some evidence of initiatives developed by the KwaZulu Government is in rural and peri-urban development and then later through ties with white South Africa in the Joint Services Boards. But even in

---

vincial Legislature following the disbanding of the Provincial Councils under the Republic of South Africa (1986) *Provincial Government Act* (Act No.69 of 1986). For discussion of the powers and functions of the JEA and thinking of the 'white' elite see Miller 1987.

[23] The analogy is that SACTU as "the shield" provided protection to the ANC/SACP/-MK as "the spear".

[24] The branches of Inkatha corresponded to the political boundaries of the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly, all members of the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly were members of Inkatha and the KwaZulu cabinet sat *en bloc* on Inkatha's Central Committee.

rural development, the party's portfolio units – groups of individuals broadly tasked with policy matters in specific areas – provided the initiatives that were then implemented through the institution of the KLA, rather than as initiatives developed in the executive of the KLA itself. One of the problems facing Inkatha was finance, particularly after the fateful London meeting when ties with the ANC were severed. It was agreed by both the ANC and IFP that the London Meeting in 1979 would remain secret. When it was publicly revealed in the press that a meeting between the two parties had taken place, the IFP suffered a wave of recriminatory accusations from the ANC leadership. In fact, the meeting was accidentally discovered in a hotel lobby in London by then *Sunday Times* (Johannesburg) journalist, Suzanne Vos, not revealed to the press by either party. Without the ANC stamp of approval funds were not forthcoming (Pers. IFP Interview 46). What began as the Inkatha Development Office (IDO), assessing and addressing the socio-economic needs of communities, and implemented through the KLA, became a transparent enterprise in the Cooperative Development Funding (CDO) public-private partnership in 1984 after funding from the conservative German foundation, Konrad Adenauer Stiftung, was secured. The work of the IDO and the CDO raised the profile of Inkatha among the population through credit unions and co-operatives that it helped to facilitate. In addition, Inkatha elites dominated the political institutions of the KwaZulu homeland and utilised the resources of the state in the performance of their Inkatha work. The ideology of Inkatha was reflected through the state. In this way, development initiatives in the homeland became associated with Inkatha, as did other sectors such as education, justice and police services.

How far the fusion of party and the KLA provides conclusive proof of Inkatha *as* the KLA, rather than indications of a strong party relationship (cf. Blondel 1995: 127-143) is open to interpretation. Inkatha has attracted some trenchant criticism based upon either its relationship to the state, or failure to institutionalize the institutions of the state. Certainly, a culture of partly using the resources (such as vehicles) owned by the legislature for party work is indicative of an internal culture that either did not recognise a clear distinction between party and state or pushed the boundaries of the party-government relationship. There is also the normative question of whether the institutionalism of KLA institutions was a desirable result given the political circumstances of the creation of homelands. Indeed Inkatha elites have maintained their perspective of "resisting and destroying apartheid from within state structures" (Pers. IFP Interviews), in which case the democratic ideal of a functionally separate party and state may not apply in the same way, since to resist apartheid, one may not necessarily want to ensure the institutionalization of the very institutions that are to lead to its success. Either way, the positioning of Inkatha in the KLA, the fusion of party and legislature, the culture of using the legislature

for the purposes of the party and the failure to institutionalize the institutions of the state, enabled the growth of a party elite that, while being restricted and fragmented, was facilitated and shielded by the institutional home of the KLA. This institutional home in turn raised the profile of the party that was partly restricted and partly free to operate in the open.

In light of all this, Inkatha was far from a homogenous movement. It was fragmented and provided elite individuals with only a limited amount of autonomy. In the political climate of the civil war of the 1980s the institutional shield of the KLA was sometimes extended both to protect elites with other sources of power in their own right and in a manner that blurred the boundaries of party, state, and civil society to sustain a semblance of legitimate authority over the homeland. This extended beyond the use of the KwaZulu police force in some cases, to the extension of semi-autonomous spheres of influence in a manner akin to Bayart's "elite accommodation" (Bayart 1989) where informal arrangements are established with powerful locals that maintain the state in return for autonomy and legitimacy, or Reno's "shadow state" (Reno 1989) whereby potential rivals are accommodated in a manner that almost replaces the states bureaucratic function in those areas. In the areas within such autonomous zones, the blurred function of autonomous elites included on occasion dispensing resources and public goods for the KLA in a manner akin to a civil servant. As one IFP MPP who never served as a KLA employee indicated, 'I was authorised to give out permits. I would give them to help anyone who needed to feed their family' (Pers. IFP Interview 60). While autonomous spheres of influence were evident at the community level, this was also in the context of blurred party-state boundaries.

• Institutional spaces: Creation of a state outside a state

Although it provided the focal point for the populist mass action in the 1980s the UDF was not the structure on which the ANC in Natal rebuilt its internal base. The exposition of Leninist theory was most evident in the collapse and merging of independent spaces of state, party, civil society and military that occurred from the late 1970s. For example, the focal point in Southern Natal of the late 1970s and early 1980s became the re-establishment of ANC groups in the townships by people involved in the ANC of the 1950s. Isolomuzi (Eye of the Township) was based upon the M-Plan[25] and involved the fusion of civic organisations and MK (Pers. ANC Interviews). In Southern Natal, KwaMara (KwaMashu Resident's Associations) and Umra (Umlazi Resident's Association) as well as associations in Lamontville and Chesterville became these focal points, and from the release of two MK Regional High Commanders Curnick

[25] The Mandela Plan.

Ndlovu in 1981 and Billy Nair in 1980 the building of structures through the fusion of civics and MK took on a new momentum (Pers. ANC Interviews).

This continued the principle of the "creation of a state outside of a state" built on the earlier principle of infiltration of legal organisations, as in the case of SACTU in an attempt to create a shield for the ANC. Organisation in SACTU was by local organisational committees. In Durban, this committee was led by Billy Nair and Stephen Dlamini, both textile workers, with Dlamini a member of the SACP and Nair a member of MK High Command (Pers. ANC Interviews). Chief Albert Luthuli urged all ANC members to join SACTU. By 1959 SACTU had local committees in Pietermaritzburg, Pinetown and Ladysmith. SACTU was a member of the Congress alliance with representation on its National Coordinating Committee (cf. Feit 1975). However, key differences by the time of the 1980s internal ANC activity was the change in external political organisation that allowed internal political elites significant autonomy under the command of Forward Areas in exile. In 1977 the Internal Reconstruction and development Deaprtment had been created in Lusaka and the internal creation of "structures" given predominance under the command of Forward Areas (cf. Lodge 1983/1984: 153-180).

At least four characteristics of internal work are evident. The first was the creation of structures – a permanent network of ANC clusters. The second was to influence, infiltrate and harness the mobilising power of legal internal organisations such as civics. The third was to orchestrate the collapse of state structures. In parts of Natal, this also involved the creation of new structures alongside a policy of ungovernability.

However, antagonism was soon created between a new emerging internal political elite and those in exile, over the relationship of the movement to Inkatha.[26] It is in this context that the historic London meeting between the ANC and Inkatha took place. Unwilling to become a recruiting agency for the armed struggle but needing official recognition from the ANC, Inkatha elites were placed in an ambiguous position. In Natal, ANC elites claimed that the ANC leadership in exile was compromising the political space of residents' associations that challenged the legitimacy of the institutions in which the IFP was located (Pers. ANC Interview 53 and 87). Although these elites were later incorporated into the UDF, they retained an ambivalent relationship to the NIC and critical fault lines in the Charterist movement existed throughout Natal. The implosion of the UDF in Natal from 1986 with charterist politics shifting elsewhere, led resistance politics to seek other outlets.

---

[26] Inkatha was resurrected with the knowledge and encouragement of the ANC in exile. This fact was only belatedly admitted at the Kabwe Conference in 1985.

• Legitimate and illegitimate spaces and political violence

Whilst a full account of the political violence that took hold in the province is outside of the mandate of this book, some explanation will be offered. The mass violence that began in the mid-1980s in Natal and extended to the Reef, producing the overwhelming majority of casualties in the 1990-1994 period, had several salient characteristics. Firstly, the sheer intensity of the violence is horrifying. In the 1984-1991 period the South African Institute of International Affairs estimates that approximately 11,000 people were killed in the Natal Midlands, coastal areas of Northern and Southern Natal and the Witwatersrand townships (*Natal Mercury,* 1991) Other sources put this figure higher. Johnston indicates that 16,000 people dies between 1984 and 1994 (Johnston 1994). Secondly, the violence became diffused through other conflicts that made it incoherent (Johnston 1994: 188-189). These include conflicts over the regulation of, and access to, resources and services (such as minibus taxi rivalries and access to basic services such as water supplied through standpips), clan or tribal conflicts over succession rights, vendetta type local rivalries, crime and intergenerational conflict. Minaar documents one such conflict between youth and their parents which escalated into a hostel versus 'civic' structure conflict, and then ANC-IFP conflict as those involved turned to political parties for assistance (Minaar 1992).

Many explanations have been proffered for the violence. Of the three most common, the first is that the legacy of apartheid is to blame, producing high unemployment, contributing to brutal and deprived conditions of existence in rapidly expanding informal settlements and hostels and dehumanising black males and leaving them powerless (cf. Morris & Hindson 1992a: 43-59 and Morris & Hindson 1992b: 152-170). The second explanation is that a "third force" of renegade security force elements was responsible for stoking conflict within ANC-IFP black communities by attacking one side or another until retributory violence took on a momentum of its own (cf. Bennun 1995: 26-61 and Ajulu 1992: 67-83). The third, and most common explanation is that the violence is a product of turf rivalries between the ANC and the IFP (cf. Jeffrey 1997 and Johnston 1997a: 78-107). Johnston argues that although the political violence is inarticulate it is located within ANC-IFP competition over territory, tradition and the constitutional framework (Johnston 1997a: 78-107). However, within this third explanation, some analysts have predominantly attributed "blame" to Inkatha. Methodologically some of these studies are problematic because authors neither acknowledge that their interviewees are politically aligned nor consider the implications of the information they receive as a consequence of this. In some cases analysts have neither acknowledged their own affiliations and the affiliations of their eyewitnesses which have sometimes turned out to be individuals holding political positions. An example is Levine's

1999 edited volume in which a substantial number of eyewitnesses to political violence were UDF and ANC affiliated, some had gone on to hold political office for the ANC and the independent scholarly contribution to the volume is written by a UDF supporter (cf. Levine 1999). In some other cases, analysts often uncritically adopt the ANC version of the violence, in class based analyses, as if the "fault" was simply self evident because of both the perceived middle class bias of the movement and ambiguous struggle credentials of its elite emanating from Inkatha's location in the homeland. For example, without unpacking the conflict between the ANC and IFP, Price contends that 'Buthelezi … demonstrate(ed) that unless he is taken into account there will be no peace' (Price 1991: 234). Saul, without considering the support base of the IFP, argues that Buthelezi is merely 'a hired tool of the security services' (Saul 1991: 16). Such analyses mirror ANC versions of the conflict in the mobilisation of bias against the competition. Other less biased accounts have sometimes adopted uncritically the terminology that ascribes blame to Inkatha such as "powerful Inkatha warlords pitted against progressive youth" without providing justification for the terms used. Again this is a problem of an uncritical methodology. IFP individuals were identifiable by way of their presence in the institutions of the homeland. Conversely, if analysts were to use the same framework and apply it to the non-visible institutions created internally from 1981 they would also consider many of the ANC leaders, SDU leaders and heads of "people's committees" warlords. Despite this proliferation I contend that the term "warlord" is inappropriate in the South African context for two reasons. The first is because of the ideological and collective ties that bound individuals so described to political parties over and above private interests. Reno, for example, suggests that apart from a weak state, the defining feature of warlord politics is the primacy of individual interests and the absence of collective interests (Reno 1998: 2-3). In the context of political violence in KwaZulu-Natal, conservatism was an ideological position strongly supported by segments of the community in which individuals so described resided. The second reason that the term warlord has no basis in the KwaZulu-Natal context is that individuals described did not necessarily rely on (or in some cases solely on) the use of force and fear as their basis of authority. In some cases their ability to address acute community needs, such as housing, water and security against anarchy for the community, provided a basis of legitimate support. This goes beyond the feudalistic relationship normally deemed to be characteristic of a leader-follower warlord relationship because, although there is evidence of patronage relationships, it is so in the climate of hardening ideological ties, rather than personal ones. The term warlord in the context of KwaZulu-Natal may best therefore be understood as a journalistic cliché and political slogan used sometimes to discredit rivals.

A more useful explanation for the political violence (one that is arguably supported by the interviews for this study) might be that the breakdown of political institutions as regulating mechanisms, enabled emerging competing interests in opposition politics (and other non-political areas), autonomy in the self regulation of force, at the same time as social and political cohesion broke down and new parallel structures of authority emerged. This is within the context of the attempt by the ANC alliance from 1981 to "create a state outside the state" (discussed earlier) underscored by the G-Plan[27] of ungovernability from 1984 and Inkatha's location in the homeland structures. The clash of "institutions" was overlaid by increasingly populist rhetoric condemning privilege of all types in a climate in which structures were unable to regulate competition and the boundaries of the legitimate were extended. To say that the violence was directed by any political organisation in the sense of an overall strategy is certainly incorrect, although political elites within both the IFP and ANC (through ANC and UDF structures) were party to the culture of impunity that took on a momentum of its own. As one MPP disclosed, 'we all knew that MK was operating out of Diakonia in Durban, so Diakonia just became fair game for whatever. Of course such actions were never party policy and they were never discussed in the legislature. But there would not always be interference by the KwaZulu government if something untoward happened there' (Pers. IFP Interview 46). Hence, the political elite would on occasion ignore violence orchestrated against their rivals, from individuals in their own movement, from whom attacks on their own supporters and structures were launched.

Contested elite formation during the transition

The transition period in South Africa was characterised by changing relationships and interactions between political elites in shifting political spaces. In the closing of some spaces and opening of others, the gap between institutional and public spaces became narrowed and the formal institutional spaces of the old order become delegitimised. A smaller number of political elites came to dominate these processes, locking themselves into a framework of political ideas that other political elites failed to penetrate. For Inkatha, decisions made by other political parties, such as the ANC and NP at the national level, were to restrict the party's strategy in KwaZulu-Natal. For the ANC in KwaZulu-Natal, the transition fundamentally limited the spaces in which some elites operated by closing off certain political ideas such as socialism, which led to the demise of sections of the party, as those elites advocating such political ideas were sidelined.

---

[27] Goniwe Plan.

Contested national moral and institutional spaces

In the post-unbanning period, the ANC leadership came to regulate "moral" and "public institutional" spaces in South Africa that served to delegitimise the spaces in which their opposition was located.

• Contested moral spaces

The unbanned ANC, during the negotiations, moved to capitalise on the "moral" space provided by their diplomatic coup in exile that led to their treatment abroad as a government in waiting (African National Congress – South African Communist Party 1986: 12). Favoured by foreign governments, donor organisations and the internal democratic movement the ANC had a powerful sense of symbolic legitimacy and 'their own virtue' Owen in Adam *et al*. 1997: 137). Through this internationally furnished moral space the ANC leadership moved quickly to close down any residual moral spaces occupied by the IFP and NP. This was through the denial of legitimacy to both parties. The residual moral space of the IFP was based upon their anti-apartheid, anti-sanctions stance and refusal to take independence for KwaZulu, and their claims to represent a significant and authentic constituency. For the NP, their ending of apartheid and capitulation to negotiations that were to erode their political power provided a sense of moral legitimacy. For the IFP this erosion of legitimacy occurred in phases that coincided with substantive changes in the Natal ANC, particularly in the dominance of some political ideas over others and in the use of political space.

The IFP was denied legitimacy on the basis of three interlinking factors: the IFP's relationship to the institutions of the KwaZulu homeland, the support base of the IFP in rural and peri-urban areas and the IFP's conception of tradition and status of traditional leaders. Based on a particular discourse of peasant collective consciousness, the ANC sought to set aside the 'centrality of community' (cf. Ranger 1988: 312-315) and shared 'peasant discourse' (*ibid.*) that validated traditional leadership in KwaZulu. Instead, the claim was that such elites derived their legitimacy purely from the apartheid state and Inkatha's "manipulation of ethnicity". In this view modernity (repackaged as democratisation) would sweep aside any residual ethnic attachments (as they were defined), as individuals would come to legitimise more "modern democratic" institutions whose authority was derived from "procedures" rather than "myths". As such, Inkatha was treated as devoid of legitimacy, as a homeland party that had positioned itself to manipulate ethnicity in order to build coalitions across class lines, and in the process had hindered the democratisation of the state. Such views parallel Weberian models of the traditional / modern dichotomy and were articulated by the Left as well as the ANC in Natal.

The Inkathagate scandal in 1991 critically eroded the moral space the NP had gained by unbanning extra-parliamentary organisations (cf. Booysen 1992: 64-80). There are different interpretations of this scandal. Inkatha and the NP claim that funding was provided to Inkatha to assist in the establishment of United Workers Union of South Africa (UWUSA), a "dummy" union to counteract the power of COSATU, to hire stadiums for an anti-sanctions rally, for advertising and for transport (cf. *Weekend Argus*, 20 July 1991). However, during the Malan Trial, from October 1995, it was further revealed that Buthelezi in his capacity of Chief Minister of the KwaZulu homeland had approached the SADF with concerns that the relatively small KwaZulu police force (KZP) was unable to cope with increasing violence in KwaZulu. Consequently 200 individuals were trained in the Caprivi Strip by the SADF, to be integrated into the KZP. The ANC, however, claim that the funding and training was to assist in violence against the ANC and UDF. The important consequence of this is that the period became a turning point whereby the ANC sought to utilise the NP's embarrassment to restrict the symbolic space of the IFP. In this phase the ANC treated the IFP as a security problem rather than a credible party as is evident from the stress on the banning of traditional weapons, as if the overt demonstration of weaponry was the cause of covert violence rife in the province.

Finally, the ANC sought to project the image that they too were respectful of traditional leadership, the Zulu king and cultural practices. Thus, in this view, the IFP was symbolically redundant because the ANC could straddle "traditional cultural reverence" and "modern progressive" urban politics. The mass Sonke[28] ANC rally in Durban in 1993 as a celebration of traditional culture occurred at a time when key shifts in the Natal ANC marginalised Inkatha's most vociferous ANC critics, with the resultant erosion of the discourse of the Left in the post 1994 period. In Northern Natal the regional leadership of the ANC was deposed in 1993 and replaced by Deputy-Secretary General Jacob Zuma. Although Zuma was from the Southern Natal region, the relative weakness of the ANC's Northern Natal region was used as a justification for the takeover. The takeover also placed Zuma in a favourable position for the regional premiership against the two candidates from the Natal Midlands (Harry Gwala) and Southern Natal (Jeff Radebe). In the event, Zuma's position as ANC provincial leader in the post-1994 period somewhat marginalized Harry Gwala, outspoken SACP stalwart. The erosion of the moral space of the IFP ensured that the party's capacity to respond to institutional manoeuvres by the ANC was significantly limited and it's IFP federal principles were ignored. As Barber argues, 'nobody even bothers to try to understand Inkatha(s) … position

[28] Translated as 'all of us'.

anymore … Safer to diagnose (Buthelezi as mad, or megalomaniac or both, and watch as his turf is forcibly cleared … Too bad he got in the way' (Simon Barber in Adam *et al*. 1997: 136).

• Contested public and institutional spaces

The regulation of moral spaces by the ANC leadership contributed to the delegitimisation of the institutional spaces in which the opposition was located. In their place, mass action became institutionalized as *the* public institutional space through which the true public mandate was deemed to be derived, and through which the ANC was able to accomplish regulation of the institutional spaces of the opposition. There were three strategic perspectives within the ANC. They were first, "don't rock the boat" in which mass action was perceived as in conflict with negotiations. The second perspective was "turning on the tap" whereby it was believed that mass action could be used as a force to bring about changes in the oppositions negotiating stance. Third "the Leipzig way" articulated the building of a dual power structure among "the masses" to lead to insurrection. In "turning on the tap" the ANC leadership sought to harness public power behind a pacted transition directed by the ANC leadership. However, in Natal, some of the ANC disagreed with this decision. They supported a Leipzig option over the turning on the tap perspective advocated by the leadership (cf. Cronin 1992: 41-54).

The irony of a pacted transitional process is that a democratic outcome is supposedly secured through undemocratic means that restrict spaces to facilitate certainty. By institutionalizing procedures, extending guarantees to the few actors' involved in the pact and minimising the actors' ability to harm one another they effectively reduce competition and accountability, secure interests, reduce the ability of other actors to participate and structure the agendas that follow thereafter. The key feature of a pact is an explicit agreement among an elite which defines rules that are secured through mutual guarantees (O'Donnell & Schmitter 1986: 38). Transition theorists readily accept that the defining moment in a democratic transition is the institutionalization of uncertainty. As Przeworski contends, 'democratisation is an act of subjecting all interests to competition, of institutionalizing uncertainty. The decisive step towards democracy is the devolution of power to a set of rules' (Przeworski 1991: 14). Although liberalisation may occur during transitions, which extends the scope of participation, and the rules of the game may be institutionalized, pacted transitions, as Karl demonstrates, may restrict representation and secure dominant interests (cf.Karl 1990: 1-22). In this way, they do not institutionalize uncertainty nor equalise the competition. Perhaps the strength of the ANC's position is that the institutionalization of rules was the certainty of their victory.

Pacts limit uncertainty and provide guarantees through accommodation and compromise that serve to shield elites from the public and constrain those who advocate greater change. The crucial pact in the South African transition was the Record of Understanding between the ANC and NP in September 1992 which entrenched institutional rules and the form of the state, as well as excluding the political ideas of other players. The Record of Understanding emerged out of a bilateral series of ANC-NP negotiations initiated by an article written by Joe Slovo in the African Communist. Slovo advocated a sunset period whereby the ANC agreed to a period of quasi power-sharing in a government of national unity for a limited term and that constitutional principles established ahead of an election would be written into a final constitution. In exchange, the NP agreed that the final constitution would be written by an elected Constitutional Assembly and government would proceed on a majority rule basis from the second election (Slovo 1992: 36-40).Through the Record of Understanding, The ANC leadership began to regulate the institutional processes. The IFP was marginalised as were SACP-ANC elites on the Left. The process of exclusion and inclusion, in forcing moderation, ensured that certain elites came to the fore and that Left wing hopes of ushering in a socialist state with a more radical agenda were thwarted.[29] (The impact of this in the ANC in Natal is discussed in Chapter 3).

By late 1992 the ANC had secured significant control over the institutional process; the parameters of the final form of the state had been set, the institutional spaces in which the IFP and NP were located were delegitimised, and mass action was secured as the legitimate public institutional space. This was also to legitimise new transitional institutional spaces in which the ANC had made inroads. While the IFP and NP were still housed in the institutions of the state and KLA, and had the resources of the state at their disposal, these spaces were delegitimised. Instead, transitional institutional spaces in which the ANC dominated became the legitimate spaces. These included the Multiparty Negotiating Forum (Codesa 2) and the Transitional Executive Council. In addition, agreements such as 'the National Peace Accord … institutionalized centres of political power beyond the domain of the state' (Booysen 1992: 73).

• Agenda setting, non-decision-making and the results of such action

Through the regulation of moral, public and institutional spaces, the ANC leadership ensured a two-sided negotiating table that neutralised the power of other parties, prevented items from reaching the agenda and were sometimes not held to account for failures to submit to the terms of their own agreements. The

[29] For a discussion of the moderating and conservative effects of pacts, see Hagopian 1990.

principle of "sufficient consensus" was applied to the negotiation process to determine whether agreement had been reached and whether the parties could move on. In practice, this principle 'was interpreted to mean consensus between the (NP) government and the ANC' (cf. Johnston 1996a: 174). This effectively rendered the other parties in the process as irrelevant because, as Johnston contends, bilateral negotiations and deals between the NP government and ANC leadership drove the agenda of the Codesa negotiations (*ibid.*). However, as the 1994 elections at the national level retrospectively made clear, the ANC could claim a much greater representativeness than the majority of delegates. That said, prior to the Record of Understanding, Jeffrey notes that 'more than half the delegates at Codesa (2) voted against … (the ANC) on the key issue of federalism' (Jeffrey 1997: 392), yet the form of the state adopted in the ANC-NP bilaterals put paid to a federal option. The NP-IFP bilaterals that followed the IFP walkout after the Record of Understanding led to the production of a document suggesting amendments. As one MPP contends, 'the NP agreed to make a presentation to the ANC on the IFP's behalf. Meyer handed the document over and Ramaphosa simply dropped it in the waste paper basket. It was never going to appear on the agenda' (Pers. IFP Interview 46). Later attempts to bring to the excluded parties back into the process, 'essentially meant their acceptance of what had already been agreed upon' (Rantete 1998: 205).

Perhaps the most important item that remained off the agenda of the negotiations was MK. Although armed struggle was officially ended in 1990 and MK soldiers were officially confined to barracks until MK was officially demobilised in December 1993 there are clear indications of MK activity in various forms in Natal throughout the transition phase and, in some instances, beyond that (see later discussion).

Agenda setting and decision-making power relations may best be understood through the 'mobilisation of bias' (Schnattschneider 1960: 60 and cf. Bachrach & Baratz 1962) which serves to limit the scope of debate through non-decision-making. Vested interests become protected though regulation so that 'the accepted rules of the game, the existing power relations among groups … effectively prevent certain grievances from developing into full-fledged issues which call for decisions' (Bachrach & Baratz 1962: 642). Non-decision-making may occur in a number of forms which include blocking challenges through invoking or reshaping existing rules or procedures, or labelling demands as unpatriotic (cf. *ibid.*: 641-651). In the South African context, moral power served to create public institutional power that in turn created institutional power beyond the state which was able to mobilise bias against other interests.

The mobilisation of bias is most evident in cases where parties were not held to account for failing to submit to the terms of their own agreements in arenas where power had been institutionalized beyond the domain of the state. The

National Peace Accord, signed on 14th September 1992, bound signatories to a code of conduct that outlawed coercion against opponents and included the ANC and IFP among its signatories. The National Peace Committee was the responsible investigating body of the National Peace Accord, tasked with investigating violations of the code of conduct for political organizations signatory to the National Peace Accord. However, violations of the National Peace Accord by Natal ANC and SACP members were not punished, and in some areas the permanently established Judge Richard Goldstone Commission on violence failed to investigate violations brought to its attention (cf. Francis 2010). For example, the Pietermaritzburg ANC mock trials that sentenced to death ten IFP leaders and one NP leader were found by the National Peace Committee to be in breach of the Accord, yet the response of the ANC to these findings was to conduct their own internal investigation rather than to accept the findings of the very body in which they had vested such powers (cf. Jeffrey 1997: 363).[30]

As the former institutional spaces became delegitimised, the ability of the IFP to influence the course of negotiations was restricted and the moral space the IFP claimed was withheld, the IFP increasingly retreated into an ethnic discourse. This served a number of purposes. Firstly, and ethnic discourse supported by the Zulu monarch's claims to the 'sovereignty of the Zulu nation' (King Goodwill Zwelithini in SAPA 14 February 1994; Johnston 1996a: 187) differentiate the IFP from other black based political organisations, who may have claimed to respect traditional culture but did not have the official sanction of the most important cultural individual – the monarch. Secondly this differentiation served to legitimate the IFP, because the ANC could then not claim to represent this "nation" without official sanction from the monarch, nor could it ignore the IFP, for that would be tantamount to "ignoring a nation" with a shared history, language culture and heritage. Finally, this ethnic discourse enabled the IFP to contest the ANC's moral space by suggesting that the party had acted immorally by ignoring the viewpoint of a constituency that did not support it. This marginalisation was not simply the marginalisation of a party constructed on ethnic lines but the dismissal of an alternative perspective that was equally valid.

IFP proposals for a federal state form against the ANC's centralist structure were an extension of the 1980's proposals that advocated a dispersal of power, but also reflected the political elites that came to dominate the IFP from 1991. Literature that points to ethnic manipulation of a "Zulu nation" as the dominant force behind regional power does not consider the elite constituencies that made

[30] My personal Interviews have revealed that the IFP Midlands leader who Jeffery states 'was singled out for immediate execution' (p. 363) was IFP MPP Ntombela.

up the party's decision-making body. From 1991, the party was flooded with new members from two sources in particular. The first were those from the crumbling white parties who were committed to a measure of regional autonomy as a reflection of the good relationship forged between parties in Natal and the IFP in the pre-1990 period. The second were former PAC members who recognised black consciousness ideals in the IFP and rejected what they considered to be authoritarian tendencies in the ANC. The IFP federal proposals reflected the composite constituencies' shared concerns, the ethnic discourse being the justification through differentiation.

Political ideas and internal tensions in the provincial elite

In the transition period new struggles revealed themselves in KwaZulu and Natal as the ability of provincial elites to frustrate national political processes and act autonomously was challenged, but not thwarted. National political imperatives for the ANC had changed. At the national level, the socialist state option was thwarted and there was the need to both appease yet neutralise the SACP. The armed struggle was abandoned and the national leadership core committed the movement to negotiations. Inkatha had not crumbled and threatened to upset the negotiation process. These factors and the ANC's attempts to establish an organisational structure in KwaZulu and Natal out of ANC, UDF, SACP, COSATU, workerists, charterists, communists, nationalists, ex-prisoners, underground and exile members, trade unionists and community activists, intensified already tense elite struggles in Natal. The Natal elite was already fractured and poor relationships existed between some members of the ANC, trade unions and UDF in different regions, as well as between individuals in various charterist movements outside the UDF. The unbanned ANC provided a home for diverse and fragmented UDF critics in Natal and the return of exiles and Robben Islanders combined with national ANC control over negotiations and relationships with the IFP produced clashes and rivalries locally and between the national leadership and regions.

Although the UDF was reconstituted in other parts of South African in late 1989, this was not so in Natal. Instead, the UDF's roles were assumed by the Joint Working Committee[31] which became the key decision-making structure for the region and increasingly independent of the UDF. In the Natal Midlands divisions among charterists were rife and a divided and ideologically frag-

[31] The Joint Working Committee comprised representatives from COSATU that included John Jeffrey, Thami Mohlomi, Alec Erwin and Jayendra Naidoo, and representatives from the UDF that included Sandy Africa, Yunus Erwin and Diliza Mji. As this was a provincially based structure it also included regional representatives Willis Mchunu from Northern Natal and Sipho Gcabashe from the Natal Midlands (Pers. ANC Interviews 21 and 104).

mented elite[32] replaced the coherent sub-regional UDF leadership that was detained in the 1988 detentions. Along with Gwala – a former unionist, SACP stalwart and ANC leader released from Robben Island in 1988 who was opposed to the UDF – these elites attempted to build a rival charterist movement in the midlands. In addition, other midlands activists were involved in attempts to build another nation-wide charterist movement to rival the UDF nationally.[33]

Gwala's 'unreconstructed Stalinism, populist rhetoric and straightforward advocacy of direct paramilitary action in the struggle against the IFP made him extremely popular with the youthful "comrades" in the ANC' (Johnston 1996a: 180) in his leadership of the Natal Midlands region. Key members of the Natal Midlands rejected Slovo's Sunset Proposals upon which the Record of Understanding was based. Harry Gwala, the only Natal based ANC NEC member in 1991 argued 'the key element is the struggle itself and negotiations must be subjected to the struggle' (Gwala 1992: 27). Gwala was vocal in his opposition to the entire negotiating process. He said, ' …we find agreement unacceptable, … We are already setting down the rule of surrender … Where do we draw the line?' (Gwala cited in Mkhondo 1993: 162).

In fact, elements in the Natal midlands did draw the line. Under Gwala's leadership, four senior post-1990 ANC provincial leaders developed significant semi-autonomous power bases, a factor that was to lead to violent confrontations on Gwala's death. This elite "Midlands Club" was not averse to forming temporary alliances with one another or with elites in other regions to the detriment of one another. Such alliances took on new twists during the negotiations when the "hawks" continued with paramilitary activities, and the "doves" were later to reject their own leader in the region wide leadership contest. The objective of Operation Vula had been to launch a full scale armed insurrection in South Africa through the use of MK structures and Self-Defence Units. In Natal, these structures were fully formed when the operation was discovered by police in 1990. In the post-Operation Vula period at least two leaders within the midlands were to integrate MK soldiers into Transkei trained SDU's in a scheme which involved gun-running, the establishment of four large hi-tech arms caches in the midlands, systematic assassination of IFP leaders and the creation of personal fiefdoms (Pers. ANC Interview 94). In addition, these hawks established alliances with other hawks in Northern Natal (Pers. Interview 124). Returning exiles and Robben Islanders did not fit easily into the already

---

[32] This new leadership included John Jeffrey (COSATU legal team) and Sipho Gcabashe (COSATU), Dennis Sithole & Cassius Lubisi (student activist) (Pers. ANC Interview 21).

[33] This was along with Aubrey Mokoena from the Johannesburg based Release Mandela Campaign.

established power structures in this region, and an uneasy relationship ensued, with some returnees more amenable to the new directives from the centre.

In Southern Natal, older ANC leaders from the 1950s had played a part in the merging of MK and civic structures outside the charterist movement since the release of Curnick Ndlovu and Billy Nair in the early 1980s. These members of 'Izingwevu'[34] rejected the "cabal" leadership[35] of the UDF. Street militants that had emerged through the civics formed an important elite constituency. Yet alongside this group, another emerged in the 1990s; a younger generation of Southern Natal leaders out of the conflict at Ngoye[36] and student politics in the 1980s. This group saw themselves as the intellectual wing of the fiercely Africanist nationalist movement, based neither on the trade unions nor the armed struggle, that challenged Inkatha's claims to represent Zulus. Alongside these groups a number of returnees from exile joined internal leadership in key positions. As one MPP articulated, 'We had no Kings here. There was no senior ANC leadership here' (Pers. ANC Interview 134). Another MPP contended that in parts of Southern Natal a leadership vacuum existed that enabled returnees to slot easily into local structures alongside civic and UDF leaders (Pers. ANC Interview 87).

Certainly in Southern Natal, the most senior figures that emerged had strong links with exile and Robben Island which served to impart the imperatives of diplomacy to the region more easily than the midlands. This is not to say that paramilitary action and intransigence towards the IFP[37] did not play a part in this region, which had the most successfully developed ANC underground

---

[34] The meaning of this term may be translated in this context as 'an older and more respected, higher court or assembly of leaders'.

[35] Allegations that the Natal UDF was controlled by a "cabal" consisting of members of the Natal Indian Congress were revealed after the ANC's unbanning in 1990. These individuals were charged with corruption, inadequate leadership, and attempting to hijack the ANC leadership. Former cabal accused failed to gain significant positions on the provincial election lists in 1994.

[36] The conflict at Ngoye occurred in the context of an ANC/UDF national schools boycott which had reached parts of KwaZulu. At the University of Zululand Ngoye campus in October 1983 a commemoration of Zulu King Cetshwayo in which Inkatha President Buthelezi was to speak was disrupted by students. In armed clashes five people died and hundreds of thousands of rands worth of property was destroyed. The Middleton Commission, set up to investigate the incident, rejected claims by students that they were protecting themselves against Inkatha impis and found that some students were intent upon confrontation with Inkatha. It further found that there was substantial coercion and intimidation from a small group of students to persuade others to join in. See RSA 1985: Volume 1.

[37] For example, at the funeral vigil for Chris Hani, Jeff Radebe 'told the angry crowd that the ANC should not only rid itself of white supremacists, but should also focus on the IFP leader, Chief Buthelezi' (Jeffrey 1997: 382).

structures and was essential in the implementation of the Green Book (cf. ANC-SACP 1979: 72),[38] but the political elite here acquiesced to the overall imperative of negotiations. This took place alongside civic action, street militancy and covert paramilitary assaults. The refusal to capitulate in its entirety was a result of the complexities of workerism as a component of the struggle in Southern Natal and a result of the belief that whatever government took power, it would always be an opponent of organised labour (Pers. ANC Interview 35).

Northern Natal, the largest territorial ANC region, was the least organised and contained the least ANC support in the province. ANC organisers here had to compete directly with the IFP in rural territory that was under the jurisdiction of the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly and subject to traditional leadership. A number of paramilitary-style SDU structures existed in Northern Natal with direct links to the Midlands region. The rejection by elites in Northern Natal of the peace process with the IFP (along with elites in the Natal Midlands) occurred despite the fact that senior members had been engaged in attempts to conduct peace talks since as early as 1989. This was through the 5-a-side Mass Democratic Movement (MDM) team[39] that included Willies Mchunu from Northern Natal. The Northern Natal regional leadership was replaced by the deployed[40] senior exile leader Jacob Zuma in 1993 in an attempt to "provincialise" the province (see Chapter 5 on recruitment and circulation).

Internal IFP differences in the transition period were evident but less critical. They were certainly not regional, as the movement reconstituted itself as a viable political party. Where they did occur, was primarily at the branch level in urban and peri-urban areas where there was fierce competition over turf, as individuals competed for limited places in an environment that was often hostile to IFP mobilising. In contrast to the ANC, ideological tensions in the IFP surfaced mainly in the 1994-1996 period (see later chapters). There were four reasons for this delayed fracture of elite clusters. First, despite substantive ideological diversity, IFP elites were largely united on the preferred form of the state, which took precedence as the party became provincialised by national processes, and failed to establish a significant presence outside of KwaZulu-Natal. Second, although the influx of new elites from the crumbling white parties and the PAC threatened to add new dimensions of internal difference,

---

[38] See later in this chapter for a discussion of the merging of MK and civic structures based on the Mandela Plan.

[39] This team comprised of Mchunu, Gcabashe, Mji, Erwin and Naidoo.

[40] The ANC Northern Natal Chair was replaced by Jacob Zuma on the regional and national lists towards the end of 1993. This was as a direct result of intervention by Mandela.

they remained predominantly outside the National Council[41] until 1994. Third, notwithstanding a centralised decision-making process, IFP elites were afforded significant autonomy in their local districts. Fourth, the strategies pursued by the party during the transition cut across elite clusters so that individuals grouped together on one strategy were not necessarily grouped on another. Hence the diversity of viewpoints paralleled the extent of those in the ANC, but without the ensuing tensions.

Notwithstanding these points, differences existed between IFP elite clusters on a number of significant issues. IFP elites were divided upon whether or not to accept the negotiated form of the state that sidelined and provincialised the party, and whether or not peace with the ANC was desirable. Some elite members were determined to campaign for an election, and others wished to boycott and resist incorporation of the KwaZulu homeland. Some elites desired a reconciliation with the ANC as a step to greater Pan-African unity (Pers. IFP Interview 118), while some warned their constituencies of the 'detriments' of impending communist rule (Pers. IFP Interviews 43 and 16), and a further cluster continued simply to see the ANC as an 'enemy' (Pers. IFP Interviews 60 and 119). While the IFP debated the merits of participating in the 1994 election, their preparation – unlike that of the ANC – did not include the selection of candidates. Consequently, a hurriedly drawn electoral list in the final days before the election was to create untenable internal party rivalries that contributed to the fracture that inevitably came (see Chapter 4).

• Professionalised political volence

Political violence during the transition period took on a new form of professionalism that sets it apart from the violence earlier[42]. Jeffrey notes that more than 80% of post-1990 killings involved the use of firearms rather than pangas, knobkerries or necklacing (Jeffrey 1997). This suggests a proliferation of sophisticated military weaponry and "tuition" in their use.[43]

---

[41] The National Council was the key decision-making body within the IFP replacing the Central Committee, paralleling the ANC's National Executive Committee.

[42] This remains undocumented and unanalysed although specific cases can be found in Jeffrey 1997.

[43] It does not specifically suggest, contrary to popular wisdom, a third force, given that high levels of violence in Natal and on the Reef were not replicated in areas where the ANC contended with other political forces such as in the Eastern Cape where the ANC through the UDF contended with the National Forum.

ANC-SACP[44] Operation Vula, using MK to create "the objective conditions" for an armed insurrection, was the basis upon which Self-Defence Units (SDUs) supported by, and sometimes integrated with, MK were established throughout KwaZulu-Natal. A number of structures that became SDUs predate the ANC guidelines (ANC 1991)[45] for their establishment and the MK conference in Venda which formalised their role.[46] For example, the Richmond SDU was formed by 1989 out of Operation Vula (Pers. ANC Interview 94). Although the ANC leadership distanced itself from Operation Vula, the establishment of internal combat groups inside KwaZulu-Natal and the large scale smuggling of military hardware from the Transkei and frontline states added a new dimension to the violence that wracked the province during the transition period. Evidence suggests that in Natal, arms smuggling and training continued as late as 1993. The Golela incident in which weapons were smuggled through the Swaziand border for the ANC in Natal is one example.[47] According to one ANC MPP, 'there were three levels of SDU training. (First) … there was internal training under communities or training depots. There were four (of these) in the Natal Midlands … one under (MPP X) in Willowfontein with a proper arsenal and MK staff … one under (MPP Y) in Dambuza with an arsenal behind Table Mountain … one in the Estcourt area staffed by MK … and another in the Richmond area. (Second) … those who showed promise in the training depots were sent to the Transkei to be trained further by MK and the Transkei Defence Force. (The third level) … people were taken out of the country … The peak (of) training would have been 1992, but we got weapons even in 1993' (Pers. ANC Interview 94).

In many cases, SDUs were established under the personal control of charismatic anti-IFP leaders in personalised and semi-autonomous political

---

[44] Although Oliver Tambo headed Operation Vula, the command structures comprised layers of command and operational structures. The first layer comprised the Presidents Committee: Siphiwe Nyanda, Mac Maharaj, Ronnie Kasrils, Joe Slovo, Archie Abrahams & Ivan Pillay. Below that comprised the Vula Head Committee –Siphiwe Nyanda, Mac Maharaj, Chris Hani and Janet Love – who commanded twelve regional committees. When the operation was uncovered in 1990, the Durban Political Committee headed by Billy Nair & Pravin Gordhan was fully formed.

[45] The document discussed the establishment of a people's militia in which armed SDUs would merge with MK.

[46] The MK Conference in Venda in December 1991 formalized the role of MK and elaborated that SDUs would be assisted by MK in arming themselves, weapon usage, intelligence gathering and ambushes.

[47] In the Golela incident in1993 two individuals were caught smuggling weapons through the Swaziland border for the ANC and the ANC Midlands and Northern Natal regions clashed with the ANC national leadership after the national leadership disowned the mission (cf. Jeffrey 1997: 378-379).

spaces. The SDUs, despite their name, came to be used in turf battles against rivals, towards the destabilisation of areas and to continue the revolutionary option, even when national imperatives had changed. This must also be viewed in the context of changing institutional power and political spaces. Approximately 14,000 individuals were trained in this way (Pers. ANC Interview 87, confirmed by Pers. ANC Interview 124). SDUs also became regarded in Natal as part of MK's structure and while some individuals became part of the National Peacekeeping Force, others were later integrated into the VIP Protection Unit and South African National Defence Force.

Self Protection Units (SPUs) were the IFP's parallel response to the increasing violence from 1991. Individuals were sent to camps for training and armed with weaponry. Alongside this, the IFP also secured a military arsenal from freelance members of the SADF, which was the insurance against what was perceived as an ANC assault on the KwaZulu homeland. The IFP believed that the ANC through their dominance of the TEC and integration of MK into the National Peacekeeping Force would pursue the overthrow of the KwaZulu homeland in a fashion mirroring the events in Bophuthatswana (one of the few homelands not sympathetic to the ANC). Such IFP perceptions were based upon an ANC/SACP authored document 'Prepare the Anvil for the Coming Hammer' which discusses a covert plan to ensure the destruction of the KwaZulu homeland while distancing the ANC from it (Pers. IFP Interview 28). Although this document was presented to the Goldstone Commission, no investigation was ever initiated and the reasons for lack thereof were never provided (Jeffrey 1997: 481-484). As one IFP MPP argued, 'there was the perception that the IFP was up against a highly organised, highly effective military force, operating with impunity. There were arms caches all over the place and there were MK commandos directing events … Mlaba camp was a response to both this and the integration of MK into the Defence Force, of a need to somehow balance out the ANC in military matters' (Pers. IFP Incident 46). Another confirmed this perception, 'the prototype for Mlaba Camp was initiated in the Midlands. Those trained were to be placed under the Amakhosi and Indunas in rural areas and councillors in townships … In the Midlands there had been the slaughter of the IFP … We needed to somehow protect communities. It was funded by the KwaZulu Government budget' (Pers. IFP Interview 28). Approximately 5,000 individuals were trained in this manner' (Pers. IFP Interview 28 confirmed in Pers. IFP Interview 65).

Each party in its own way used the available institutional spaces in the militarisation of units. While the KwaZulu Government budget funded the IFP's SPUs and the arms were secured through state structures, the ANC's internal operations took place in the context of shifting institutional control in their favour. Enabling individuals to act with impunity, institutional access and little

regulation also afforded autonomy to provincial elites in both camps to pursue violent action in a climate that was already fractured into hardened political camps with parallel structures of political authority to those of the crumbling state.

Key factors and contexts in elite formation prior to 1994

Central to patterns of elite formation in what became the province of KwaZulu-Natal are a number of key factors that were transferred into the new post election political dispensation.

Firstly, an ideologically divided and increasingly fragmented political elite was held together by pre-1994 discourses. Some of these discourses, such as Africanism and the maintenance but modernisation of the institution of traditional leadership, were evident at the turn of the twentieth century and were maintained throughout the struggle and the transition period in various forms and strengths. Other discourses, such as that of the Left were strongest during the struggle period, and although eroded somewhat at a national level, continued to play a part in local struggles during the transition period and beyond. The alliances that held elites together in hardened camps also contained somewhat contradictory discourses. In the post-1994 period some of the bonds that had held the political elite together in these camps became increasingly less relevant. Key questions of whether an armed struggle against, or negotiated solution to, apartheid were no longer relevant in the post transition period. Despite this many elites remained entrenched within the political parties that they had joined through conscious decisions that they had made about such questions. In the final years before the elections, both the IFP and ANC were flooded with new members, some of which were from the crumbling "white" parties. This added a further dimension to the already diverse and divided party discourses. Common to both the ANC and IFP were Africanist discourses, first expressed at the turn of the century, though shrouded in different forms of ethnic, traditionalist, populist and Left wing militant ideas. By 1994, internal party competition between the political elite that was essentially based upon pre-1994 discourses was clear, and these divisions were transferred into the KwaZulu-Natal legislature.

Secondly, most parties (except the PAC and ACDP) that entered the legislature in 1994 had prior experience of "institutionalized" power through one or more of three parallel systems of legitimacy and authority; that is, formal political institutions in the pre and post-1990 period, the institution of traditional leadership and the informal institutions created through the merging of struggle components. In some cases the personalisation of institutionalized power had meant that elites had come to be seen *as the* institution. Hardened political

spaces between parties and the autonomy granted in some cases to political elites in their own communities meant that, in some cases, territories had been claimed by parties and positions of power had been personalised by elites within them. In addition, elites were not averse to utilising the institutions and institutional spaces, which they regulated, for ends in contradiction to the democratic process. These included using the institutions to undermine opponents or competitors, to keep opponents or competitors away from one's turf, or to dispense patronage to ones allies. The merging of the functions of both formal (the IFP in the KLA) and informal institutions (state, civil society and party by the ANC alliance) had blurred the boundaries of political rules. In addition, violence to some extent became institutionalized as a resource to be used to advance interests. This was instead of the subjection of competing interests to a framework of rules and procedures. This was so, both in place of and alongside formal rule processes.

The third factor, essential to the dynamics of elite formation in the post-1994 period is the level of autonomy granted to individual elites and political parties within the provincial institutional framework. Whilst in the first part of the century, Natal was not provincialised; provincial political discourses came to dominate national movements, this was only partly reversed in the period up to 1994. National political dynamics during the transition period came increasingly to define provincial political spaces, but not without resistance from provincial political elites. While the ANC benefited from the national dynamics that ultimately imposed a quasi-federal political system, the political autonomy of a number of ANC elites in the province had become a threat to the ANC's national political imperatives. The ANC, dominant at the national level and with clear majorities in seven out of nine provinces, was forced to contend with the IFP in KwaZulu-Natal, as well as a fragmented and partly autonomous provincial ANC political elite. At the same time, provincial matters continued to dominate national politics. Political violence continued into the post-1994 period and the ANC and IFP entered the legislature in 1994 with their relationship at the lowest level.

3

Social characteristics of an emerging political elite

> 'The social origins of … leaders are rather similar to, instead of strikingly different from, the social origins of leaders of … parties with whom they clash' (Oberschall 1973: 391).

Accounts of the social composition of political elites in parliamentary systems have traditionally prioritised the values of elites, defined and determined by their political party affiliation (Edinger & Searing 1967: 428-445; Schleth 1978: 46-72; Matthews 1985: 17-55). That is, what elites stood for was considered to be more important than the social characteristics that they possessed. Party affiliation, in such accounts, was thought to be the most influential determinant of attitudes, behaviour and interests. In KwaZulu-Natal, as the previous chapter demonstrated, political party affiliation does not, however, guarantee a particular set of values among the elite so affiliated. Alliances that held elites together were constructed out of sometimes contradictory discourses. Moreover, in other contexts where countries have emerged from a conflict in which battle lines are drawn territorially, or where there was little free political exchange, the political party is not a good indicator of values.

More recent literature on social composition suggests, however, that social background does matter as a major determinant in the attitudinal differences of elites *within* political parties and, hence, in the internal prioritisation of party agendas (Wessels 1985; Esiasson & Holmberg 1996; Norris & Lovenduski 1996; Thomas 1994). The emphasis in these recent debates over social background is to correlate the social composition of parties with internal attitudinal

differences within parties. Hence, these studies are concerned with where the elite come from. Like Mosca and Pareto, the social background of the elite is seen as crucial to an understanding of whether the elite insulate themselves from society and develop collective self-interests. Their common social background is provided as indicators of similar patterns of beliefs. Such studies frequently claim that the political elite is atypical of the electorate, exercises a degree of self-segregation (Pareto) in the form of reproduced recruitment and is constructed from the chattering classes (Norris & Lovenduski 1996).

In post-colonial African states, the origins and history of political elites – where they come from, their knowledge of one another, their social and economic background – still needs to be established (Bayart 1993: 115). In Cameroon, Bayart demonstrates that although the post-colonial state served as the 'matrix' of a 'progressive emergence of an … alliance of different regional, political, economic and cultural segments of the social elite (*ibid*.: 150), initially the fusion of elites took place in civil society (*ibid*.: 155) and assimilation took place 'in private life' (*ibid*.: 157). Hence social background is a good indicator of the points of fusion or alliance among segments of the elite. Certainly, the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal does not constitute a homogenous group. The 'transformation (of the elite) into a social class (has) remained subordinated to … radical heterogeneity' (*ibid*.: 179).

In KwaZulu-Natal there are four primary consequences of social background in the context of elite formation. Firstly, social background influences the patterns of recruitment and circulation among the elite. Representivity and heterogeneity are demonstrable features in elite formation, as is simultaneously, increased homogeneity. According to Pareto, 'society … is an aggregate of heterogeneity and hierarchy. Heterogeneity is the driving force of the social dynamic as it is the core of social change and social equilibrium' (Zankina 2006: 9).

Secondly, as in many countries, social background has contributed to social networks and, in turn, social capital (cf. Coleman 1990; Woolcock 1998: 151-208; Putnam 1995: 65-78). Patterns of association based upon one or more shared social characteristic have served to bind political elites in relationships of trust. Social characteristics serve as reliability markers that connect elites as well as structure who relates to and understands who in the legislature and why. This in turn has contributed to the patterns of recruitment and circulation in parties and in the legislature. In post-colonial Africa, Bayart identifies networks of factions which structures African political societies (Bayart 1993: 207-227). Social networks in KwaZulu-Natal are not quite factions. They result in a passive trust, rather than an active accumulation of power.

The third and fourth consequences of social background (discussed in later chapters) derive from patterns of recruitment and from social capital. The third

is the various ways in which political elites relate to one another *within* political parties, the values that they possess and the internal party dynamics that result from this. The fourth consequence is the way in which segments of elites relate to and interact with similar segments of elites *across* parties in the legislature and the concerns that are prioritised in the provincial agenda. In such cases, political priorities, patterns of fluidity and specific forms of coalition building were found to be in part a result of shared background. Hence, social background is important in that it influences action inside the legislature, but not because the elite have common material interests (as in Mosca).

Social characteristics among the political elite

There is not one typical profile of the political elite in KwaZulu Natal. The social characteristics[1] of race, gender, age, regional identification, family and lineage ties, religious affiliation, education, occupational background and community activities among the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal reveal clusters of elites that share specific characteristics. These clusters are not always specific to a political party.

Racial composition

Despite a diverse racial composition in the Provincial Parliament of KwaZulu-Natal, it is not representative of the racial composition of the provincial population. Of the total number of MPPs who served in the provincial legislature at any point in time from 1994-2004, my analysis of interviews show that 63.2% were black, 27.0% were white and 9.8% were asian[2].

In contrast to the political elite, black South Africans comprised 82.7% of the total population of KwaZulu-Natal in 1995, with asians the second largest group at 9.2% (Republic of South Africa 1997). The provincial population in 2001 was constituted by 84.9% black South Africans, 8.5% asians and 5.1% whites (Republic of South Africa 2001b). Simply put, racial representivity in parliament is not commensurate with the racial demographics in KwaZulu-Natal, with whites overrepresented and blacks underrepresented. These figures illustrate a pattern typical of pacted transitions. There is substantial continuity in elites from the period before transition. In this case, a large percentage of the white MPPs who served in the first democratic parliament had prior experience

---

1 There are no records of legislative members in KwaZulu-Natal by the social characteristics discussed in this chapter. The data illustrated in this chapter is constructed from my analysis of personal interviews with the MPPs concerned.

2 The category "asian" reflects a broader geographical identification to those so described than the term "Indian" which refers to a person identifying with the nation-state of India or racially categorised as Indian by the apartheid state.

as elected representatives in the apartheid period. In some instances, white MPPs left their apartheid-era parties and joined the newly dominant IFP and ANC. In addition, continuity is further evident in the presence of some black MPPs who formerly served in the KLA.[3] One of the key features of the African elite in the post-colonial period is their 'reciprocal assimilation' (Bayart 1993: 150-179). Plurality is often expressed through a reintegration of the elite. This is certainly a feature of the transformation of the state in Africa. In former Zaire, as Bayart shows, old politicians from the first republic were reinserted in government and in Ivory Coast there was the reintegration of radical nationalists who were previously purged (Bayart 1993: 166).

Some continuity in elites is a feature of all countries in transition. Despite the dominance of the approaches to the study of elites in Eastern Europe during transition – as characterisiing *either* reproduction *or* circulation (cf. Szelenyi & Szelenyi 1995: 615-638 and 697-722; Frane & Tomsic 2002: 435-454) – there are features of both reproduction and circulation in all transitions. Hence we should rather see the political elite in transitions as transformed simultaneously by both continuity and change, and not continuity *or* change as the end product of a transition. Transition provides an opportunity for the synthesis of heterogeneity within the state.

In the post-apartheid period, race has remained a significant organising factor in KwaZulu-Natal in the transformation of the political elite, not least in the party affiliation of elites. Graph 3.1 shows the percentage of MPPs that have served in parliament at any time during the first two terms of the provincial parliament, by race and political party.

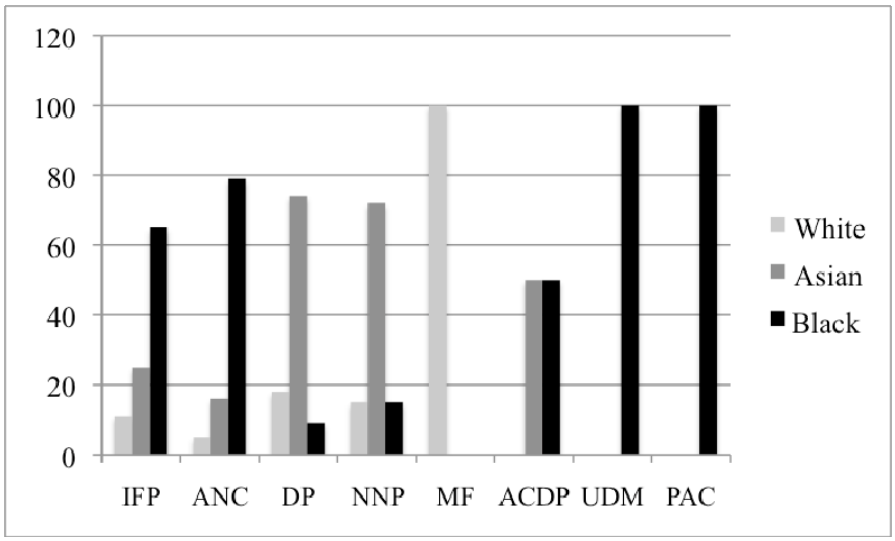
As illustrated in Graph 3.1, the IFP has been the most diverse of the parties in its racial make up, with more asian and white members than any of the others, and the IFP has accounted for more white MPPs than both the DP and NNP together.[4] The prevalence of black MPPs is greatest in parties that occupy the most parliamentary seats. Among the smaller parties, the DP shows similar levels of diversity to the two dominant parties, but with representation skewed heavily to whites. The ACDP is equally divided between black and white. The other minority parties have selected MPPs from one racial group only. Indeed,

---

[3] For a full discussion of this see Chapter 4.

[4] The Democratic Alliance was formed in mid-2000 out of the Democratic Party, the New National Party and the Federal Alliance to contest the December 2000 local government elections. Because of the anti-defection clause in the 1996 Constitution parties could not legally merge between elections. As a consequence, in the KwaZulu-Natal Provincial Legislature, the DP and NNP remained separate parties and received separate allocations, but operated as one entity in terms of voting together and attending one caucus.

Graph 3.1 Percentage of MPPs by race and party, 1994-2004



for the MF husband and wife team,[5] race has been a defining feature of the public image. Referring to himself as 'the Bengal Tiger' (*Natal Mercury*, 1994), MF MPP Amichand Rajbansi's[6] successful candidacy has been based on his ability to harness asian fears of black domination and present the MF as spokes-person for asians in the formerly "Indian" classified townships in the provincial metropole of Durban. Amichand Rajbansi combines this ethno-racial appeal with a finely calculated commitment to the overall goals of nation-building and transformation as well as keen tactical awareness of when to collaborate with the ANC.

More than 70% of DP and NNP provincial representatives since 1994 have been white (see Graph 3.1). This clearly indicates significant racial continuity and a failure by each party to break out of its former white racial support base. Significantly, all of these white MPPs have had experience in politics as either politicians or civil servants in the pre-1994 period.[7] This is not, however, where

---

5 MPP Shireen Thakur is the second wife of MPP Rajbansi and together they occupy the two seats for the Minority Front in the KwaZulu Natal Provincial Legislature. MPP Rajbansi was formerly married to Asha Devi who defected from the MF to the IFP.

6 Leader of the Minority Front.

7 For example, NNP MPP Valentino Volker was the longest serving representative in South Africa in 2004, having become a member of the Natal Provincial Council in 1965 for the then National Party.

the racial similarity between the DP and NNP ends. Of the black and asian MPPs in their ranks, all had links to political structures prior to 1994. With the exception of DP MPP Tim Jeebodh, who was placed low on the ANC provincial list in 1994 and was not elected before switching to the DP, all asian MPPs served in the Tricameral Parliament.[8] However, fragility in allegiance to the DP and NNP was demonstrated in 2002 when legislation to allow members of parliament to cross the floor and retain their seat[9] was introduced at national level and applied equally to the provincial parliament. In the first floor crossing window period, all asian MPPs located in the minority parties crossed the floor to the IFP and ANC. This indicates clearly that continuity in periods of transition accompanies change. This change is in the form of transformation in the position of power that parties occupy in the legislature. Despite their presence, these parties have less power than before so that there is simultaneously accommodation, but a shift in power. These parties provide a conduit through which the political elite that might be excluded by the shift in power can jump to parties that have increased power.

Black MPPs who came to parliament with the NNP and DP had prior political links to the IFP. Few of these MPPs, however, formerly served in the KLA.[10] The links these MPPs had to the IFP did not afford them the requisite

---

[8] The Tricameral Parliament was established by the Republic of South Africa (1983) *Constitution of the Republic of South Africa* (Act No.110 of 1983) in which three separate Houses were constituted for people classified under the Republic of South Africa (1950) *Population Registration Act* (Act No. 30 of 1950) as white, coloured and Indian. They were the House of Assembly (Whites), the House of Representatives (Coloureds) and the House of Delegates (Indians). Under this system the numerical weight of the House of Assembly meant that under no condition could the House of Representatives and House of Delegates outvote the dominant white assembly. In addition, the representivity of the two non-white houses was questionable given that voter turnout was often less than 20%. See Venter, A. (1989) 'The Central Government: Legislative, Executive, Judicial and Administrative Institutions' in Venter, A., ed., *South African Government and Politics* (Southern Book Publishers, Johannesburg) pp.45-98.

[9] Legislation that facilitated floor-crossing includes the Republic of South Africa (2002) *Constitution of the Republic of South Africa Amendment Act* (Act No.18 of 2002); Republic of South Africa (2002) *The Local Government Municipal Structures Amendment Act* (Act No. 20 of 2002); Republic of South Africa (2002) Constitution of the Republic of South Africa Second Amendment Act (Act No. 21 of 2002) and the Republic of South Africa (2002) *Loss or Retention of Membership of National and Provincial Legislatures Act* (Act No. 22 of 2002). The implications of this legislation are discussed in later chapters.

[10] For example, NNP MPP V.J. Mchunu was an aide to the Chief Minister of KwaZulu and organiser of the Inkatha Youth Brigade from 1975-1978. NNP MPP Sipho Mkhize is the nephew of Mangosuthu Buthelezi, the President of the IFP. DP MPP

seniority and credentials to be included in those who came to be on the IFP provincial list in 1994. However, their racial profile (like Jeebodh in the DP) and their conservative political credentials combined to make them useful candidates for the DP and NNP searching for non-white candidates to alter their public images. So while the characteristics of these MPPs gave them no advantage in being chosen for a career as an IFP MPP, they were one of the main factors that led to their recruitment in the formerly exclusively white parties. In this way, plurality in racial terms among the political elite came to be seen during the first ten years of democracy – by these particular parties – as a necessary prerequisite for continued access to power.

As shown in Graph 3.1, the racial profiles of the IFP and ANC, while diverse are not representative of the provincial population. In the IFP there are significantly more white and fewer black members in comparison to the racial breakdown of the population. Moreover, the 19 white MPPs that have served in the legislature for the IFP since 1994 have been of diverse backgrounds. A substantial proportion of these MPPs were from the white parties whose status had diminished by 1994 and had a long and significant political career.[11] Others entered politics for the first time in 1994.[12] In the ANC during the same period, there is almost parity in the figures of black MPPs and the black population but numerical under-representation of asian MPPs, and overrepresentation of white MPPs. Hence in KwaZulu-Natal there is the simultaneous racial accommodation – albeit reduced – of representatives from the apartheid order and the inclusion of racial heterogeneity to more properly reflect the racial make up of the population. This is demonstrated most clearly by examining the racial composition of the political elite over time (see Graph 3.2).

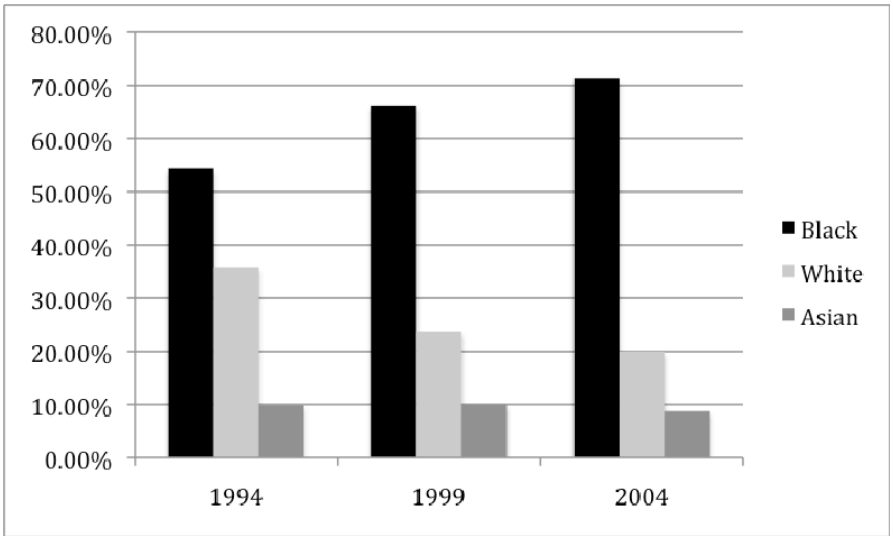
While the number of asian MPPs remained relatively constant over the period 1994-2004, the number of white MPPs declined and black MPPs increased in number. The most significant periods of change were from the first election in 1994 to the second election in 1999 where a 12% increase in black MPPs was matched by a 12% decrease in white MPPs. Since 1999, these patterns continued at a slower rate. This might suggest that the most significant periods of elite replacement in countries undergoing transition occur within the first few years of the founding election – as the new state comes to reflect the population – as a process of rectifying the imbalances and skewed homogeneity among the elite that led to the demise of the old state.

(and MEC) Wilson Ngcobo served in the Mzumba regional authority for the IFP from 1982-1988 and then became a member of the KLA.

[11] For example, MPP Patrick Cornell previously served as mayor for Pietermaritzburg and MPP Charles van Eck served as mayor for Pinetown.

[12] Such as MPP Henry Combrinck, a small business owner from Louwsburg.

Graph 3.2 Time series of MPPs, 1994-2004

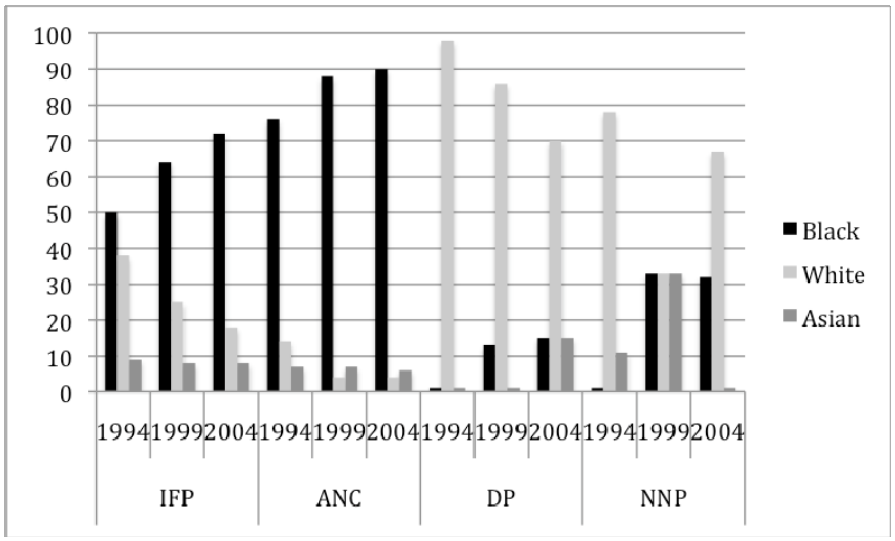


Black	54.32%	66.25%	71.25%
White	35.80%	23.75%	20%
Asian	9.88%	10%	8.75%

A racial reconfiguration of the political elite has occurred in all political parties. However, in the ANC (unlike other parties) the reconfiguration was less accomodationist as it paralleled ideological changes within the provincial party. The reconfiguration was connected to the decline of MPPs who served as trade union representatives in the pre-1994 period and those who were located on the left of the political spectrum. This reconfiguration is in accordance with patterns in other African states in the post-independence period. As Tordoff claims, 'many parties … came to rest on a firmer ideological base than they had before' (Tordoff 1997: 115). By definition, the nationalist movements had a broader ideological basis before independence.

Graph 3.3 shows the racial composition of the political elite by political party over time. In the ANC, whereas the number of white and asian MPPs halved in the second election, black MPPs increased by almost a third. This racial reconfiguration of the ANC has, however, occured without a substantial loss of white MPPs. In any case, the white MPPs that exited parliament continued either to serve the ANC in other capacities or within state structures, indi-

Graph 3.3 Time series of MPPs by race, 1994-2004



cating the reach of the political elite nationally and locally.[13] Hence, if one thinks of the state in Africa (in which elite formation takes place) as encompassing the matrix of parties, civil service and elected representatives, there has been no circulation of the ANC elite based on race, as national government, local government and the civil service are part of the extensive matrix. In KwaZulu-Natal, as the ANC increased its share of the parliamentary seats in 1999 from 26 to 32, the only new members of the political elite were black. This is indicative of greater accommodation of the previously dominant racial groups in the first few years, rather than later years, of a transition in societies where racial domination and discrimination has been a key feature.

This, however, is not to say that race does not play a part in elite formation in the ANC. The following quotations are illustrative of the perceived salience of race as an organising factor by some MPPs.

[13] For example, Roy Ainslie relocated to the national parliament in 1999. Mike Sutcliffe took up the position of Chairperson of the Municipal Demarcation Board in 1999 and was required to resign from all party offices within 30 days of appointment. This attracted a brief period of controversy over the questioned independence of the board. He later became Municipal Manager for the distict municipality of eThekwini, the largest local government structure in KwaZulu-Natal.

'When it comes to the inner sanctum of black politics, I don't belong. I was very disappointed to hear S'bu Ndebele with his African Rennaissance, saying it was only for black people' (Pers. Interview 68).

'The ANC is guided by a deep philosophical outlook. It is overwhelmingly black, so a good white comrade might be disadvantaged. Does one therefore say that the comrade not be included? ... The real victors are generous. The ANC finds a place for everyone' (Pers. ANC Interview 134).

'The ANC now have only one white and one Indian. They are resented by the others' (Pers. Interview 83).[14]

In the ANC, it would seem that a greater accommodation of a formerly dominant feature (whiteness) occurred early in the transition. However, by the second term there was a gradual decline in this group as the newer political elite (predominantly black) brought greater change. Consequently, a decline in the salience of white representatives occurred.

As Graph 3.3 shows, in the DP a clear attempt has been made over the first two terms of office to alter the racial composition of the political elite to reflect at least some black and asian MPPs. The percentage of white MPPs in the DP decreased by almost 30% during the first 10 years of democratic rule. Black and asian MPPs who were absent from parliament in 1994 became visible in the 1999 period onwards and by 2003 constituted almost 15% of MPPs respectively. However, these increases do not correlate with the gains in parliamentary seats achieved by the DP. In 1994 the DP comprised 2 parliamentary seats in contrast to 7 in 2003 in which five white MPPs, 1 black MPP and 1 asian MPP served. It would seem that it is important for political parties to also be seen to promote elite circulation, to populations that were previously excluded.

Whereas the increase in parliamentary seats occupied by the DP prompted a racial reconfiguration of the political elite, the same reconfiguration was prompted in the NNP by a decrease in seats. In parties that have historically been identified with the old political order, it is imperative for their survival that they come to be seen as embracing the new order. Racial plurality is one key feature of the new South African order. In 1994 almost three quarters of the NNP were white MPPs (see Graph 3.3). In terms of race thinking in the NNP, a loss of two thirds of their seats in the second election from 9 to 3, led to a re-ordering of the party list, once the election results were revealed, to return one black, one asian and one white MPP to parliament. This suggests that racial representivity in parliament was central in the thinking of a party attempting to shed its apartheid past. Evidently, race has played a significant part in elite formation in the NNP in both the first and second terms. But whereas the reconfiguration of elites in the NNP in terms of racial parity in parliament in 1999 showed an attempt to present a racial transformation to the voters in terms

[14] This interview was conducted prior to this individual defecting to the ANC.

of both party orientation and representivity, this was not sustained. In 2001, when asian NNP MPP Naicker crossed the floor to the IFP, the party re-appointed MPP Brian Edwards, a long standing white member of the party, politician and parliamentarian from the first term, to fill the seat. Clearly factors other than racial representivity had reasserted themselves. One MPP's perspective is illuminating. He said, 'Indians in the party want more representation because Indians make up a big voting block in the party' (Pers. NNP Interview 112). While the racial composition of the general membership of the party in the post-1994 period is not in question, the incumbency of tried and tested white MPPs over other racial groups demonstrates that the parliamentary selectors have hardly changed. That is, while racial transformation may have occurred in general party membership, the centrality of race in parliamentary candidate selection may remain the same.

The most significant racial reconfiguration of the political elite has, however, occurred in the IFP. As demonstrated by Graph 3.3, the number of asian MPPs remained relatively constant in the period from April 1994 to 2004, but the number of black MPPs increased by more than 20% and the number of white MPPs decreased by more than 20%. On a superficial level these figures might appear no more remarkable than those illustrated for other parties. However, for some IFP MPPs, these trends were as a result of tensions that existed in the IFP between members of different racial groups. The following statements are illustrative of the centrality of race in the perceptions of these MPPs in their day to day interactions in the party.

> 'All I hear is blacks and whites in the party talking about apartheid. They are holding the party back...' (Pers. IFP Interview 110).[15]
>
> 'As white members of National Council, we all had to stand up and say that we supported non-racial politics ... We had to stand in a line, and they went from one to the next ... only white members ... It was unbelievable' (Pers. IFP Interview 83).

Such perceptions of race might be interpreted in terms of racial suspicion inscribed on MPPs by 50 years of apartheid. Given the recent and collective memories of dispossession and disempowerment ingrained on the consciousness of black MPPs, it is hardly surprising that racial tension might exist within the IFP, as it might in any other party. For instance, approximately 20% of MPPs pointed to the "overrepresentation" of white MPPs in the IFP in 1994, as if the increasing number of black MPPs and reduction in white MPPs was a normalisation or rectification of what had been an anomalous situation in 1994. As one MPP stated,

---

[15] This interview took place prior to the defection of this individual to the ANC.

> 'Now some left citing age or health and then there were those that were axed. There was some criticism that whites were overrepresented within the party. Of course, it was true. So some appeared very low down the electoral list (in 1999). Some were worse placed and lost their seat due to party losses' (Pers. IFP Interview 16).

Only a few white members that left parliament did so as a consequence of their placing on the 1999 list.[16] Rather, the provincial list that was compiled in 1994 was not representative of the party. The IFP lists were drawn up hurriedly in 1994 against the backdrop of a number of factors. These included the dismantling of the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly, the influx of new members into the party and the strong possibility that the IFP would not compete in the elections. For these reasons, a proper list-drawing process did not take place (Pers. IFP Interviews 28 and 78), and many new white party members were added to the list to the exclusion of many black MPPs who later took their place as mid-term replacements and replacements in the second election.

However, while this might explain the high proportion of white MPPs in the IFP in 1994, it does not explain the later reconfiguration. Neither racial tension as a result of apartheid, nor the over representation of groups in parliament has been the central imperative. Rather, the racial reconfiguration of the elite in the post-1994 period was a by-product of a failure by elites to reinvent themselves in a party that was alien to them. The following quotation is illustrative of this deeper underlying cause.

> 'There were some big names among those who left – Cornell, Van Eck, Watterson, Wilkins, Lee, Durham – all big names. They all exited of their own accord, all said cheers. Few blacks exited. Those that left often spoke of the National Council meetings, the meetings would go on and on ... they were held in Ulundi ... There was the whole question relating to the provincial capital. Now this was not just about its location. It was a deep underlying thing … it meant it was a Zulu centred party' (Pers. IFP Interview 16).

The "big names" discussed above, were of political significance in the Natal Provincial Administration[17] and as such were important in white political history, but not in zulu political history. The quotation implies that some MPPs possessed misperceptions of their own cultural dominance in their new political home. As such, MPPs failed to recognise that their attempts to "bring forth the modernisation" of a black based party, make choices and decisions on behalf of their black counterparts, and determine what was central to the party on the basis of white history was deeply flawed.

---

[16] One such example is Olive Ford who indicated a desire to serve a second term of office. However, her low list placing by the party combined with the IFP's loss of seats in the second election meant that she was not re-elected.

[17] For example, MPP Patrick Cornell previously served as mayor for Pietermaritzburg and MPP Charles van Eck served as mayor for Pinetown.

The Ulundi question,[18] mentioned in the previous quotation, is something of a metaphor for the cultural conflict over hegemony between elites. The defeat, during the Anglo-Zulu War in 1879, of the Zulus at the hands of the British in the battle of Ulundi (Zulu King Cetshwayo's capital) is recounted today by a significant proportion of black IFP MPPs through their personal oral histories. Likewise, so is the destruction of the capital by fire and the subsequent forced exile of Cetshwayo. The location of Ulundi as the capital of the KwaZulu homeland was deeply symbolic of a perceived time of prosperity, greatness and integrity of tradition within a kingdom before destruction, balkanisation and control by a foreign culture. The Ulundi question is thus synonymous with control. For many black Zulu MPPs in the IFP, retaining Ulundi as the provincial capital for the KwaZulu Natal Provincial Legislature is both about remembrance and the restoration of dignity for an elite crushed by the colonial power. Its position is symbolic of a zulu elite.

The preference for Pietermaritzburg as the provincial capital on the part of many white IFP MPPs[19] is symbolic of a failure to recognise the legacy of colonialism for a black elite, as if the history of oppression and dispossession began 50 years ago with apartheid. In this way, arguments that Pietermaritzburg is closer to the epicentre of urban life in the province miss the central connection between dispossession and rural poverty, between colonialism and an elite living on the margins that the capital issue deeply symbolises.

In interviews some black MPPs took issue with what they saw as an inability among some white MPPs to dispense with a paternalistic relationship with their black counterparts. One MPP said,

> 'Whites have been here hundreds of years and they still have not learned how to approach a black man! They just assume. They don't ask' (Pers. IFP Interview 74).

This relationship is only partly recognised among some white IFP MPPs, many of whom collapse the distinction between controlling the party and their centrality as experienced members of a party collective. As one MEC stated,

> 'I am treated politely and respectfully so long as I am sticking to technical and administrative issues. But then, I have no option to do otherwise. Felgate tried to do

---

[18] Since 1994 Ulundi and Pietermaritzburg have were used as provincial capitals for KwaZulu Natal. Legislative sittings have been held alternately at each parliamentary complex. Ulundi was the capital of the former KwaZulu homeland and Pietermaritzburg the capital of Natal. Following the 2004 elections, only the Pietermaritzburg complex was used for sittings.

[19] Not all white IFP MPPs supported Pietermaritzburg as the provincial capital. For example, IFP MPP Combrinck is a strong advocate of Ulundi as the capital, but then he only became politically involved in 1994.

it. By doing so, he stepped over the mark and then he was gone' (Pers. IFP Interview 128).

MPP Walter Felgate's former role in IFP politics is well documented (cf. Johnston 1996b: 1-11; Johnston & Johnson 1997: 17-20). The parallel drawn here, however, is between Walter Felgate's former role as Chief Advisor to IFP President Buthelezi in the 1990-1994 interim during the negotiations for a new South Africa and the interviewee's own role as an MEC in the post-apartheid provincial legislature. Notwithstanding the autonomy that the interviewee possesses as an MEC and has utilised in carrying out policy changes and ministerial functions, he expresses his intervention ability in negative terms. Such sentiments were commonly expressed amongst a segment of white IFP MPPs. As another stated,

'As whites or Indians you just slot in where you can. You are not privy to certain structures or issues. Whites are appendages to the party' (Pers. IFP Interview 68).

Notwithstanding this quotation, many white MPPs had party positions of significant seniority.[20] Moreover, it would appear that a segment of white MPPs see their own parliamentary and party role differently to that which is set out for them. One statement is particularly illustrative of this, made in 2002 just prior to a series of defections. The MPP said,

'Whites in the party don't do anything. Which whites do you think go out to these places? Not (X...). Whites are a different race. They won't get involved, they aren't playing the game, they are ducking things, they think it is beneath them. They should be going to Camperdown, to Impendle ... That's the difference. What did they think they would be doing when they joined? Then, they don't go to any of the social functions either' (Pers. IFP Interview 110).

This is one of the key distinctions between the role that white parliamentarians and councillors would have played in the pre-1994 period and the imperatives of that role in the post-1994 period. In the IFP, whose main constituencies are the rural and urban poor, it would not be sufficient for an MPP to focus merely upon parliamentary business. Instead one way in which the party's strong local roots are maintained is through work in areas where the population is predominantly black, a factor that a segment of white MPPs may have been uncomfortable with.

---

[20] For example, Peter Miller was the MEC for Finance, Alexander Hamilton is in charge of IFP party finances, John Aulsebrook (now deceased) was Chairperson of the Premier's Portfolio Committee which addressed gaming licenses, Henry Combrinck is whip in the legislature, both Mike Tarr & Morris Mackenzie held the positions, in the first term, of Chairpersons of Public Accounts and Agriculture respectively.

For some of these white MPPs that left the IFP in the 1994-1999 period, the prior act of physically relocating to the IFP from apartheid-era parties was not enough to reinvent themselves as part of the emerging elite. Many did not become assimilated, but instead brought with them their previous political interests that could not be reproduced in an established political party and new political dispensation. While they chose the IFP primarily because of the party's federal principles, former anti-sanctions stance and a desire to belong to a black based political party in the new dispensation (discussed in Chapter 4), they were unprepared for the deeper symbolism of cultural difference they found there and ill-equipped to assimilate rather than to control. For many, their social background had not exposed them to the deeper symbolism of the opinions that they held. Most of these members left quickly and quietly in 1995, 1996 and 1997. Some remained until as late as 2002, by which time they had established for themselves social capital through their interaction with other elites in the legislature which enabled them to cross to another party and attempt to reinvent themselves again.

Hence, race in Kwazulu-Natal provides a feature through which the reproduction and circulation of an elite takes place simultaneously. The new state – by providing political competition for the first time – means that the elite organised around race has come to define it's significance in elite recruitment.

Gender composition

The Provincial Parliament of KwaZulu-Natal is overwhelmingly dominated by men. Of the total number of MPPs that have served in the provincial legislature over the ten year period from 1994 to 2004, my analysis of interviews show that 80.3% were men and 19.7% were women. This domination of male legislators in KwaZulu-Natal[21] is in keeping with patterns in other African states. In Senegal, Benin, Ghana and Kenya, more than 80% of the political elite are male (Barkan *et al*. 2004: 237-239). In Zambia, Zimbabwe, Angola, Botswana and Mozambique, 'post-independence cabinets have continued to be male dominated institutions, with only a sprinkling of women ministers' (Tordoff 1997: 102). In addition, the ratio of men to women in parliament also contrasts sharply with the gender ratio for the provincial population of KwaZulu-Natal. In 1996, for example, the population breakdown in KwaZulu-Natal by gender was 53.1% women and 46.9% men (Republic of South Africa 1996b) and in 2001 the provincial population was comprised of 53.22% women and 46.78% men (Republic of South Africa 2001b).

[21] In the national parliament, 30% of parliamentarians in 1999 were women and 70% were men.

The overwhelming domination of men in parliament is hardly surprising for three reasons. First, according to Bayart, the state comes to reflect the dominance of groups in society (Bayart 1993). Hence a patriarchical society will be replicated within the most basic processes of government – political recruitment. Second, political parties are the agents that 'replicate contested societal rankings of social groups … (and) … reconstruct and reproduces the structures of a patriarchal society in government' (Francis 2009b: 134). Third, KwaZulu-Natal's party political history is a gendered history. The turf battles between the IFP and ANC were part of a war predominantly between men. The leadership of the parties that fought those battles was overwhelmingly dominated by men. This is not to suggest that women were not part of those struggles. Rather, in the course of many struggles, substantive equality between men and women was subsumed to the cause of nationalism (Connell 1999: 189-206). Indeed in the political history of KwaZulu-Natal, masculinity and women's subordination became articulated through the politics of Zulu nationalism (Waetjen 2006). Even in the post-apartheid period, collective action for women is diffused by perceptions of a collective cultural identity (Francis 2009b: 134). Hence, one of the key characteristics of political elite formation in the post-apartheid period is the replication and reproduction of gendered hierarchies. This correlates with Bayart's claims that 'conflicts for influence within the nationalist movements before independence prepared the way for the construction of the postcolonial political order' (Bayart 1993: 221).

In KwaZulu-Natal women MPPs have overcome normative assumptions about their role in society and as their profiles of experience and education suggest, were, already an elite prior to the assumption of their parliamentary career. For example, women MPPs tend to be highly educated, professionally experienced with a range of skills, and already have performed service to a community in a variety of capacities before obtaining office.[22] Two factors distinguish parliamentary women from their male counterparts. First, analysis from interviews shows that in isolation, each individual characteristic possessed by a parliamentary woman is comparable to that possessed by a man, but the

[22] For example, MPP Usha Roopnarain (now Keerath) holds a PhD in Political Science and has a history of party service as a researcher. Eileen kaNkosi-Shandu possesses a Bachelor of Arts Honours Degree as well as a Diploma in Social Development from Canada, has substantial experience in grassroots development issues in co-operatives, served as IFP Development Officer for five years and principal of a school. MPP Fatima Nahara grew up in exile in Mozambique after her father fled the country in 1963, speaks fluent Portuguese and grew up among the ANC in exile. MPP Faith Gasa possesses a Bachelor of Arts Degree, has worked as a high school principal in more than five schools, serves as Life President of the Natal African Teachers Union and co-convenor for teacher training on post-apartheid curriculum development and is secretary of the Mehlwesizwe Education Trust.

combination of experiences that the majority of women individually possess is extensive. In sum, this may suggest that to become a parliamentarian, women must have a combination of qualities that together make them more remarkable than their male colleagues. This correlates with feminist studies of substantive and numerical representation in parliament in other parts of the world (cf. Phillips 1991; Childs 2001).

Second, almost all women MPPs have served in gender specific capacities or have shown concern with gender specific issues.[23] These include the occupation of senior offices within women's movements or in organisations that were formed to advance the concerns of women. To become a member of the parliamentary elite, women must have been seen to have actively represented the interests of women in other contexts. In fact, many also discussed their position on the party list as a result of gender specific patterns of affiliation. As such women MPPs acknowledged a responsibility to the women's sections – the IFP Women's Brigade and the ANC Women's League – of their respective parties that had, in some cases, directly nominated them for office, or supported their nominations.

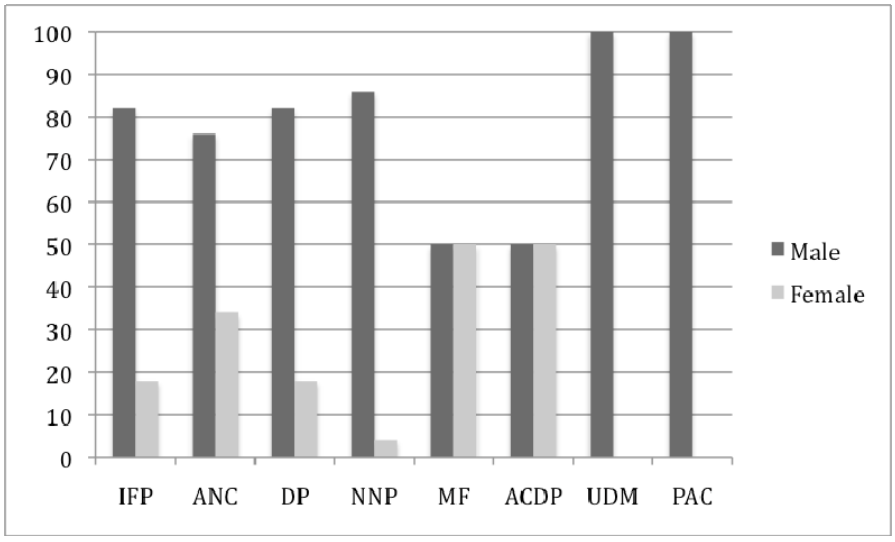
Gender in the period from 1994-2004 has remained a significant factor in elite formation as all political parties, with the exception of the minority parties (the MF and ACDP totalling a mere four MPPs) overwhelmingly recruit men to parliament. Graph 3.4 illustrates the percentage of MPPs by gender that have served in the provincial parliament at any point during the period 1994-2004.

Although more IFP MPPs have served in parliament, the party in which most women have served is the ANC. Even so, this constitutes less than 30% of MPPs. Notwithstanding the way that patriarchy continues to structure political elite formation, the disparity in gender representivity between men and women has decreased slightly since 1994.

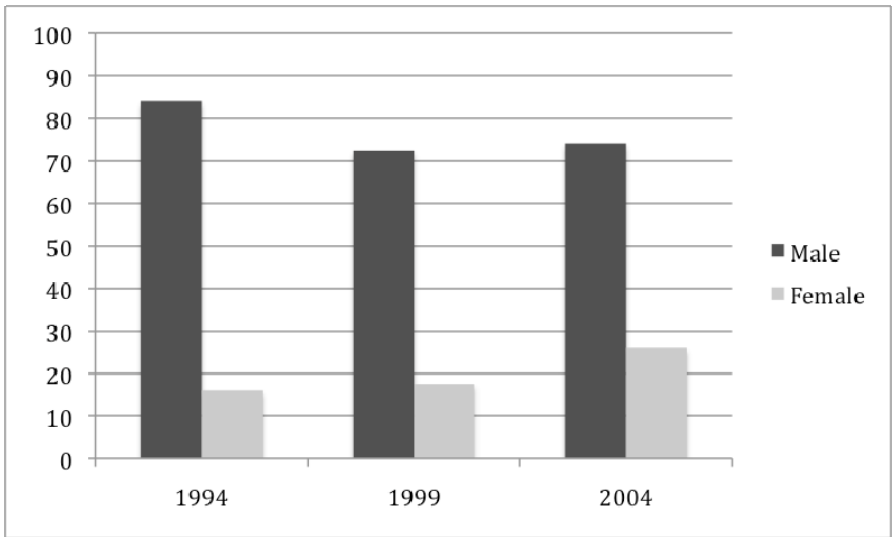
---

[23] For example, MPP Usha Roopnarain wrote her PhD thesis on 'Women in the Parliamentary Context'. MPP Faith Gasa has served as Chairperson of the IFP Women's Brigade, was co-chair of an ad hoc committee whose work resulted in the compulsory participation of women in the multi-party negotiations and was appointed to the steering committee of the Women's National Coalition to deliver a women's charter for inclusion in the constitution. She also worked with the Young Women's Christian Association and established workshops for women in assertiveness training and is a convenor of the Teenage Pregnancy and Child Abuse Concerned Committee in Northern KwaZulu-Natal. MPP Eileen kaNkosi-Shandu has served in the National Women in Agri-Business Co-operation and as Director of Weslyan Women International. Similar examples hold true for the majority of other women MPPs interviewed.

Graph 3.4 Percentage of MPPs by gender and party, 1994-2004



Graph 3.5 Time series of MPPs by gender, 1994-2004



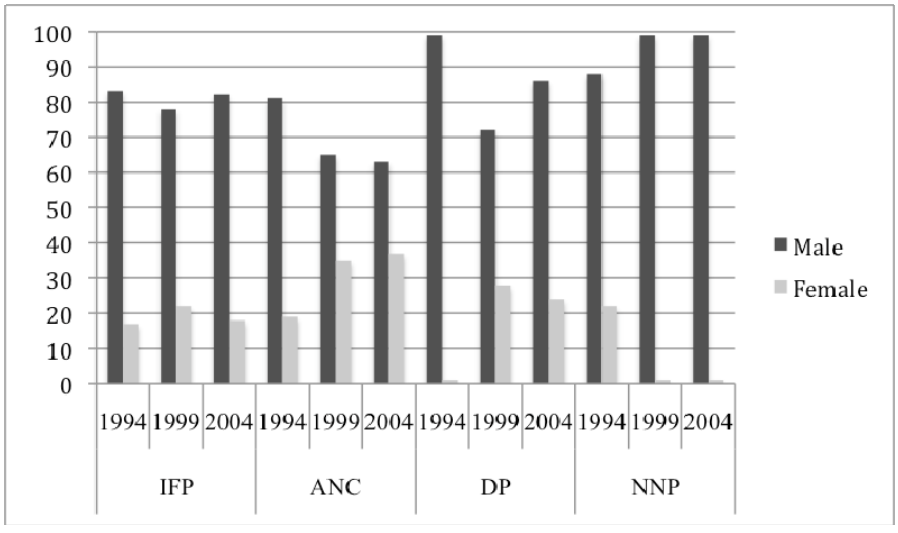
While almost 84% of MPPs were men in the first election in 1994, this decreased by 11.5% in the period immediately following the second election in June 1999 (see Graph 3.5). However, prior to the third term in 2004, this reversed slightly as the percentage of men rose to 73.75% of MPPs (see Graph 3.6).

The increase in women can primarily be attributed to the ANC, for three interlinked reasons. First, the finalisation of the South African constitution in December 1996 that prescribed equal rights for men and women gave renewed impetus to the ANC Women's League's (ANCWL) call for equality in the numerical representation of women. ANC women MPPs overwhelmingly stated when interviewed that the ANCWL provided support for them in their candidacies and a substantial proportion attributed their placing on the ANC parliamentary list to be a direct result of nominations by the ANCWL. However, we should be cautious about the impact of party women's wings on securing women's numerical representation. As Tordoff notes, 'women's wings were mostly founded as adjuncts of the main parties in the pre-independence period … In each section these women's sections have become the preserve of tradition-minded women loyal to the party leadership.' (Tordoff 1997: 103) Indeed, in South Africa the ANCWL supported then Deputy President Jacob Zuma during his trial for an alledged rape (from which he was aquitted) and nominated him for President of South Africa, rather than a woman candidate. Second, the ANC introduced a quota system after the 1994 elections where one in every three positions on the party list was to be occupied by a woman, a system increased to every one in two women in 2004. In structuring the opportunities of recruitment this guaranteed that a third of the ANC candidates in the legislature would be women from 1994-2004, increasing to gender parity from 2004 onwards. Indeed, the structure of opportunities is affected by the electoral system. In Africa, women have more chance of becoming a parliamentarian in a party list system of proportional representation. In his study of Benin, Senegal, Ghana and Kenya, Barkan *et al*. found that only in hybrid or proportional representation systems (such as Senegal) did the opportunities for the election of women increase (Barkan *et al*. 2004: 237-239). In constituency based electoral systems, women – who are subjected to the impact of patriarchal identities – do not vote for women. Third, in the second and third elections, the ANC increased its percentage of the vote which in turn provided the new women on the list with seats in parliament. As a result ANC women MPPs increased. Hence, changes in the relative strength of a political party can lead to the circulation into power of a new constituency if the processes of competition structure elite opportunities.

A nominal increase in the percentage of women MPPs in the IFP over the period in question, has not been the result of a concerted attempt to recruit more women. Rather, the greater percentage of women MPPs in 1999 in comparison

to April 1994 does not represent an increase in the actual number of women (see Graph 3.6). Instead, this reflects a loss of parliamentary seats in the second election and a subsequent reduction in the number of men MPPs from 34 to 27 while the same number of women (n=7) remained. The IFP more than any other party demonstrates through gender the interlinked matrix of local, provincial and national government. The most important level of government for the IFP is local government. In local government, the most important district municipality for the IFP – from where they receive an overwhelming majority of votes – is Zululand. Herewith, the most senior position of Mayor for the district municipality is occupied by a woman – Zanele Magwaza-Msibi. Msibi, in later elections was a powerful election speaker and in the 2009 became the candidate for Premier of the province for the IFP (the first woman candidate for any party). This example correlates with examples from other African states whereby 'certain women participated in the system of power and enjoyed its privileges' (Bayart 1993: 112) by being able to overcome rigid social constructions about gender. Often these examples are individual. Bayart provides the example of the Bamileke in which mother-chiefs were biologically women who were constructed socially as woman and man (*ibid*.). Certainly to be a leader – a role normally afforded to men (as a social construction) – one must be strong and powerful (another social construction). Certainly, Msibi is seen to be a "strong" woman whose strength of character and leadership is in keeping with these expectations in a leadership role.

Graph 3.6 Timeline of percentages of MPPs by gender, 1994-2004



When discussing gender-specific roles that women filled prior to entering parliament, women in the IFP were better able than other women interviewees to relate their gender-specific affiliations in tangible terms. IFP women detailed gender-specific developmental projects in which they were involved and roles they fulfilled in community, non-governmental and political settings. In contrast, ANC women typically described their gender-specific roles in terms of political mobilisation. These included, 'organising the women … (and) … going to meet with the women' (Pers. ANC Interview 71). In fact, ANC women's ability to mobilise to secure women in office correlates with the gender-specific experiences of "organising women" that they shared in their pre-parliamentary experiences. IFP women, conversely, did not possess the same level of ability to mobilise women into positions of power as did their ANC counterparts. Indeed, those that have experience in political mobilisation were senior members of the party. Such patterns may suggest, when compared with the number of women in parliament by party, that prior experience of gender-specific mobilisation is more conducive to securing a position in parliament than other gender-specific roles.

In contrast to other parties, the breakdown of figures by gender in the DP illustrates volatility in gender representivity (see Graph 3.6) although this may simply be a function of much smaller numbers. While the DP has attempted to broaden its racial profile, the gender profile of the party remains skewed. MPPs overwhelmingly stressed the importance of "merit" as contrasted with "representivity" and in comparison with women MPPs elsewhere, women in the DP appeared to be least concerned with gender as an organising factor. One MPP stated that she thought, 'women have a raw deal sometimes ... (but women must) ... stop whining, stop saying we're not empowered, stop saying we are discriminated against' (Pers. DP Interview 8). Perhaps what this illustrates is that such gender-neutral conceptualisations operate to centre men and contribute to their recruitment.

The most serious decline in gender representivity has occurred in the NNP whereby no women have served in parliament for the NNP since the June elections in 1999 (see Graph 3.6). Clearly, the concerns of party transformation did not include gender in the second election. Given the history of racial policy in this party it is hardly surprising that effecting a more numerically representative racial make-up overshadowed that of gender.

Overall, however, trends in elite circulation in parliament suggest that in all parties attention is paid to the numerical representation of women primarily at election time when the party lists are compiled. Mid-term replacements remain predominantly men, even in the ANC with the quota system. Of all seven mid-

term replacements between 1994-1999 in the ANC none were women.[24] In the period 1999 to 2003, mid-term replacements included three replaces and five defectors from other parties that led to a re-ordering of the party list. Of these, only two were women[25] which represents substantially fewer than the quota amount. Commitment to numerical gender representivity is not substantive. The process of making a mid-term replacement is a relatively low key affair in comparison to the highly visible list drawing process at election time. Hence, the cycle of elite renewal – as it pertains to gender – is only at election time. This may further suggest that the increase in the numerical representation of women has not translated into substantive representation as women have been unable to perform 'critical acts' (cf. Lovenduski 2001: 743-758; Bystydzienski 1992: 11-23),[26] that is to effect changes of further benefit to women representatives, except at election time. Hence, parties are seen to be promoting gender representation, but as a consequence of patriarchy, these women may serve, but they do not "act".

IFP and ANC women MPPs were critical of the overwhelming domination of men in senior parliamentary posts. These sentiments included, 'we are the other committee members not in key positions' (Pers. IFP Interview 99), 'in leadership women are not visible' (Pers. ANC Interview 71) and 'I told the Premier that the cabinet is a boys club' (Pers. ANC Interview 113). Indeed an examination of the most senior parliamentary posts reveals that only two women – IFP MPPs Faith Gasa and Eileen kaNkosi-Shandu – have served in cabinet out of a total of 30 women MPPs. While a quota system resulted in more women in parliament, glass ceilings restrict the seniority of women once there. Indeed, the very party that instituted a quota system – the ANC – failed to provide any women with an executive position prior to 2004, the first 10 years of democractic rule. The ANC occupied 40% of cabinet posts that, if the logic of the quota system is extended to the executive, should have been occupied by at least one woman MPP. This failure to place women in senior positions is in keeping with Tordoff's findings in Southern Africa – Zambia, Zimbabwe,

---

[24] For example, mid-term replacements between 1994 and 1999 included Walter Felgate, Sipho Gcabashe, Mbuso Khubeka, Mjabulise Madondo, Emmanuel Magubane, Senzo Mchunu and Bheki Mthembu.

[25] The three replaces were Lucky Gabela, George Sithole and Weziwe Thusi. The five defectors from other parties that led to a reordering of the party list were, Tim Jeebodh, Maurice Mackenzie, Sam Nxumalo, Belinda Scott & Mike Tarr. Of this total only Thusi and Scott are women.

[26] Critical mass theorists debate the potential impact of more women in parliament. Bystydzienski concludes that when women constitute 15% of parliamentarians they begin to have an impact. Lovenduski warns, however, that a critical mass may only begin to make a difference when women engage in critical acts.

Botswana, Mozambique and Angola – where democratic advances were not met by gender advances (Tordoff 1997: 102-105).

Notwithstanding their criticisms, many women reluctantly challenged the salience of gender in the allocation of portfolios. Interview findings suggest that there are two plausible explanations for this. First, as Waetjen demonstrates, gender structured not only nationalism but also nation-building (Waetjen 2006). The historicity of masculinity thus provides a continuity in the new democratic institutions. A second reason – related to the first – is that contested racial and cultural conceptions of representation set limits to gender discourse. The historicity of race provides a further continuity. These boundaries circumscribe the ability of women MPPs to conceptualise their concerns in unison and to articulate a shared position on them. More than twenty percent of women in the IFP and ANC provided examples of how women's concerns in parliamentary caucuses were overshadowed by a preoccupation among women with shared affinity with one's racial or cultural group. The examples that IFP women provided are particularly illuminating. One MPP stated,

> 'There was the Gender Commission inquiry ... (A male MPP and colleague) ... said to the Commission that there is no such thing as gender abuse in rural areas. The commission ruled that there was, so he called the commission "racist" ... Half the women in our party supported him' (Pers. IFP Interview 83).

In this instance, an ethnic and racial discourse of shared interests cut across that of gender. Loyalty to one's racial group was, in this instance, found to be salient and women MPPs were found to be less willing to criticise practices that may be seen as oppressive to them but that they perceive as associated with their own cultural or racial group. Hence, in this context, being a woman does not provide social capital.

Although the majority of women MPPs in the ANC were concerned to point out that it was only IFP women that would not challenge reinforced societal constructions of gender roles, one ANC MPP stated quite openly about her own party,

> 'The leadership is dominated by men. Gender structures leadership in key positions. Women are not in key positions of political leadership in the party and in government ... In our culture we are taught to respect men. We women form the majority of our membership but we elect men into leadership positions' (Pers. ANC Interview 71).

ANC women may be vocal in claims that their party is more supportive of women's concerns than its rivals and they may be able to organise around women's concerns. Their position among the parliamentary elite shows however that gender structures the positions that they hold. In fact, striking similarities are shown across the party divide. As an IFP woman stated, in discussing the

hierarchy within her party, 'traditional leaders come first, then ... men, then ... women and then the youth come last (Pers. IFP Interview 99).

A consequence of the salience of gender in structuring relationships is that some women have withdrawn from parliament or transferred their party loyalties elsewhere. One MPP stated that the gender stereotyping within her parliamentary party was a shock to her. Of a male colleague at her first caucus meeting she said,

> 'He was sat at the front and he literally pointed at me ... to get up from my seat and walk up to him. When I got there he picked up his glass ... and just said "water". He just expected me to get him water' (Pers. IFP Inteview 83).

While some women have acted to change the intimidatory and discriminatory circumstances in which they find themselves, the most common tactic among them has been by withdrawing allegiance.

The salience of gender as a characteristic of political elite formation in KwaZulu-Natal shows that the idea that there is a founding class of elites in countries undergoing a democratic transition is flawed. This idea is suggestive of a rupture where all things become new. Rather, transitions provide the opportunity structures for change through new democratic institutions, but continuities of hierarchies of identity and inequality often remain.

The age profile of the political elite

One of the most difficult concepts to understand in the African context is age. That is, the concept of age is often understood through other constructions of radicalism and conservatism. In the political violence between the IFP and ANC the participants to that conflict were often described as progressive youths pitted against conservative elders. Whereas in Africa the 'heroes of the new politics were indeed young … the leaders of the nationalist movement, the holders of positions of power … were often perceived as juniors' (Bayart 1993: 114). This correlates with the construction of other African organisations identifying themselves as youth movements in Nigeria, Senegal and Zanzibar (*ibid*.). Hence, the concept of age is both ideological and biological.

The provincial parliament of KwaZulu-Natal reflects significant variations in the biological age groups of MPPs. Although the youngest MPP was from the ANC and the oldest from the IFP, and IFP MPPs are on average older than their ANC counterparts, both parties show a diversity in age with both very young and very old candidates.[27]

---

[27] The youngest MPP on first entry to parliament was ANC representative Cyril Xaba, who entered the legislature in 1994 at age 27. The oldest was IFP representative Ibrahim Bawa who entered the legislature at age 79 in 1994. Although, the youngest candidate at first entry is from the ANC, so was one of the oldest – Ismail Meer who

However, in the ANC MPPs are getting younger. In the second election, fewer ANC MPPs were in the 50+ category and more were in the age group 30-50. This differs from examples in other African states where the average age of legislators is between 40-59 (Barkan 2004: 239). In the ANC, many of the older MPPs have moved out of parliament leaving room for a new generation of younger elites to emerge.[28] If, as Inglehart suggests, younger MPPs bring to public life a set of priorities and values that distinguishes them from their older counterparts (Inglehart 1977; Inglehart 1991; Abrahamson & Inglehart 1995), then a greater number of younger MPPs might result in changes in political style, public policy and the way in which elites interact with one another. The significance of this is that many of the older MPPs[29] were involved extensively in the struggles between the IFP and ANC, and made decisions that were to direct such struggles whereas there was more limited and less intense involvement in the decision-making of some of the younger MPPs, some of whom were foot soldiers.

In contrast, parliamentary seniority in the IFP is not guided by age. Young and old alike occupy senior positions. In fact, a number of younger and inexperienced MPPs were allocated portfolios of considerable responsibility without congruent experience. For example, since 1999 and at age 31, IFP MPP Mandla Malakoana served as Chairperson of the Portfolio Committee on Transport. His counterpart in the executive branch – Sibusiso Ndebele – was the most senior ANC member in the province. The appointment of Malakoana to this portfolio would indicate that the IFP were not concerned at the disjuncture in age and experience between him and Ndebele. In another case, on entering parliament in 1999, IFP MPP Nhlanhla Khubisa at age 36 was allocated the role of Chairperson of the Standing Committee on Constitutional Affairs. This had previously been a particularly contentious portfolio that saw the resignation of some very senior IFP members[30] and political infighting within the party and the legislature. While both MPPs were young in comparison to others, they also

---

entered parliament in 1994 at age 75 and was re-elected at age 80 in 1999. Although the oldest candidate to enter parliament was from the IFP, so was one of the youngest – Usha Roopnarain who became a parliamentarian at age 29 in 1999.

28 Those that are no longer provincial parliamentarians include, for example, Harry Gwala, Jacob Zuma, Felix Dlamini and Ismail Meer who were 73, 52, 56 and 75 when they first entered office.

29 There are some exceptions to this. For example, ANC MEC Dumisani Makhaye was just 39 when he first became an MPP in 1994, after a long history of party service for the ANC in various positions of considerable responsibility.

30 This includes, for example, IFP MPP Arthur Konigkramer whose letter of resignation submitted to the Provincial Standing Committee on Constitutional Affairs suggested that the IFP had lost faith in his ability to manage the portfolio.

possessed a high level of education that provided them with a greater ability to manage the difficult role that they faced. In fact, education rather than age is the key to understanding the concept of youth in IFP elite formation. The concept of relative seniority describes the process whereby the younger generation will eventually become occupiers of senior roles (Bayart 1993: 113). The criteria by which this will come about varies from context to context. In the KwaZulu-Natal examples, education was the catalyst for the jump to seniority. Education provided the ideological construct that allowed the young (without other characteristics conferring status) to be seen as sufficiently advanced to become elders. If reformers are more likely to be young and educated and serving for the first time (Barkan 2004: 235) then the trend in the IFP should lead to changes in the operation of power in the party and the legislature and in the relationship towards the ANC.

In contrast, in the ANC, youth might mean radical, but it does not mean educated (see discussion on education in this chapter). This ties in with Barkan's findings in the Senegalese parliament where the large number of younger candidates nominated were not overwhelmingly drawn from the highly educated. However, although Barkan claims this is much more likely to occur in Francophone Africa rather than Anglophone Africa, the case of the ANC in KwaZulu-Natal challenges this as age does not correlate with educational levels. Hence, following the analysis of Barkan to its logical conclusion, this might lead to an increasingly less capacitated legislature.

Patterns of regional identification among the political elite

Providing a profile of MPPs by regional identification has proved difficult, not least because the way in which the parties define their regions differs, but also because many MPPs spent significant portions of their life in various parts of the province, in other locations within the country and in exile abroad. In 2003, the province of KwaZulu-Natal was divided into the eleven district municipalities of Amajuba, Sisonke, Ilembe, Ugu, Umkhanyakude, Umzinyathi, Uthungulu, Zululand, Umgungundlovu, Uthukela and Ethekwini. For heuristic purposes, these district municipalities have been used in this study as units for the comparison of MPPs by regional identification.[31] These patterns provide indications of district representivity and urban-rural patterns of representivity in the IFP and the ANC and in the provincial legislature.

While MPPs come from all districts in the province, there was greater concentration of MPPs drawn from the two districts of eThekwini and uMgungundlovu together comprising 50% of all MPPs (see Table 3.1).

[31] In drawing calculations, each MPP was coded twice: Birth place and major geographical influence.

Table 3.1 Percentage of MPPs by district municipality and political party, 1994-2004

District municipality	Political party				
	ANC	DP	NNP	IFP	*Overall %*
Amajuba	2.0	4.6	-.-	3.8	*2.9*
Sisonke	-.-	-.-	-.-	3.8	*1.8*
iLembe	1.0	-.-	3.6	10.6	*5.4*
Ugu	4.1	9.1	14.3	6.1	*6.5*
uMkhanyakude	2.0	-.-	-.-	1.5	*1.8*
uMzinyathi	5.1	-.-	-.-	7.6	*5.4*
uThungulu	12.2	-.-	3.6	12.1	*10.5*
Zululand	-.-	-.-	3.6	12.9	*6.2*
eThekwini	42.9	45.4	32.1	18.9	*31.9*
uMgungundlovu	22.5	18.2	35.7	12.1	*18.1*
uThukela	2.0	9.1	-.-	6.1	*3.6*
Other	6.1	13.6	7.1	4.6	*5.8*

The district municipality of eThekwini incorporates the metropole and major port of Durban and the major urban African townships around Durban. Protests occurred there at incorporation into the KwaZulu homeland in the late 1970s and early 1980s and battles between the IFP and ANC were fought there in the 1980s and 1990s. eThekwini is a part of the ANC's former Southern Natal Region. In addition to these predominantly black townships, located in eThekwini are expansive peri-urban informal settlements that have mushroomed since the 1990s, affluent suburbs along the eastern seaboard and the ridge around the city and a large concentration of asian and white citizens. To the north of the district is Inanda, the former home to John Dube, the first president of the ANC, and the location of the mission that was to educate many elite members.

uMgungundlovu incorporates the urban centre of Pietermaritzburg, one of the two former provincial capitals in the province. Again the townships around the urban centre were the site of struggles against the apartheid state and home to the most radical of the ANC elite in the province, part of the ANC's former Midlands Region. In addition, uMgungundlovu incorporates peri-urban and rural communities in which there are traditional leadership structures as well as commercial farming ventures.

By comparison with the heavy concentrations of MPPs drawn from these two areas, the third largest concentration of MPPs comes from Uthungulu with

a mere 10.5% of MPPs (see Table 3.1), a district consisting of the major port of Richards Bay on the eastern seaboard as well as commercial farming ventures inland. In addition to densely populated towns in the east of the district, the central and western segments of Uthungulu consist of rural villages in which traditional leadership structures function. Uthungulu borders the Tugela River and includes sites of historical political importance. The territory that now comprises Uthungulu was formerly within the Zulu Kingdom and bordered the Colony of Natal from 1840. Districts such as Eshowe and Nkandla – the burial site of Cetshwayo (and the birth place of the now President of South Africa, Jacob Zuma) – are deeply symbolic within Zulu history.

Sharing this symbolism is Zululand, an entirely rural district in northern central KwaZulu-Natal, from which 6.2% of MPPs have been drawn (see Table 3.1). Encompassing Cetshwayo's capital at Ulundi and the legislative seat of the former KwaZulu Government, Mahlabatini homesteads of the Buthelezi clan and Nongoma, the current day royal homestead, the district of Zululand is firmly associated with the former Zulu Kingdom.

Umzinyathi, from which 5.8% of MPPs have been drawn (see Table 3.1), to the South West of Zululand and West of Uthungulu incorporates some of the historic battle sites of the Anglo-Zulu War. In the peri-urban towns in the south of the district is the site of the first ANC SDUs in what was their Northern Natal region.

ILembe district comprising 5.4% of MPPs (see Table 3.1), on the eastern seaboard and northern border of eThekwini, incorporates predominantly rural constituencies throughout the district, both subsistence and commercial farming and the seaside resort of Ballito. It is a site to which people from the eThekwini district were moved in the post-apartheid period to one of the largest low cost housing projects.

Ugu, to the South of eThekwini and on the eastern seaboard is predominantly rural, interspersed along the coastline with small towns. The 6.5% of MPPs drawn from this area (see Table 3.1) are either from deeply rural constituencies or the seaside resorts along the coast.

Those districts in which the least number of MPPs were concentrated include Sisonke in the far South West at 1.8%, Umkhanyakude in the far North East at 1.8%, Amajuba in the far North West at 2.9% and Uthukela in the far West at 3.6% (see Table 3.1). These districts share the characteristic of a geographical location on the outskirts of the province in which there are predominantly deeply rural constituencies. Umkhanyakude and the majority of the territory that is now Amajuba form, with Zululand and what is now Uthungulu and part of Umzinyathi, the land mass that was once the Zulu Kingdom. The remainder of the land mass that makes up the province was, from the mid 19th Century,

under the former control of the Colony of Natal. Hence, the core of MPPs are drawn from urban areas and the rural remains peripheral.

An examination of regional identification by political party shows that three political parties draw their political elite overwhelmingly from only two out of 11 districts and only the IFP is regionally heterogenous. As shown in Table 3.1, almost two thirds of ANC MPPs identify with the urban districts of eThekwini or uMgungundlovu, higher than the mean average concentration of MPPs from all parties.

Ethekwini and uMgungundlovu were formerly part of the ANC Southern Natal Region and ANC Midlands Region respectively, demonstrating continuity with regional party political strength in the pre-1994 period. Of the MPPs that identify with these two districts, the majority identify with an urban African township within them.[32] A high urban concentration of the elite around the metropolitan areas is in sharp contrast with the ANC in other provinces such as in the Eastern Cape such whereas the core constituents of the ANC are predominantly rural and the elite can be said to have strong rural roots. In the former Ciskei, the ANC's heartland the origin of even those in East London was rural. These constituents were 'strongly influenced by an indigenous rural culture and … maintained family links with the countryside' (Lodge 1983: 55). In KwaZulu-Natal, the ANC is an anomaly to this, overwhelmingly drawing its representatives from distinctly urban areas, with little ties to the rural. Again, this is in contrast to other African states where individuals can be said to straddle urban and rural spaces. The links to rural areas is a key feature of African society and most urban Africans maintain close social ties with rural areas. That this differs for the ANC political elite in KwaZulu-Natal is a direct feature of political party formation. First, the history of the ANC in KwaZulu-Natal is a history of nationalism that was distinctly urban – as in the majority of other African nationalist movements (Tordoff 1997). Second, the nationalist movement in KwaZulu-Natal in the 1980s and 1990s was opposed to the concept of chieftaincy, a key element in rural life. Third, the IFP with a better grasp of rural poverty and rural political culture were more equipped than their ANC counterparts to attract support and candidates.

In contrast, no ANC MPPs have been drawn from the two districts of Sisonke or Zululand and only negligible numbers of MPPs identify with the districts of iLembe, Amajuba, Umkhanyakude, uThukela and Ugu (see Table 3.1). Of these, they are predominantly MPPs that entered the legislature from

[32] For example, in eThekwini, MPP Cyril Xaba's identification is with Clermont, MPP Lydia Johnson with KwaMashu, now deceased MEC Dumisani Makhaye with Cato Manor and KwaMashu, MPP Lungi Gcabashe with KwaMashu, and MPPs Nhlanhla Ngidi and Meshack Radebe with Mpumulanga township.

1999 onwards.[33] This, however, is not to suggest that the ANC has become more regionally representative as the majority of newcomers in 1999 were still primarily concentrated in eThekwini and uMgungundlovu. In addition, many of the MPPs elected in the first election from outside these two districts did not survive into the second term.[34] Of the ANC MPPs drawn from outside the two districts of eThekwini and uMgungundlovu, most are still drawn from small pockets of urban locality within them.[35] Although these district municipalities are predominantly rural, the patterns of elite association within them show a failure in the ANC to draw an elite from the deeply rural constituencies and expand their influence beyond the limitations of the urban in any significant way. This is even more significant given that in 2001 only 45% of the provincial population lived in urban areas (Republic of South Africa 2001a: 23). Hence, not only is the ANC not typical or representative of the electorate in terms of the regions of KwaZulu-Natal there is evidence of self-segregation in recruitment patterns in the form of collective self-reproduction in the manner that Pareto suggests.

Although ANC MPPs located in eThekwini and uMgungundlovu frequently discussed one another in familiar local terms they often lacked knowledge of, and, association with, MPPs outside of these particular districts. For example, as one MPP stated three years into the second term,

> 'I was here with Ndebele this morning ... of course I could just phone Zuma. We were all from Southern Natal. We accommodate people from other areas too. There is that one guy from up north, Jeff Vilane. There is representivity' (Pers. ANC Interview 57).

Moreover, regional identification is congruent with seniority in position and this is where patterns of regional association become most interesting. With the exception of one MEC[36] all senior positions in the post 1999 period are held by MPPs associated with the eThekwini or uMgungundlovu districts.[37] However, there is more to seniority than this. Of the concentration of ANC MPPs with

---

[33] These include, for example, Jeff Vilane from Umkhanyakude or Mbuso Khubeka from Amajuba.

[34] For example MPP Mjabulise Madondo from the Umzinyathi district lost his seat in 1999 because he appeared too far down the party electoral list at position number 58. MPP Bheki Mthembu of Uthungulu was assassinated in July 1998 while working with IFP MPP Blessed Gwala on peace initiatives in the region.

[35] For example, Mildred Buthelezi is from Empangeni in Uthungulu, Mbuso Khubeka is of Newcastle in Amajuba and Senzo Mchunu from Empangeni Rail in Uthungulu.

[36] Mike Mabuyakhulu from Esikhawini in Uthungulu (the ANC's third largest geographical concentration).

[37] For example, MECs Dumisani Makhaye and Sibusiso Ndebele are associated with eThekwini and MEC Zweli Mkhize with uMgungundlovu. ANC Chief Whip Ina Cronje is also associated with uMgungundlovu.

patterns of association outside KwaZulu-Natal, the majority served the ANC in exile before returning to what became either eThekwini or uMgungundlovu.[38] All MPPs who served the ANC in exile and in prison on Robben Island have held positions of seniority in the legislature. One MPP articulated, in 2001, the divisions within the ANC on this basis. He said,

> 'The exiles are all the elite ... they are all cabinet ministers. Very few in the UDF were given any opportunities. They were even pressurised. Those who struggled inside were sidelined. People ... became a nobody all of a sudden. It was prisoners versus non-prisoners ... We call them the "when we weres" ... They wanted those in exile or in prison to take over ... The elite class ask "which prison? which country?" I am a nobody' (Pers. Interview 124).

In fact, in term of legislative appointments, popular MPPs who have limited exile or Robben Island affiliations, can appear to have been disadvantaged. For example, in 1999, ANC MPP Bheki Cele was voted in as number one candidate for the ANC by the ANC branches in the list drawing process. Yet in the final allocation of seats in 1999, Cele was allocated a role as Head of Committees in the legislature instead of a cabinet position. Cele's role was that of an administrative portfolio instead of a substantive one. First becoming involved in Lamontville student politics, Cele's experience of exile politics and prison was limited to six months military training in Angola and one year on Robben Island. His most active role was internally in the establishment of ANC structures within KwaZulu-Natal. Hence, within the ANC political elite one may draw a further complex social and political tapestry of privilege and self-reproduction, not on common material interests (as Mosca would posit), but on common hierarchies of political experiences that are made apparent through patterns of representivity.

The significance of historical factors in regional identification in KwaZulu-Natal must not be underestimated. Of 52[39] ANC MPPs that have served in the legislature, only 7 have any association with the territory that made up the former Zulu Kingdom after the formation of the Colony of Natal in 1840. Of these, some have worked closely with the IFP in peace building efforts. This is more than geography, representivity and self-reproduction of hierarchies of experiences. It connotes understanding and shared association patterns of respect. The most senior ANC MPP to have liased closely with the IFP was Jacob

---

[38] Nhlanhla Ngidi, for example, worked in Swaziland, Mozambique, Angola and Tanzania before returning, in 1991, to Mpumalanga township in what became eThekwini. Dumisani Makhaye was in the first group of eight MK soldiers to return to eThekwini in 1981 where he served as commander of the Natal Provincial Command.

[39] This figure includes the 7 MPPs who came into the legislature for other parties and crossed the floor to the ANC.

Zuma, ANC provincial leader in the first term of office and now South African President. Zuma's birthplace in rural Nkandla in Uthungulu, a place of historic political symbolism for Zulu royalty and lineage through his cousin Inkosi Vusumbango Zuma to the Amakhosi combined with his later rural lifestyle in Maphumulo to ensure that he had the capacity to relate to the most traditional of the IFP and they to him. Yet his ANC struggle credentials, later urban existence alongside his mother whose home was a shack in Cato Manor before forced removals, enabled him to locate himself centrally within the ANC urban heartland of Southern Natal, now eThekwini. In sum, Zuma combined a "true" Zulu lineage and identification with what became, in the post-1994 period, the dominant ANC region in KwaZulu-Natal. Since this was the province in which the relationships between the ANC and IFP were most acutely contested, this combination of characteristics went a long way to guarantee Zuma a central role in the ANC elite.

In comparison to the ANC a considerable proportion of DP MPPs are also drawn from eThekwini and uMgungundlovu (see Table 3.1), but are drawn from the more affluent white suburbs of Durban.[40] Even those that are not drawn from the white suburbs are predominantly urban based.[41]

No DP MPPs have been drawn from the six predominantly rural districts of Sisonke, iLembe, Umkhanyakude, Umzinyathi, Uthungulu or Zululand (see Table 3.1) whose land mass covers more than half the province. In fact, the only DP MPP with a significant rural identification is MEC Wilson Ngcobo from Mzumba, who is also the only black DP MPP and who was formerly employed by Mangosuthu Buthelezi, President of the IFP.

NNP patterns of representivity are comparable with the ANC and DP (see Table 3.1) as most MPPs are drawn from urban uMgungundlovu and eThekwini[42] and those that are not are drawn predominantly from urban areas.[43] There are two differences. First, there is almost parity in the proportion of MPPs drawn from eThekwini and uMgungundlovu. uMgundlovu incorporates Pietermaritzburg the site of the former Natal Provincial Council. Second, some MPPs

---

[40] For example, MPPs Belinda Scott and Margaret Ambler-Moore are drawn from the Berea, MPP Roger Burrows from Manor Gardens and MPP Johannes Krog from Durban North.

[41] For example, MPP Omie Singh was drawn from Phoenix township north of Durban and MPP Radley Keys from Pietermaritzburg.

[42] For example, MPPs Gordon Haygarth, Raj Morar and Cornelius Van Rooyen Botha are from the city of Durban. MPPs Brian Edwards, Danie Schutte and Valentino Volker are from the city of Pietermaritzburg

[43] For example both MPPs George Bartlett and Connie Galea from the Ugu district are both drawn from the town of Port Shepstone.

simultaneously identify with urban and rural areas.[44] This demonstrates a pattern of dislocation among black NNP MPPs that distinguishes them from their party colleagues and the salience of syncretic associations in elite formation. While their distinctly urban affiliations might liken them to incumbent NNP MPPs, it is their rural associations with the black population that make them attractive to the NNP. Attempts to broaden the party, rather than to reproduce an existing elite are the basis of this attraction.

The IFP is the only political party which draws its political elite from all eleven district municipalities demonstrating heterogeneity in regional representation and urban-rural patterns of affiliation (see Table 3.1). eThekwini and uMgungundlovu together account for less than a third of MPPs and more than a third of MPPs have been drawn from Zululand, Uthungulu and iLembe. Where districts account for less than 10% of MPPs, the concentration of IFP MPPs from them is still higher than the mean average for all political parties, except Ugu where it is relatively equal (see Table 3.1). Where the IFP shows less concentration than the mean average is in MPPs from "other" areas, illustrating a higher level of affiliation to the province and thus to local politics than is the case for other parties.

This diversity of IFP MPPs across the districts of the provinces indicates that the party has managed to forge an elite from beyond the rural areas of Zululand and surrounding areas.[45] For example, of the MPPs from eThekwini, the majority are associated with urban areas.[46] In other districts, however, a greater number of IFP MPPs are drawn from rural rather than urban areas.[47] Of the MPPs drawn from rural areas, they are not limited by either race, gender or traditional leadership status, but are themselves diverse groups of people.[48]

While this predominantly rural pattern is evident across the majority of districts, the IFP is unique among the parties in that MPPs drawn from urban and

---

[44] For example, MPP Sipho Mkhize associates with both urban Pietermaritzburg in uMgungundlovu and KwaMashu township in eThekwini as well as rural Nongoma in Zululand.

[45] This suggests that research which suggests that the party is merely rurally located is incorrect.

[46] These include, for example, MPP Nzameni Mthiyane from Umlazi township, MPP Kamal Panday from Westville, MPP Alexander Hamilton from Durban, Usha Roopnarain from Durban and MPP Mandla Malakoana from Pinetown

[47] For example, in Ugu district, MPP Inkosi Calalabakubo Khawula was from Umzumbe, MEC Narend Singh from rural Umkomaas, and MPP Ellis Vezi from rural Harding.

[48] For example, Henry Combrinck from Louwsburg in Zululand, a white Afrikaans speaking male, may be contrasted with Lissah Mtalane, a black, isiZulu speaking female from Eshowe in Uthungulu or with Inkosi Nyanga Ngubane, a traditional leader from Hlanganani in Sisonke.

peri-urban areas declare their bonds of affiliation to rural constituencies. For example, one IFP MPP from the city of Durban discussed her representation role as to 'represent the rural poor' (Pers. IFP Interview 131) notwithstanding that her own patterns of association are distinctly urban. Moreover, many IFP MPPs blended their urban and rural affiliations. Such blurred distinctions were found to be the result of two factors. They are mobility on the part of the individual and associations with peri-urban and peri-rural areas. For example, another IFP MPP discussed his own regional identity as, 'I represent the urban and rural poor, but they are not separated' (Pers. IFP Interview 60). In this particular case, the patterns of affiliations within his home community revealed a complex matrix of rural and urban affiliations. For example, the settlement of Lindelani[49] was created in the early 1980s on a portion of unoccupied land that fell under Ntuzuma, north of Durban. Most of the families that occupied Lindelani were tenants from KwaMashu (in which the UDF was dominant), Ntuzuma and Inanda, living in difficult conditions who then built informal shack homes on the new land with the assistance of the KwaZulu Government (dominated by the IFP). However, while these individuals had lived in those urban areas, many had been hostel dwellers in them who had been forcibly dislocated under apartheid laws or were in transit from rural areas in search of employment. So while immediate patterns of association were urban, this was supplementary to other affiliations and patterns of authority that were very much rural.

The complexity of urban and rural distinctions is perhaps most apparent in MPPs whose personal history might indicate a closer urban than rural affiliation but whose value system is distinctly rural. One such example is MPP Lauretta Ngcobo, who is educated to degree level, writes novels and spent the majority of her life in the PAC underground in exile in Swaziland, Tanzania and London. While in London she served as a teacher and then headmistress in the London inner city before returning to rural Ixopo as an IFP member. Yet, notwithstanding this personal history, MPP Ngcobo stressed in interviews the importance of traditional leadership, the centrality of rural poverty and patterns of traditional authority in the rural areas as being distinctly African. Further, the "African" is equated with the rural, and the "european" with the urban. Rural associations, in this case are central because of the perception that they embody the very African being, something that is deemed to be removed from the urban.

Regional identification in the IFP is not indicative of seniority in legislative position, as in the ANC. For example, all three IFP Premiers that served for consecutive periods in the legislature are identified with different regions, as are

[49] Lindelani may be translated as 'waiting for something to happen'.

the MPPs who fulfil senior legislative roles.[50] In addition, cabinet positions continue to show this diversity in appointments.[51] Hence, the IFP elite, in practising district heterogeneity in recruitment, representing a rural and urban base, acknowledging syncretic affiliations and drawing representatives from deeply rural spaces, is the only party in the legislature that link the periphery with the centre of power. This diversity means that the elite is more typical – in regional patterns – of the electorate than any other party and is more likely to show that diversity in attitudes and values. This is much more typical of an African political party (cf. Bayart 1993). In contrast, the ANC, DP and NNP with their heavy urban bias in the metropoles of the province and the dominance of two districts over the other nine, demonstrate more homogeneity – in regional patterns – and an element of self-reproduction. This dominance, in contrast with the IFP, does not link the rural periphery with the centre of power in any way. In fact, one consequence of this is that the ANC election campaigns in rural KwaZulu-Natal tend to be top-down affairs with large numbers of supporters bused in to election rallies and might also explain why in the 15 years that the ANC has been in power nationally there has been very little development of rural areas.

Family connections

An emerging pattern among MPPs in all parties is strong family ties to politics. Approximately 30% of MPPs have such ties. MPPs have relatives in the provincial legislature[52] and in national government.[53] By far the most extensive family institutional ties exist between MPPs and councillors at the local government level.[54] These symbolise the integration of the three spheres of political

---

[50] For example, of the Premiers, Frank Mdlalose is associated with Nqutu in Umzinyathi district, Ben Ngubane with Camperdown in uMgungundlovu and Lionel Mtshali with Utrecht in Amajuba. The chief whip in the legislature, Inksosi Gumede (now deceased) was from Ubombo in Umkhanyakude. The Speaker, in the first two terms, Blessed Gwala is from Uthungulu district.

[51] For example, Narend Singh MEC for Agriculture and then Education is from Umkomaas in Ugu district, Prince Gideon Zulu (now deceased) former MEC for Social Welfare was from Nongoma in Zululand, Celani Mtetwa who served as MEC for Public Works is from Msinga in Umzinyathi, MEC Inkosi Nyanga Ngubane is associated with Sisonke district and Peter Miller with eThekwini.

[52] For example, IFP MPPs Frank and Gideon Mdlalose are brothers, as are IFP MPPs Prince Gideon Zulu and Vincent Zulu. MF MPPs Amichand Rajbansi & Shireen Thakur are husband and wife.

[53] For example, former ANC MPP Jacob Zuma is the husband of Nkosazana Zuma, former minister of health and then minister of foreign affairs.

[54] These include MPP Walter Felgate whose wife Sue Felgate is an Ulundi councillor, deceased MPP Thomas Shabalala whose wife is a ward councillor in North Central

institutions in political parties in the province. Family connections within political parties are as important as such institutional linkages. These are extensive within the legislature.[55] They have also led to claims of nepotism. In 1998, a former council member accused MF MPP and party leader Amichand Rajbansi of nepotism after his 25 years of party service in council was cut short and he was replaced by Vimal Amichand Rajbansi, the MPPs son. He said, MPP Amichand Rajbansi 'is running a family business ... there is no democratic decision-making' (Bugwathie Persadh Jaglal in Seeliger 1998).

Some MPPs spoke openly of the salience of family connections in the development of their political career. One NNP MPP discussed his initial political involvement as a result of his mother-in-laws involvement with the former United Party who then asked him to stand as a candidate (Pers. NNP Interview 3). An ANC MPP described her political involvement as a result of her brother recruiting her (Pers. ANC Interview 71). An IFP MPP discussed her candidacy in the legislature as a gesture towards her family. She said, 'I often think it was in place of my husband. My husband held a position which would not allow him to be a representative' (Pers. IFP Interview 116).

The concept of the family plays a role in political action in KwaZulu-Natal. A dispute over office space between two brothers within the legislature emerged when Speaker Gideon Mdlalose informed his brother, and Premier, Frank Mdlalose that he would seek legal opinion if a larger office was not allocated to him (*Natal Mercury*, 16 Jan 2003). As Frank Mdlalose was the Provincial Premier, the situation appeared in the media as an IFP government crisis. Rather than a government crisis, this is an example of part of the fabric of political life in KwaZulu-Natal. The expectation that the success of one person, in a chain of others, would lead to their success and good fortune too is a feature of life in Africa. Conversely, if the success of one person is not shared this could be seen as shameful. It is a clear example of the networks of personal relationships that

---

local council, former MPP Inkosi Calalabakubo Khawula whose son is the Chairperson of Ugu Regional Council, MPP Roger Burrows whose wife Sue is a councillor in South Central local council, Wessel Nel whose wife is a councillor, MPP Danie Schutte whose wife Alphia is a Pietermaritzburg councillor, IFP MPP Mohamed Rehman whose son is a councillor and MF MPP Amichand Rajbansi whose son is a councillor.

55 For example, IFP MPP Inkosi Calalabakubo Khawula's son served as Chairperson of the Inkatha Youth Brigade. MPP Phillip Powell's wife Anthea served as an administrator for the IFP. IFP MPP Senzo Mfayela's father was a former member of the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly. ANC MPP Ina Cronje's husband Pierre was one of the former PFP members who met the ANC in exile prior to the liberation movement unbanning. ANC MPP Harry Gwala's daughter Lulu was a member of the ANC Women's League. ANC MPP Albertina Luthuli is the daughter of Albert Luthuli and NNP MPP Sipho Mkhize has many relatives in the IFP.

Bayart succinctly details in other post-colonial African states. 'This is a fabric of political relations … the private order is not separate from that of the state' (Bayart 1993: 160). Such personal relations and perceptions of what actions based upon them should comprise runs deeply. One IFP MPP was hauled over the coals at a National Council meeting after her husband, an IFP member who stood and lost in the local government elections, made remarks to the media. As she stated, 'they were about the new education minister when she was talking about witchcraft and the stories about the high-flying Premier when he was flying everywhere. My husband made naughty remarks' (Pers. IFP Interview 68). Whereas the MPP was quick to dismiss any consequences of her husbands actions, another MPP stated, 'her whip position was downgraded because of her husband' (Pers. IFP Interview 110). Hence, others in the chain are expected to assist each other's success.

Ancestral, kinship and lineage ties

Ancestral, kinship and lineage ties in KwaZulu-Natal provide bonds of solidarity among segments of the political elite and a basis upon which elites sometimes differentiated their interests from one another.

Nineteen (8%) of MPPs that have served in parliament are members of the Amakhosi, 18 from the IFP and 1 from the ANC. The disparity in numbers across the two parties is hardly surprising given the ANC's urban bias and that 'urban dwellers are de facto excluded from positions of power in the lineage' (Bayart 1993: 139). Their bonds of association tie them directly to traditional political institutions and patterns of authority at both the local level as district leaders and the provincial level as members of wider traditional political units. Such inherited status carries weight in the provincial government. Traditional leaders may claim status within local communities and conversely within broader political institutions as representatives of the local. Most importantly, however, traditional status serves to create a mutual awareness of difference between those with such prestige and those without it and structures patterns of respect in the interactions between the two.

Cutting across these recognised patterns of status are other significant lineage ties within the IFP. For some IFP MPPs, the significance of their lineage ties went beyond what appears in comparison the relative simplicity of the present day chieftaincy system. For them, the status of their lineage can be traced to the pre-1820s, to the great chieftaincies of the pre-Zulu kingdom that fought for the extension of political control, and out of which the Zulu chieftaincy emerged victorious under Shaka Zulu. The chieftaincies that survived the wars of the century became units within the state form (Guy 1994: 28). For these MPPs, it could be argued that their personal oral histories are both of the

Zulu state form and independent of it to an existence before that of Shaka. In Cetshwayo's time,

> 'the king ruled with the izikhulu – the great ones – of the kingdom ... The king with the izikhulu comprised the ibandla, the highest council of state, and without the izikhulu the king could make no decisions of national importance. The status of the izikhulu depended primarily on birth and they were seen as the living representatives of the dominant lineages of the chiefdoms of the kingdom' (Guy 1994: 29).

As such, political authority was vested in the collective decisions of the izikhulu and the political legitimacy of those decisions was based on their participation. The izikhulu were the descendents of the great pre-Shaka chieftaincies. They included, among others, the chieftaincies of the Biyela, Mdletshe, Mthethwa, Ntombela, Mdlalose and Mbatha – all of whom have descendents in the IFP. For a fraction of IFP MPPs in the provincial legislature, their surname links them directly to the great chieftaincies of the pre-Shaka kingdoms whose ancestors then directly participated in the political affairs of the Zulu Kingdom under Cetshwayo. Moreover, MPP and Prince, Gideon Zulu, is himself a direct descendant of the Zulu chieftaincy and royal family that emerged out of these battles.

MPPs in the IFP were found to be familiar with each others lineage ties and in some cases patterns of trust and recruitment were, in part, based upon these roots. As one MPP explained,

> 'Surnames are important ... In African politics we look to the background of a person. Who was his father? Who was his grandfather? If you just emerge as a mushroom you are not trusted. King Shaka taught us that we are all welcomed and accepted, but people are respected by stature' (Pers. IFP Interview 92).

The roles of fathers and grandfathers go beyond that of heroism to service for the Amakhosi. For example, although not of the Amakhosi, MPP Ziba Jiyane's father was the chief councillor to the tribal court at Nseleni, and thus performed a role of service to the traditional leaders that afforded him great respect. While such symbolic capital is found to be of great significance within the IFP, it is not alien to the ANC either.

Although rejecting the patterns of authority exercised by traditional leaders, at least 16 ANC MPPs were found to share with their IFP counterparts a mutual respect for kinship bonds based upon the past. And although such symbolic patterns of status were salient within the IFP, some ANC MPPs could relate significantly enough to them to re-direct the way in which cross-party elites began to develop relationships. As one IFP MPP stated about his ANC colleague, 'Mr Mthembu was a Zulu and Amazulu ... (He) is related to me. There is no way that I could hurt him because we are associated' (Pers IFP Interview 92). Such bonds were found to set boundaries around relationships.

In extending the notion of kinship to include indirect relationships based upon mutual recognition of ancestral ethnic ties, 'kinship responsibilities ... extend to new settings and to new occupations' (Chazan *et al*. 1988). So while, such ties may have been flimsy at best had MPPs not entered parliament, the institutional setting in which they are located provides the glue for the extension of such connections, and the expansion of responsibilities and obligations based upon them.

Bayart speaks of conservative modernisation and social revolution. Within these processes he claims that in African states the development of the modern state has marginalised the status of elderhood. The world of salaried employment, politics and business transcend lineage. Despite this, conservative modernisation enables certain aristocrats to remain in power as they forge agreements with other groups (Bayart 1993: 119-149). However, in KwaZulu-Natal, the key question is not whether Amakhosi are in power, but the way in which the patterns of culture associated with the system of traditional leadership permeate the relationships between elites – Amakhosi or not. First, the Amakhosi as a group are a-typical of the electorate, but more typically rural than urban MPPs. Second, one cannot point to an organised group based on common material interests, as Mosca might. However, the values associated with the political culture that sustains the hierarchy are shared in the legislature. Third, collective self re-production is less about collective recruitment to the legislature (Pareto), and even less about organised material interests (Mosca). Rather, the reproduction is of the *values* shared by both society and elites.

Shared value systems also explain why, as the ANC cast off its left wing, it received more votes in subsequent elections. Jacob Zuma, the embodiment of these value systems – linking both the urban and the rural through syncretic affiliations – is the key to the ANCs gaining ground. In 2009, many of the voters who chose the ANC over the IFP did so because they support the core values of the IFP – those values seen in the candidate for new ANC President, Jacob Zuma (Francis 2009a: 160).

Religious affiliations

More than 70% of MPPs claim to be religious, the majority Christian. Some pointed to the dignified manner in which parliamentary business is conducted and the use of prayer to open each parliamentary session as a testament to their religious convictions. MPPs are members of a wide variety of churches.[56] In some cases, religious affiliations brought individuals into close contact with

[56] These include the Dutch Reformed Church, Lutheran Church, Evangelical Lutheran Church, Catholic Church, Anglican Church, Methodist Church, German Lutheran Church, Presbyterian Church and the Full Gospel Charismatic Church.

politicians and, later, themselves into politics. MPP Walter Felgate, for example, balanced employment as a mining personnel manager with a role in the Christian Institute. The Christian Institute was a 'radical ecumenical organization which aimed to work for radical justice and against the NGK's perversion of Christian doctrine to serve Afrikaner political goals … Throughout its decade and a half of existence, the CI played a vital energizing role for reform-minded church leaders in all denominations … (and) … increasingly took the initiative in putting forward a theologically based critique of government race policies' (Karis & Gerhart 1997: 77-78).In attempting to improve mining conditions for black workers, Walter Felgate enlisted the support of IFP President, Mangosuthu Buthelezi. In the 1970s when the Christian Institute became a radical organisation, consultation between the ANC, the IFP and the Institute fostered a relationship that was later to lead to Walter Felgate's own political involvement.

Some MPPs' (in the IFP, DP, NNP, PAC and ACDP) religious convictions led them to become members of the clergy, a role that involved bridging the gaps between the educated and uneducated. Although some of the parents of ANC MPPs are clergy, a noted absence is that ANC MPPs are not. This is partly explained by exile and underground politics that removed individuals from the local context and limited their public role. The commitment to communism, for some, further added an atheist dimension to their social and political involvement. In other cases, some MPPs were found to have associated with religious organisations as a cover for their political work. ANC MPP Bheki Cele is one example. He was employed as a community worker in 1985 by Diakonia, an ecumenical Christian organisation with a pronounced anti-apartheid stance, to co-ordinate the activities of the anti-apartheid organisations in Lamontville. His employment was secured through the church of Reverend Xundu who guided the Joint Rent Action Committee (JORAC) in the rent boycotts of the 1980s (cf. *Daily News*, 9 October 1991: 21). This case shows how the boundaries between the social, political and religious were deeply intertwined during the struggle years. While such cases in the ANC began with social and political involvement that led to the search for a religious cover, in other parties, the political was an extension of religious and social involvement.

For some black MPPs, becoming a reverend or preacher was an extension of the educational background of those MPPs who had studied theology at university, a discipline that remained unrestricted during apartheid. For others, missionary schools that practised religious and humanistic education and preached character building, obedience and discipline directed students into a life as a teacher, preacher or both.[57] While salaries for ministers varied considerably,

[57] For example, PAC MPP Joe Mkhwanazi, for example, became both a lay preacher and teacher after completing his education.

some received a house and allowances for their children (cf. Kuper 1965: 96), a practice that made the profession particularly attractive. A third group of individuals combined their role as a traditional leader with that of a preacher, a practice that involved serving the spiritual and material needs of a community.[58] The boundaries of political, social and religious institutions overlapped and elites served as brokers for two societies in a variety of capacities. The fulfilment of dual roles was not limited to black MPPs. Some white MPPs combine their party political work with their religious commitments. For example, NNP MPP Cliff Matthee, a lay preacher in the Full Gospel Charismatic Church performed baptisms out of the NNP offices in Hillcrest (Pers. Obs), a practice that collapses the distinction between services provided as a NNP MPP and those as a clergyman.

The involvement of MPPs as preachers in the minority parties is extensive. Almost half of all MPPs that have served in the DP have also served as clergy[59]. In each case, their religious involvement was prior to their political involvement and they saw their departure into politics as an extension of the social role that they already fulfilled.

In fact, some parties profess to be founded upon Christian principles. This is so for the majority party, the IFP, whose commitment to the practices of traditional society, and principles of Christianity shows continuity with the past amakholwa – amakhosi relationships (discussed in chapter two). However, the links between politics and Christianity are not limited to parties that have a long history of political involvement. The ACDP, for example, was founded just ahead of the 1994 elections, as a party whose political and policy principles are based upon christian perspectives. An ACDP MPP discussed how religious involvement became political involvement,

> '... somebody came along to our church and told us about the ACDP, so I just started a little group in our home and from there it just grew, you know, very quickly. They realised that I had a talent for public speaking so they used me in the election campaign a lot in 1994 and from there it just sort of grew'(Pers. Interview 31).

Whereas religious involvement is a pre-requisite for ACDP MPPs, the benefits of priesthood for all individuals who desired a political career are also evident. Preaching provided individuals with a trusted public position of prestige, that linked the educated and uneducated, and in traditional societies, tra-

---

[58] MPP and MEC Celani Mtetwa, for example, served his community as Deputy-Inkosi, Reverend and member of the KLA, fulfilling at once, three positions of prestige.

[59] For example, MPP Margaret Ambler-Moore is a lay preacher, MPP Radley Keys trained in the priesthood and MPP and MEC Wilson Ngcobo is an ordained reverend.

ditional and western modes of thought. Their links to the local, directly positioned them to speak on behalf of constituents, while their position of status allowed their own voices to be heard in political circles. Herewith is an example of a political elite constructed out of multiple representation roles and responsibilities.

Educational background

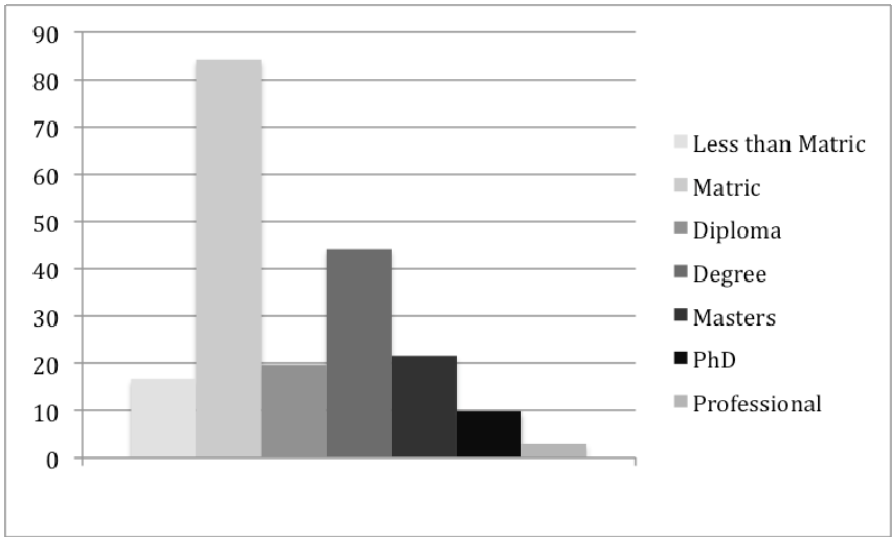
The educational level of members of assemblies in advanced democratic countries is generally high. Although this is recognised in the academic literature, the reasons and significance are tentative and contested. Some theorists claim that party members wish to choose their betters, whereas others suggest that education is one of the best predictors of activism (cf. Norris & Lovenduski 1997: 168). Mannheim locates the importance of the intelligentsia as a socially independent group capable of synthesizing different arguments to draw out the best for society (Mannheim 1936). However, this is not always the case. Intellectuals can be prejudiced and passive (Aron 1955) and in post-colonial subsaharan Africa, 'intellectual dissidence has not been the rule' (Bayart 1993: 188, cf. Bagayogo 1987: 107-110).

Nevertheless, in developing countries, the most important component of the political elite has emerged from those that are well educated (cf. Kerstiens 1966). In Kenya over 50% of parliamentary members are university graduates, and in Benin and Ghana this accounts for over 60% of parliamentary members (Barkan 2004: 239). As Kerstiens argues, 'this is not surprising considering the fact that, given the high rate of illiteracy (in developing countries), the few with education are practically predestined to be looked upon as ... future leaders (Kerstiens 1966: 12). In KwaZulu-Natal MPPs vary by educational level – at one end of the spectrum there are MPPs with PhDs and at the other there are MPPs with little or no formal qualifications.[60] Graph 3.7 shows the percentage of MPPs by educational qualification that have served in the provincial legislature at any point during the ten year period from 1994-2004.

---

[60] The classification, by educational background, of MPPs in KwaZulu-Natal has, however, proved difficult because of the reluctance of some MPPs to discuss their educational level and qualifications. In the case of education, 103 MPPs were classified out of a total of 152. These MPPs are drawn from the IFP, ANC, DP, NNP and UDM, although the majority are ANC. In addition, these MPPs are predominantly black, although some white MPPs are also amongst those not classified. One might logically assume that in many cases the level of education among those not classified might be substantially lower than the average. The degrees of MBA and MBChB have been counted as Masters level qualifications. Professional qualifications include CTA national examinations for chartered accountants.

Graph 3.7 Percentage of MPPs by educational qualification held



Of the 16.7% of MPPs who did not matriculate from high school, the overwhelming majority are more than 50 years of age and are located in the IFP, with some ANC exceptions. However, one third of MPPs were reluctant to discuss their precise educational qualifications. Given that most were willing to talk about the reasons why they did not go to university, it is reasonable to assume that an additional one third of MPPs have qualifications that are below the average. Although these MPPs were from the four largest parties, the majority were ANC. Together with those MPPs who did not continue their education after matriculating from high school, their educational opportunities were limited by two factors. First, a lack of financial resources precluded some MPPs from finishing school. In most of these cases, the individual was the first born child, given the responsibility of financing the education of siblings by leaving school early to find employment and contributing to the household income. Of these MPPs, many discussed their working class background as children of domestic workers, farm workers or unemployed parents. The majority of these MPPs were IFP.

The second factor that limited the educational aspirations of these MPPs was politics. This occurred in two ways. First, many MPPs discussed their involvement in politics as a choice between deepening their commitment to the liberation struggle and continuing with education. This was particularly so of veteran ANC MPPs who served in Umkhonto we Sizwe. One ANC MPP, for example, discussed his limited educational level in moral terms. He said,

> 'As a member of the underground I was spreading propaganda, recruiting and conscientising until 1976 ... I had a choice to go to school or join MK. I had recruited so many for MK that to go to school would have been a betrayal. Besides, in the struggle you do so many heroic things because you think your freedom will come tomorrow ... But I could challenge anything in the movement because my background could not be challenged. You could not accuse me of betrayal' (Pers. ANC Interview 134).

While a lack of educational experience might be seen as a disadvantage in a parliamentary setting where practical questions of administration are the norm, in this case the sacrifice of education for politics has resulted in political advantage. Similarly, another ANC MPP, whose schooling was disrupted as a result of her parents fleeing South Africa for exile gained a footing in the movement in Mozambique (Pers. ANC Interview 113). In such cases, the benefits of political involvement in exile outweighed the advantages of an education in South Africa.

Second, a number of MPPs in their thirties and forties from both the IFP and ANC were the political products of educational boycotts. Expelled from educational institutions in the 1970s and 1980s, these MPPs completed their schooling and were later expelled from institutions of higher learning prior to attaining the advanced qualification for which they were admitted.[61] These MPPs were not involved in boycotts over the normative reasons for, or quality of, the "bantu" education system per se, but rather the individual material conditions that they suffered while participating in the system.

A significant proportion of MPPs were found to have completed part of their education at mission based schools where the quality of education was perhaps better than state schools. As such, they were already an elite of sorts.[62] This is comparable to other African examples. In Rwanda, for example, a Catholic mission education provided a hutu counter-elite to the dominant Tutsi (Bayart 1993: 122). Although parallelling the amakholwa of the 1920s, for the most

---

[61] For example, ANC MPP Bheki Cele was expelled from Madadeni Teacher Training College for voicing his discontent at college conditions. IFP MPP Senzo Mfayela was expelled from Fort Hare University as a result of his involvement in boycotts over low quality food and lack of electricity.

[62] For example, the first IFP Premier Frank Mdlalose attended St. Francis Roman Catholic Mission School in Mariannhill, as did second IFP Premier, Ben Ngubane. IFP MPP and former Education MEC Eileen kaNkosi-Shandu attended Inanda Seminary. ANC Provincial leader and former MEC Sibusiso Ndebele attended the school at which his father was a Lutheran priest. ANC MPP Nhlanhla Ngidi attended Adams, a popular mission school at which a number of ANC MPPs and the only PAC MPP, Joe Mkhwanazi were educated. Adams College provided students with an egalitarian, Christian education in a racially shared space. In 1956 Adams College was closed down by the Apartheid government and Amanzimtoti Zulu Training School, a government run institution, was created in its place.

part, these IFP and ANC MPPs, who were mission educated and continued with further education, are the *children* of what was South Africa's black middle classes. They are the sons and daughters of clergy, civil servants, clerks, administrators, teachers and chiefs.[63] Hence pre-existing hierarchies tend to reproduction. While a cluster of elites have emerged from the poorest of the poor in South Africa, so did many whose background is distinctly middle class.

Educational background has become more important in political elite formation over the two terms of office (but not for the same reasons in all parties) and is a contributing factor to both recruitment and seniority in the legislature. In a number of cases, MPPs were found to be completing further qualifications part-time while acting as representatives in parliament. Moreover, in the case of ANC MPPs, the party is paying the university fees of such MPPs.[64] In such cases both MPPs and the party recognise that practical questions of administration are fundamentally different to the demands of party work that necessitate the mobilisation of constituencies and entail the establishment of community rooted political loyalties.

The significance of educational background in elite formation is most evident in the circulation of IFP MPPs (see Graph 3.8). The new MPPs in general were better educated than the incumbents from the first term, with more MPPs possessing advanced qualifications. In contrast to the first term, none of the new intake in the second term had attained less than a high school matriculation. In addition, almost all of the new intake possessed a degree or diploma, the number of postgraduate qualifications was higher and some MPPs possessed doctorates. In fact, this trend began in the IFP in 1996, mid-way through the first term of office and coincided with the racial divide discussed earlier. Many of these intellectuals were not part of the frontline struggles of the 1970s and 1980s. Instead, a number were educated outside South Africa in America and Canada or employed during this period in education or development related work.[65] The significance of educational background is illustrated in the following quotation:

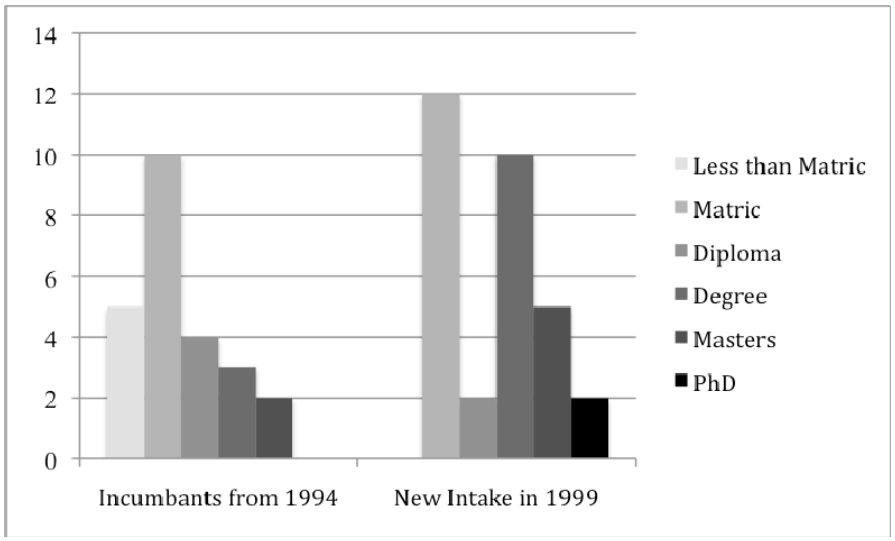
---

[63] For example ANC MPP and MEC Sibusiso Ndebele is the son of a Lutheran priest. IFP MPP Faith Gasa is the adopted daughter of a Presbyterian Minister and his wife, both of whom are teachers.

[64] One such case is ANC MPP Cyril Xaba who is studying for a Diploma in Economic Principles at the University of Natal, for which the ANC is paying, while serving as Chairperson of the Parliamentary Portfolio Committee on Finance in the legislature.

[65] IFP MPP Ziba Jiyane, for example, departed overseas in 1978 and completed a BA in 1987 at the University of California, an MA in 1988, M.Phil in 1991 and doctorate in 1992 at Yale University in the USA. MPP Eileen kaNkosi-Shandu after graduating with a Diploma from the Coady Institute in Canada was employed in development work on Draai-on-Trust Farm in Louwsburg before working in the

Graph 3.8 Comparison of incumbent and new IFP MPPs in 1999



> 'We are using the elite to bring to the outside world that which they don't understand. They are not sophisticated – fifty to sixty percent rural people – but they are committed. ... So we (the IFP) opened up and we brought in skills. We (the new MPPs) were graduates only – Bhengu, Jiyane etc – a black elite who had grown up in the historical tradition of the Zulu and the party. There were technological things that we (the IFP) couldn't do – computer skills, analysing reports etc ... So everyone who landed here came because of this. It was the spirit of the time ... We have become good at fundraising because we have been assisted. By and large they came with things they could sell as a commodity' (Pers IFP Interview 99).

Examples of this perspective can be found throughout history in other parts of Africa. For example in Nigeria, 'particular attention was paid to training a new elite capable of competing on equal terms … in its command of Western bureaucratic principles' (Bayart 1993: 127). Skills thus become a commodity in elite formation. While some of the highly educated IFP MPPs departed from the party (in the first term), they were replaced by equally qualified new MPPs in greater numbers, many of which had grown up within the traditions of the IFP and were thus organic to the party, a trajectory that continued. In 2009, for example, more than 20% of the IFP candidates in the top 30 places on the electoral list had a PhD. This is in contrast to assertions in Piper's thesis that

---

IFP's development office. MPP Nhlanhla Khubisa, who attained a doctorate, was lecturing as a Professor of Education at the University of Zululand prior to becoming an MPP in 1999.

'Inkatha was struggling to attract young, ambitious and talented black people, relying on defectors from other parties' (Piper 1999: 89).[66] Although the new MPPs in the second term are highly educated, incumbent MPPs that have proved themselves in other areas co-exist with them in parliament. In this way, power has not been completely closed off from other social groups, although it has been re-directed to reflect the necessities of governance. The practive of government demands a level of education, and as such institutions contribute to reproduction of the educated.

In the ANC, the concept of the intellectual elite is also found to be of significant importance, yet does not necessarily translate into recruitment. Some MPPs expressed discontent at recruitment practices in the first election in what they saw as the exclusion of uneducated individuals from parliament. As one MPP argued, 'people like S'bu Ndebele emerged after 1990, we had never heard of them before! A new class came in to take over.' (Pers. Interview 124). Many ANC MPPs who have not had the benefits of sustained formal education strongly feel a sense of disqualification from opportunities for advancement. Notwithstanding that they possess no formal educational qualifications, some MPPs have successfully attempted to reinvent themselves as part of an intellectual elite. With the exception of Jacob Zuma (discussed earlier), the only ANC cabinet minister that does not have a strong educational background is Dumisani Makhaye. Yet Dumisani Makhaye's frequent public statements and letters to the media and within party circles on a variety of topics expressed in pugnacious africanist and socialist discourse provided him with access to elite circles of power. The ability to frame present intellectual debates within the language of the past, and to continue to engage with such debates gave him a high public and party profile. In contrast to the IFP, however, while education might provide the ANC access to some of the most senior posts, it does not seem to have an impact in overall recruitment to the legislature. While some of the most senior in the legislature are well educated, they co-exist with other senior and many less senior MPPs with no formal educational qualifications.

Educational background has also provided a basis for social networks in parties and in parliament in KwaZulu-Natal. In post-colonial African countries there is a sense of familiarity and an intimacy among the political elite: 'reciprocal assimilation of the elite … occurs in educational channels' (Bayart 1993:

---

[66] Piper asserts that 'the IFP has struggled with a lack of direction since 1994, exacerbated by … its inability to attract young, bright, black leadership …' (Piper 1999: 203). However, these assertions rely upon interviews with only 11 IFP members at a time when the struggle for the heart and soul of the party had taken on a racial discourse. Of those interviewed, the overwhelming majority were white (n=8), and only 2 were black. Of black members interviewed, one did not complete school and the other was educated and was organic to the IFP.

159). This is borned out in KwaZulu-Natal as a cluster of the elite members that have served in parliament since 1994 knew one another or individuals who became significant political figures at school or at university. ANC MPP Ismail Meer, for example, became a friend of Nelson Mandela while studying law at the University of Witwatersrand. The majority of individuals who knew one another either attended the University of Fort Hare or the University of Zululand. In some cases, networks have provided a basis upon which elites have been provided with a first step towards a parliamentary career. For example, one IFP MPP discussed her move from the PAC to the IFP in these terms. She said,

> 'When we got into difficulties because of the turmoil in the PAC, we slowly drifted to the IFP because we had known Dr. Buthelezi for a long time, socially through my husband as well as at Fort Hare. Dr. Buthelezi and I were students together' (Pers. IFP Interview 116).

While such indirect networks hold true for some MPPs, others were directly recruited while they were students. For example, MPP Phillip Powell became involved in the IFP through an MPP he met as a student at the University of Natal. MPP Blessed Gwala, was initiated into the IFP through MPP Ziba Jiyane who involved him while they were school age students together. In other cases, it appears that the institution to which some MPPs were affiliated while students has provided a pattern of association that has resulted in relationships of trust. For example one ANC MPP discussed his educational experience at Adams as, 'this was the old missionary establishment where prominent people who went had included Joshua Nkomo, Nkosazana Zuma ...' (Pers. ANC Interview 87). Of course, it was anticipated that such an establishment would produce a particular type of graduate. Trust in the institution provided the basis for advantages among graduates from it.

Although the educational patterns among white MPPs differ considerably to other racial groups they have still provided a basis upon which political selection was made. One MPP described his choice to exclude himself from a candidacy within the DP. This choice was based upon his perceptions of the networks that functioned and were grounded in educational experiences that produced a particular kind of politician. He said,

> 'The DP was an elitist party from way back and I couldn't reconcile what they were saying with their structures on the ground. I didn't go to private school in Natal and I didn't move with the old school boys and I found a lot of the old "progs" that way inclined. They had been to Hilton[67] and they had a lot of ideas, but when it comes down to grass roots problems they were above the clouds' (Pers. NNP Interview 25).

---

[67] An expensive private school.

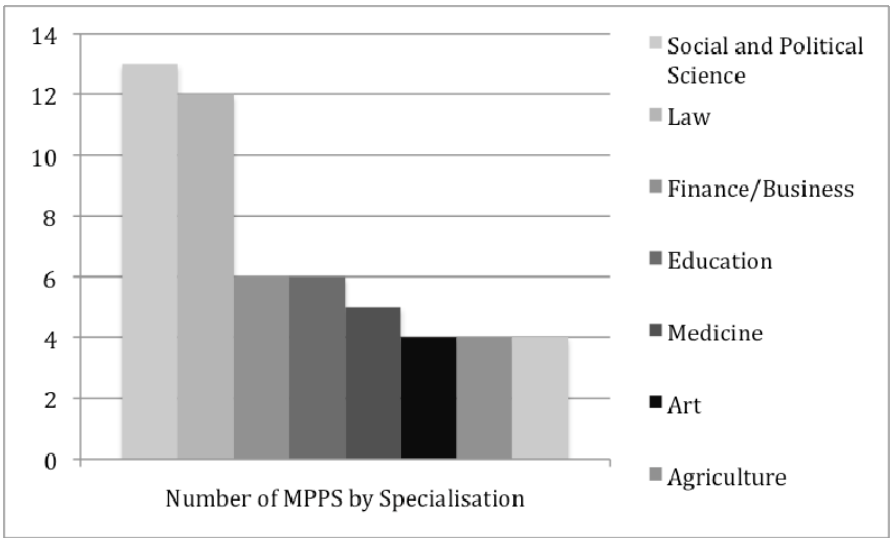
So while shared educational experiences among the political elite contributed in some cases to social capital, in other cases such patterns of association resulted in conscious exclusion.

In Africa, the transitional period from an authoritarian regime to a democratic one results in a 'passive revolution' (Bayart 1993: 181). This synthesises the rise of the educated into power (*ibid*.), a process of social upheaval in which the educated take over from the chiefs (*ibid*.: 123). In Africa, as in parts of Latin America and Eastern Europe compromise and accommodation has characterised the passive revolution between the educated and other groups, resulting in a Bayart's conservative modernisation. This results 'less in the circulation than in the fusion of elites, in other words an amalgam of the two elements' (Michels 1971: 131). In KwaZulu-Natal this is more complicated, because different forms of compromise and exclusion are present in the different parties that make up the legislature. In the IFP many groups co-exist including Amakhosi, educated, professional and non-educated. This is nowhere more apparent than in the relationships between the Amakhosi and the educated elite which is charaterised by both fusion (most MPPs who are chiefs are also educated) and in alliance (the educated act on behalf of the chieftaincy as a consequence of political culture) and in co-existence (chiefs and educated co-exist independently). This is in contrast to the ANC, which is charaterised by fracture, alliance and co-optation. The struggle movement, as in countries with other nationalist-socialist struggles, attacked traditional sources of power such as the chieftaincy and then sidelined the institution of traditional leadership at national level through legislation. The first term in the province is characterised by the absorbtion of intellectuals into the legislature and the gradual co-optation of populist uneducated elites that co-exist. So whereas the educated become 'brokers of the modern state' (Bayart 1993: 136) it is through a combination of fusion, alliance, co-optation and fracture that simultaneously occurs and it is not at the expense of other social groups.

In office, the necessities of governance somewhat condition the educational choices of the political elite. This can be seen in the disciplinary specialisations which, over the first 10 years changed and indicate increasing homogeneity.

As illustrated in Graph 3.9, approximately twice as many MPPs studied subjects in the social and political sciences and in law than any other subject. Although MPPs from the DP have been varied in their educational specialisations, in the NNP there has been a concentration of white MPPs in finance related disciplines and accountancy. However, black MPPs in the NNP have focused on theology and labour relations. In the IFP, there has been a concentration of MPPs in the specialisations of social and political sciences, medicine, education and agriculture. These concentrations have remained relatively constant throughout the two terms of this study.

Graph 3.9 Number of graduate MPPs by specialisation



In the ANC during the first term, there was a predominance of law majors among MPPs.[68] This correlates with patterns in other transitional systems. As 'the functional characteristics of the practice of law ... and of legislative roles are generally similar: Both involve advocacy, bargaining, compromise, and a predisposition towards the use of established and agreed-upon procedures in resolving differences of opinion. It seems reasonable to suggest that legal training and legislative careers exert mutual and reciprocal attraction ...' (Welsh 1979: 83-84). However, this concentration in law has been on the decline in KwaZulu-Natal. Almost all ANC MPPs with specialisation in law exited from parliament at the end of the first term[69] and many more ANC MPPs entered parliament with diplomas rather than degrees.

In the diploma specialisations,[70] there is a slightly higher concentration of MPPs in nursing and education than other subjects (see Graph 3.10). By and large, ANC MPPs are found to be concentrated in nursing, education and community development related subjects. However, over the first term of office, ANC MPPs that had completed diplomas were predominantly based in teach-

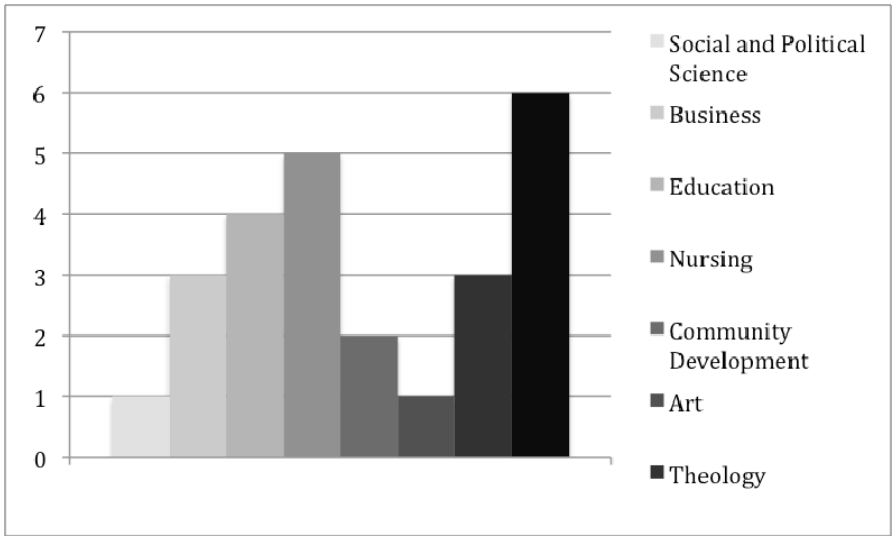
[68] These included, for example, MPP Ina Cronje, MPP John Jeffrey, Mjabulise Madondo, MPP Senzo Mchunu, MPP Ismail Meer and MPP Nhlanhla Ngidi.

[69] See Chapter 5 for a discussion of political elite circulation and the destination of MPPs who left the legislature at the end of the first term.

[70] The graph is limited by the number of ANC MPPs who chose to discuss their educational background.

ing. In the second term there has been a gradual shift away from teaching into community related subjects and nursing. This concentration of ANC MPPs in diploma specialisations correlates with IFP MPPs in degree specialisations. One might therefore argue that the elites in the two dominant parties have become slightly more homogenous in their educational specialisations over the two terms of office as their focus upon developmentally related disciplines is clearer in the second term and the initial ANC emphasis on procedural related disciplines has declined. This is hardly surprising. South Africa is a developing country and the practicalities of governance demands creative long-term thinking about a range of development alternatives and not simply an ability to make laws and read legislation. Hence, the necessities of public policy in developing countries might structure the types of specialisations that elites, interested in a political career, might choose prior to politics.

Graph 3.10 MPPs by post-high school diploma specialisation



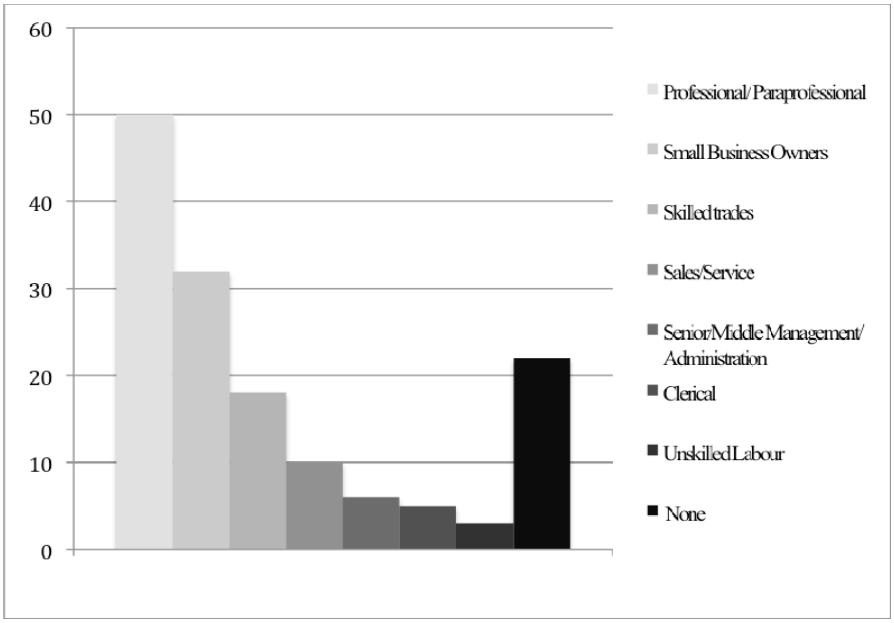
Occupational background

In the contemporary African state, social fluidity 'renders clear identification of classes particularly difficult' (Forrest 1987: 69; cf. Bayart 1979). Indeed 'the multi-dimensional nature of social stratification systems south of the Sahara is original' (Bayart 1993: 104) and 'the postcolonial state also lacks a clear class structure' (*ibid*.: 59). While the heterogeneity of the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal confirms this, occupational class may be less difficult to locate. In the

KwaZulu-Natal provincial legislature, MPPs are drawn from a wide range of occupational classes which includes professionals, senior and middle management, small business owners, paraprofessionals, technical and skilled trades, unskilled labourers and, sales, service, administrative and clerical occupations.[71]

As shown in Graph 3.11, one third of the political elite is from the professional or paraprofessional classes (doctors, attorneys, accountants, teachers, nurses, journalists, social workers, academics, and other forms of researchers). These figures are similar to those found by Barkan in Benin and Ghana (Barkan 2004: 240) Almost one fifth of MPPs are small business owners, and the third largest group of MPPs consists of individuals who have no non-political occupation and have been employed only as party workers, politicians, trade unionists, civil servants or amakhosi (Graph 3.11). MPPs drawn from skilled trades include farmers, mechanics and a dress designer. Of these, almost 39% exited from parliament after the first term which shows a narrowing of occupations

Graph 3.11 MPPs by occupational class



[71] The graph has been constructed primarily from information gathered during 116 of the personal interviews of MPPs. The 36 MPPs who are not included are not party specific and either primarily declined to discuss their professional background or are deceased. Some MPPs have been listed in more than one category due to the performance of more than one occupation.

that, in accordance with other legislative research, legislatures are increasingly drawn from particular segments of society, to the exclusion of other groups. In administrators and clerical occupations (Graph 3.11). Of this diverse group, 37.5% also exited parliament after the first term. This would appear to confirm from which elites are drawn. This is reinforced by the fact that only 15.8% of the elite have been drawn from the managerial classes, sales and service, elite theoretical perspectives, this is an indication of the professionalisation of politics (Herzog 1975). However, an increasing homogeneity in occupational class is offset by heterogeneity in other areas.

There is also continuity in an elite drawn from the professional and paraprofessional classes. In comparison to the choices of profession made by the African elite from 1850 to 1930, provincial MPPs in this study show a measure of continuity. Kuper notes that historically the elite members were teachers, lawyers, doctors, journalists and religious ministers. The black political elite is drawn from the professions of teaching, law, medicine, journalism, academia, nursing and social work, representing an expansion of the professional background of the elite (Kuper 1965: 73-80). However, it is not intended to suggest that this demonstrates a continuous pattern of professional choice since Kuper's study. Certainly, racially restrictive policies limited the professional choices of the black elite. Kuper notes that 'the combination of segregation, discrimination and poverty ... barred the progress of the African' (*ibid*.: 78) elite. However, to qualify this he states that, 'the main growth (of the African elite) coincides with the years after the second world war, when the policy of apartheid was being applied most systematically and extensively' (*ibid*.: 77). Of course Kuper drew his conclusions in 1965 and hence the study does not examine the subsequent expansion of the elite members in the later years, nor removal of restrictions in their professional choices. By contrast, the white political elite drawn from the professional and paraprofessional classes are predominantly accountants and lawyers. This is in accordance with the predominant occupations of parliamentarians in western democracies, drawn from the "chattering classes", and occupations which leave room for flexible careers.

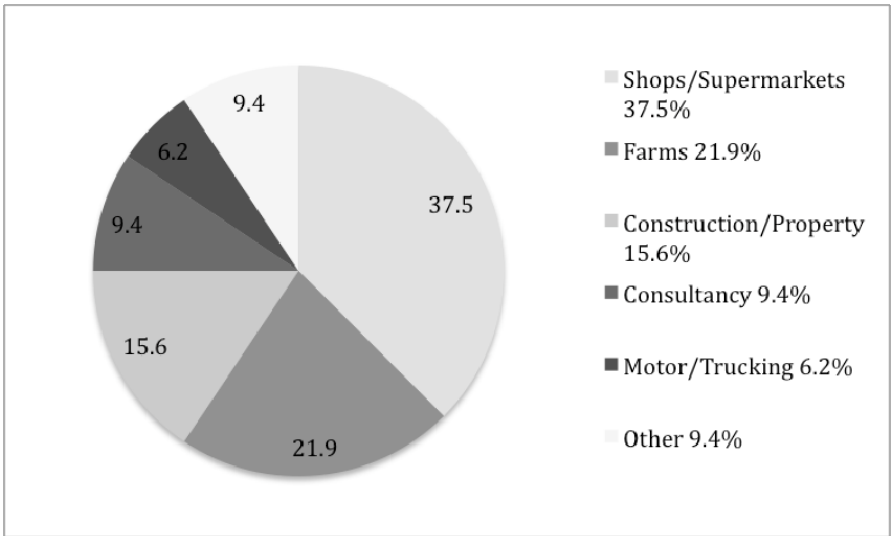
Notwithstanding that a significant proportion of MPPs are drawn from flexible occupations (accountants and lawyers), which enables some to balance parliamentary activities with other occupations, most choose not to. Instead, for most MPPs parliamentary and party work takes up most of their time. Those MPPs that were found to balance parliamentary work with a professional occupation were predominantly drawn from the minority parties,[72] were white and

[72] These MPPs were mainly interviewed at their place of non-political work.

male.[73] Significantly, the majority were formerly councillors under the ward system in which demands on their time from predominantly white constituents in more developed areas may have been limited. Clearly, in these cases, some of the interpretations of the role of a councillor have been transposed within the provincial parliament.

Flexibility in occupation is not limited to the professional classes. By far the largest cluster of MPPs with flexible occupations is formed by small business owners, making up 32 MPPs (see Graph 3.12). Of these, the most prolific type of small businesses owned by MPPs are shops and supermarkets followed by farms. IFP MPPs and MPPs from minority parties make up the bulk of these. For the most part, immediate family members continue to run these businesses while MPPs take care of their parliamentary duties. A notable pattern among some MPPs is the holding of multiple, and sometimes diverse, occupations.[74] This is congruent with the patterns of straddling that Iliffe found in parts of east Africa (Iliffe 1983). In addition, a significant proportion of MPPs changed

Graph 3.12 Percentage of types of businesses owned by MPPs



[73] For example, DP MPP Johannes Krog continues to work as an attorney while also a parliamentarian. NNP MPP Brian Edwards balances his parliamentary duties with his practice as a chartered accountant.

[74] For example, prior to becoming an IFP MPP, Patrick Cornell was a chartered accountant, councillor and owned a small car sales business. PAC MPP Joe Mkhwanazi was formerly a teacher, salesperson and owned a shop and a beerhall complex.

occupation at least once prior to becoming parliamentarians.[75] This suggests that many MPPs in the IFP and minority parties are entrepreneurial. This is in contrast to Bayart's schematic in other parts of Africa. Whereas these MPPs are 'straddling', they acquired their business interests *prior* to becoming MPPs and not *after*. Hence, the state did not provide them with the means to get rich or to become a dominant class through a process of reciprocal assimilation. Hence, although as Bayart claims their heterogeneity means that they do not constitute a distinct class, the link Bayart makes between the accumulation of power and then wealth is reversed in these cases.

That said, for some of the political elite, patterns of association gained during their parliamentary career have enabled them to pursue other ventures. A legislative career provides two important assets through parliamentary associations. They are knowledge and connections. The ways in which these assets are utilised by some MPPs, however, has differed over the two terms of this study. In the first term some MPPs exited from parliament into business ventures, their former political status providing social capital, knowledge and experience to benefit their business career. In the second term, MPPs embarking on other ventures have been more likely to combine them with their political career. For example, according to one interviewee, ANC MEC for Transport, Sibusiso Ndebele has a personal interest in Thokomala, formerly KZN Transport which served predominantly IFP communities before it was privatised (Pers. Interviews 141 and 142). The daughter of Gideon Zulu, MEC for Welfare and Population Development consulted for Cash Paymaster Services, the company that won the tender to pay out pensions in KwaZulu-Natal.[76] Hence, the relationship to the state (for this cluster) does provide a link between power and wealth, as in many other African states. But whereas the salaried job might provide the political elite with the capital to 'straddle' (Bayart 1993: 96-97), it is not this that is the main factor here. Rather, access to the state provides *knowledge* that enables the private accumulation of wealth, and for most (and the majority of IFP small business owners), the private accumulation of wealth began before access to the state was granted.

---

[75] For example, ACDP MPP Jo-Ann Downs was employed in insurance sales, then PABX systems and then as a trainee health inspector prior to coming to parliament. The same pattern holds true for a number of MPPs.

[76] MEC Zulu was cleared of any wrongdoing by the Venter Commission of Inquiry, which found that he played no part in the award of the contract, and received no benefit from it. The commission was established when it was discovered that, on receipt of payment from Cash Paymaster Services, Zulu's daughter transferred money into his bank account. See Ayoob, Z. 'MEC played no role in CPS contract', *Natal Witness*, 31 August 2000 and Ayoob, Z. 'Zulu denies he influenced CPS tender', *Natal Witness*, 6 July 2000.

A significant cluster of the elite were found to be living both *from* politics as well as *for* politics (cf. Weber 1958). Of the 22 MPPs illustrated in the graph as without a non-political occupation, a significant cluster were incumbent politicians who had first been elected in 1994 and then re-elected again in 1999. All those who fell into this cluster were characterised by two factors. The first was an occupation that was political (party worker, parliamentarian, trade unionist, civil servant, inkosi). The second was the absence of any other professional or occupational background. Of these, some were formerly civil servants others were amakhosi, and the remainder had focused on political party work.

Within this category, clear distinctions were found between IFP and ANC MPPs. The IFP MPPs were overwhelmingly either amakhosi or former civil servants, occupations that provided them with a distinct range of skills to fall back on if their legislative chances were cut short, as well as alternative occupational paths should their party political status become diminished. Moreover, many of the IFP MPPs that had been civil servants had a range of educational qualifications to support other career directions. In contrast, all ANC MPPs that were found to be living *from* politics had focused entirely on party political work and had little or no formal qualifications or alternative career paths immediately available to them, many of which had served continuously since the first election.[77] The same limited alternative career paths are also found among a number of ANC MPPs who were re-deployed from the provincial legislature to the national legislature in the second term. Although not provincially incumbent, their pattern of service remains continuous and shows the integration of elites across the various levels of government. In such cases, the prosperity of elites who fall into these clusters is dependent upon continued re-election.

The professionalisation of politics and the cluster of MPPs living from politics would indicate, as Schumpeter argued, that 'if we wish to face facts squarely, we must recognize that, in modern democracies of any type ... politics will unavoidably be a career' (Schumpeter 1962: 285). In many parts of the world the pathway to parliament has become narrow as the availability of careerist politicians reduces the chances for greater representivity and makes the composition of parliament more socially homogenous (cf. Wessels 1997: 76-97). In KwaZulu-Natal there is slightly more homogeneity over the two terms as a result of patterns in the ANC – the loss of MPPS from the professional classes and increase in MPPs with no alternative profession. Hence this reproduction

[77] These MPPs included, for example, Cyril Xaba, Fatima Nahara, Happy Blose, Dumisani Makhaye and Bheki Cele, all who had served continuously since the first election. MPP Happy Blose's non-political experience, for example, is limited to employment as a domestic worker which she balanced with a pivotal role in the former Natal Midlands ANC Women's League prior to entering parliament in 1994.

and circulation means they might have become slightly less responsive to the needs of the electorate.

Despite this, the heterogeneity demonstrated across the parties makes collective self-reproduction unlikely. The political elite do not constitute one social class. If we need to think about the elite in KwaZulu-Natal in relation to class, it is not 'the struggle of classes, but … a struggle about class' (Przeworski 1977: 343-401). They neither comprise one social class that gain access to the state, nor do they constitute a dominant class within the state. Rather, acute poverty and inequality produces the practice of straddling as a method of diversifying the safeguards to prevent poverty. In this regard, the political elite are no more remarkable than the African electorate.

Community related activities

Community related activities encompass voluntary participation by elites in activities that are not directly politically related, work in non-governmental organisations and participation on the boards and committees of public bodies. The members of the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal participate extensively in a diverse range of such activities. However, distinct trends, within parties, in the type of activities pursued by elites are evident.

Many white MPPs from the NNP, and some from the IFP who left parliament in its first few years, share a fairly similar profile. Many are members of the Durban Country Club, an institution that until recently excluded women. In addition, a large proportion are members of Lions, a liberal philanthropic society which dispenses bursaries. These MPPs share with their DP counterparts a commitment to wildlife, environmental and welfare concerns. Some sit on the boards of a number of organisations dedicated to conservation concerns, and are involved in senior citizens welfare issues. Some DP MPPs also share characteristics found among IFP MPPs. Many sit on educational or health related committees. These roles include school board members, hospital board members, primary school trustees, societies that are dedicated to the eradication of diseases such as the Anti-Tuberculosis Society, the Red Cross and Rotary, a social and charitable club made up of business and professional persons.

Among the parties, it is the IFP which stands out for its MPPs' commitment to grassroots development activities. These include, for example, school building projects, subsistence farming projects, co-operatives, refugee assistance, crèche building, youth character building, housing projects, organised assistance to homeless people, child welfare, feeding projects, water provision and road construction projects. Many of these projects have only very limited financial resources and are directed at people living on the margins of society. A common thread among MPPs who are active in this way is involvement in multiple developmental projects within a particular district, and the overwhelming ma-

jority of these MPPs were involved in such activites prior to becoming an MPP.[78]

In the ANC, very few MPPs claimed involvement in community related activities that are not political. Of the few MPPs that could be said to have participated in non-party, union or civic organisations, most were involved in conflict resolution or peace related activities[79]. Only a couple of ANC MPPs could be said to have directly participated in community development projects. These were Inkosi Zibuse Mlaba and Mjabulise Madondo, who are both rurally located. In both cases, their development related activities have been on a relatively larger scale than IFP counterparts. Inkosi Zibuse Mlaba, for example, initiated and secured a R10 million water project in the KwaXimba area in which he resides before becoming a parliamentarian. Mjabulise Madondo, as Chairman of the MPDC, secured R3.5 million for rural development purposes in Msinga through Nelson Mandela, then ANC and South African President. These two cases illustrate the way in which provincial MPPs have secured extensive developmental resources through their national party machinery to promote local development in two rural areas. In KwaXimba the ANC branch was the second largest in the ANC midlands region in 1994 (Gastrow 1994: 90-91). In Msinga, the IFP is the predominant party. While both cases are thus politically very distinct, the political motivations and implications of such massive scale developmental projects may not be so different. Although the politicisation of development is not a new concept in states with limited resources, provincial MPPs acting as brokers for national party imperatives at the local level is perhaps a new way in which this has become manifested.

---

[78] For example, IFP MPP Nomthandazo Mkhize founded Umzinyathi Development Association which assists 47 women's handiwork clubs, works with youths in character building, in poverty relief for street children, sponsors two choirs and a local football team. The late IFP MPP Thanda Dingila was involved in the building of a clinic, a primary school and the construction of a road and water system in Thafamasi. In addition, he helped to repair classrooms destroyed by floods, established the KwaZulu-Natal Unemployment Crisis Committee, supervised the Ndedwe Schools Feeding Scheme and was involved in the Richmond Farm Housing Scheme (Pers. IFP Interview 18). All of these activities took place prior to him becoming an MPP in 1997.

[79] For example, ANC MPP Roy Ainslie worked as an unrest monitor, Meshack Radebe was extensively involved in the Mpumalanga Township peace structures, Mjabulise Madondo is involved in the Msinga Peace and Development Committee (MPDC) and the late Harry Gwala considered his role in the Natal Midlands to be one of conflict resolution.

Social clusters of the political elite

The multiplicity of diverse social characteristics possessed by MPPs mean that it is not possible to present a typical social profile of the political elite. However, overlapping clusters of elites may be identified.

Social clusters within political parties

Within political parties, a number of clusters of elites were identified. The IFP possesses the most socially fractured elite of all the parties, yet simultaneously these clusters of elites have become more integrated since the fracture of the party in the mid-first term. On the one hand there is a cluster of IFP MPPs who are very well educated, attended mission schools, were sons and daughters of the former African middle classes, have a professional non-political occupation and were active in developmentally related community activities. In another cluster MPPs could be said to have little or no education but strong community backgrounds, through either developmentally related work or hereditary status and are self-employed. A third cluster of MPPs (now on the decline) consists of white MPPs who have a strong educational and professional background but limited development-related experience. However, these particular clusters of elites, in their totality, do not describe all elites. Instead, a significant proportion of elites exist that cut across these clusters and are characterised as sharing characteristics from a number of clusters.

What links these different elites together are two interlinked factors. First, the presence of one or two overlapping characteristics among MPPs with contrasting backgrounds binds elites into a multiplicity of party networks. For example, the predominance of rural affiliations among MPPs from both the urban and rural environments contributes to cross-cutting networks. The second, but related, factor that links the political elite are syncretic politicians whose social characteristics lend themselves to the language of different discourses. For example, IFP MPP Ellis Vezi who completed a Diploma in Management Studies, began a B.Proc and was employed in a law firm for 25 years, a Barclays Bank development officer and later self-employed insurance broker shares social characteristics that might lend themselves to a pattern of association with the well educated professionals that exist in the party. However, his experience of the rural context as a representative on the tribal council of the KwaMathi Tribal Authority also provides social capital that integrates him with those elites who share a strong community background through hereditary status. Together these factors integrate party elites in cross-cutting networks.

In contrast, the clusters of ANC political elites are on the whole more clearly differentiated by social background. The majority of ANC MPPs share a few distinct characteristics. They are, on the whole, drawn from the urban environ-

ment (especially the major urban locations within eThekwini and Umgungundlovu), have limited religious affiliations (although some of their parents are clergy), and lack community related voluntary experiences of a non-political nature. The predominance of lawyers in the first term of office has been surpassed by another, younger cluster of MPPs with nursing, education and community development related educational and professional backgrounds. Many older MPPs remain that benefitted from mission based education. However, existing side by side is a third cluster of MPPs that have limited educational and professional backgrounds and may be said to be living *from* politics.

Of the larger minority parties, DP MPPs are on the whole well educated with professional backgrounds, drawn from an urban background. Of these, white, christian MPPs are predominantly concentrated around the affluent suburbs of eThekwini and Umgungundlovu, are predominantly male with a liberal philanthropic pattern of community involvement. However, cross cutting patterns of association bind together a few other MPPs whose characteristics diverge from this dominant pattern.[80] In the NNP, gender and syncretic patterns of regional identification among black MPPs ties them to their white, urban colleagues who would otherwise fall into a separate elite cluster. White MPPs educational and professional focus upon accountancy and finance related disciplines and membership of the Durban Country Club is distinct from the labour relations and theology focus of black MPPs involved in community projects.

Social clusters across political parties

The political elite in KwaZulu-Natal may be said to have become more socially homogenous on both sides of the aisle since 1994. On the whole, educational levels have risen and occupational classes have narrowed and the number of white MPPs has declined in favour of more black MPPs. Nevertheless, *across* parties fairly distinct clusters of elites that share similar characteristics can be discerned.

One cluster consists of predominantly white MPPs who possess a well educated professional background, urban patterns of regional affiliation but limited lineage ties of significant status and insignificant community related experiences or experiences of an administrative nature. There are MPPs like this predominantly located in all of the four main parties. Their social similarities to one another in the IFP and ANC are significant because racially they remain on the fringes of the parliamentary elite, offering services to a party to which some of them (particularly in the IFP) share limited ideological affiliation in the post-

[80] For example, MPP Margaret Ambler-Moore matches this pattern with the exception that she is female. MEC Wilson Ngcobo is drawn from the rural environment and is black but fits the pattern in all other ways.

1994 period (see Chapter 4). Thus should their bonds of party affiliation lessen, the social similarities with MPPs in other parties become a basis upon which they may change allegiances.

Two further distinct clusters of elites may be identified. However, within these clusters internal differences serves to tie them more firmly to their party allegiances than groups across parties. One group consists predominantly of black MPPs with a shared conservative family upbringing, as the sons and daughters of former middle class groupings who attended mission based schools and received a good education. However, despite these similarities, this group tends to be divided by their particular urban and rural affiliations which parallels their party distinctions. The other group may be identified among predominantly black ANC and IFP MPPs with strong local affiliations and a relatively limited educational background. Again, however, despite these similarities, the group is divided by patterns of lineage ties of status which parallel party patterns. Moreover, they are further divided by their extent of community development related experience. The significance of these groupings is that while they might identify with MPPs across the aisle, other prominent social affiliations distinguish them from counterparts in other parties. However, in this cluster the shared patterns of social background across the aisle have eased a dialogue among groups of elites rather than provided instability as in the first cross-party cluster discussed above.

Conclusion

The political elite that emerged in 1994 and has developed over the first two terms of parliament is composed on the whole of individuals from diverse social backgrounds, indicating radical heterogeneity in elite formation. Despite this, there are significant similarities, by political party, between clusters of elites on a range of social characteristics. As the political spaces available to individuals narrowed in 1994, so did the range of elites that became parliamentarians. Many of these were already an elite of sorts, atypical of the electorate – by their social background – prior to their parliamentary career. In some cases, political spaces remained personalised, as elites were able to draw upon social networks to guarantee a place in the new institutions. Social capital, was in some cases, based on shared social background, resulting in an intimacy of familiarity. Yet, there is no evidence of a reproduction of a political elite based upon common material interests. That said, while remaining socially fractured, most notably (but not entirely) in the distinctions between elites from different political parties, the elite has become more socially homogenous over the two terms of office. In some cases, elites from different political parties share very similar social characteristics, potentially enabling fluidity in the legislature and fragility

of allegiance to the political party. This complex matrix of both cross-cutting and distinctive patterns is indicative of the synthesis of a continuity of characteristics among the elite in the new political institutions accompanied simultaneously by radical change.

4

Political, organisational and institutional background of an emerging political elite

> 'What matters is not to ascribe to this ruling class a coherence and a continuity … which it does not possess' (Aron 1968 in Etzioni-Halevy 1997: 88).
>
> 'The operation of the state apparatus is … not adequately explained by the power of only one class' (Aron 1960: 260-281).

Studies of the characteristics of the political elite focus almost entirely upon their social composition. In studies where this is not the case, references to political background usually concentrate upon two factors. The first is the party political affiliation of elites, which is considered to be the most important determinant of values and behaviour. The second is categories of political experience (length of party service, length of government service and the like) that is used in studies of supply and demand analyses of political recruitment to assess how selectors chose candidates for office and how representative the elite is. In this study, however, political party affiliation is not found to be the most important factor in attitudes and behaviours. The reasons for this are that both the historical-political circumstances in which the political elite consciously chose their political home and in which selectors chose their candidates were not rooted in a democratic context in which the values of freedom of expression and movement enabled increased choice. As such, many elite members made choices based upon local political contexts, chance and personal circumstances that led them to become caught up in the grand politics that solidified patterns

of political association. Hence the values and attitudes found in political parties are multiform and contradictory.

Examples of this may be found in other parts of the world. Populist movements that have emerged in northern, central and eastern Europe in the 21st Century as a response to the crisis in the legitimacy of liberal democracy comprise cross-class alliances that lack one consistent ideology or coherent value set. The structural conditions that led to the rise of populism includes post-industrialism, the gradual erosion of party politics, rising social inequality and growing unemployment (cf. Zaslove 2008; Taggart 2004). Despite emerging in response to a perceived crisis in democracy (and often opposing the representative parts of liberal democracy and threatening democratic principles) the structural conditions by which parties can organise makes them quite different movements to those that emerged in sub-saharan Africa. Freedom of organisation and movement endows candidates with knowledge of a range of political homes and the ability to choose, according to their value systems which one to select.

The case of KwaZulu-Natal is an extreme example of the structure of choices available to candidates and selectors in post-colonial sub-saharan African states that have emerged from conflict and civil war. Common to each is a colonial experience of divide and rule, restricted freedom of movement and resulting deep rooted geographical divisions based upon an oppressive system of control. In Angola hardened regional political movements emerged that divided the country into three – the National Front for the Liberation of Angola (FNLA) in the North, the Popular Movement for the Liberation of Angola (MPLA) in the centre, and the National Union for the Total Independence of Angola (UNITA) in the South. In Mozambique, the Front for the Liberation of Mozambique (FRELIMO) emerged in the centre and the north of the country while the Mozambique National Resistance (RENAMO) occupied the South. In these cases, as in KwaZulu-Natal it was inconceivable for a candidate to select a political home that did not dominate the geographical area in which one was located, especially as civil war between the movements took root. The situation of KwaZulu-Natal was further compounded by the apartheid homeland system, of which KwaZulu was the most fragmented, and the pass laws which severely restricted the freedom of movement of the population. Herewith the occupation of territory severely curtailed the range of options for those wishing a political career.

The social composition of political elites is frequently employed in studies of them as a means to determine whether they constitute a political class.[1] A political class may be defined as a political elite who, 'have expressed an interest to

[1] Other terms include ruling class.

live from politics … have experienced a political career which contributes to a common identity … actively pursue the monopolisation of chances of market exploitation … of their performance, and they possess political power' (Wessels 1997: 77, cf. Wessels 1992: 541-649 and Weber 1976) However, given the acute historical-political circumstances in which the political elite consciously chose their political home and in which selectors chose their candidates in KwaZulu-Natal, political background (including the experiences and circumstances in which the political elite chose and remained with their political home) might be a better indicator than social composition in KwaZulu-Natal and in other post-colonial African states recovering from civil war. Political background may also be a better indicator in countries that have undergone a democratic transition. A key factor is to examine the political background of the political elite when the structures that condition the choices, that the political elite can make, change. Political background explains why parties are made up of competing and contradictory discourses in a post-transition period. Political background, among the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal, has provided political capital. This may be defined as the resources that the elite bring to parliament with them which may be understood to be significant factors in their desirability for office among selectors. Political capital is commonly understood to include legislative experience, party service, political connections and the like. In turn, political capital has led in KwaZulu-Natal to not one political class, but to many.

In this chapter I explore the political background of the political elite in the KwaZulu-Natal Provincial Legislature. I draw extensively on the biographical information collected through interviews, as in chapter three, to document the prevalence of specific characteristics and patterns among the political elite. I explore the motivations and circumstances of political involvement, the extent of this involvement and the various different types of involvement. I further interrogate the characteristics of the political choices that the political elite made. From this, I further claim that for many, the reasons for their particular political affiliations are no longer relevant. While some of the elite have very long and deep political affiliations with their political home and an alternative political home would be inconceivable to them, this is not the case for all. The consequences of this are, firstly, an identification among some of the elite of their interests with the legislature. Secondly, the potential for more fluidity is present within the legislature as some of the older political affiliations break down. Hence, on the one hand political background roots some elites to their older affiliations, provides political capital and defines particular ruling classes. On the other hand, political background is no longer relevant to present day affiliations.

These findings in KwaZulu-Natal suggest that one of the key reasons for the blurred distinctions between party and state that emerged as a common feature in many African post-colonial and post-transition states is rooted in the particular bounded format of political elite formation during the period of liberation struggle and in the immediate post-war period. Elites in the new democratic legislature who were previously unable to choose from a range of political alternatives follow one of two paths. First, they tie their interests to the legislature as older affiliations become less relevant. This increases fluidity among political parties (often resulting in one dominant party) and makes it less likely that some elites will relinquish power in the face of party defeat. As a result, for some, the legislature comes to be seen as the political home, supplanting the political party and resulting in a broader inability to entrench democracy. Secondly, they retain their affiliations to hardened political camps which gradually become less relevant as freedom of movement and expression becomes a common feature within the state.

Initial political involvement

The complexity of the political context, in the pre-1994 period and for some time after, including the disarray of organisational and institutional affiliations from which political elites emerged obscures many of the personal motivations and the multiplicity of associative patterns that political elites held. Seemingly, on the surface, many of the political choices that elites made were guided by the grand political context. In reality, however, many of these choices had little to do with it. However, while not a consequence of the grand picture, the political choices that political elites made prior to 1994 were to locate them within it. Nowhere is this more evident than in the motivations and circumstances in which the political elite first became involved in politics.

Motivations for initial political involvement

Political motivation is a difficult factor to measure for two reasons. Firstly, it refers to a psychological inclination that 'may be rooted in an individual's personality and tempered by the larger political environment' (Herrnson 1997: 191). Hence, it may be that some people are more predisposed to seek political office than others and that their motivation for active involvement is often a product of a whole range of factors including them fielding the possibility of involvement with a range of actors (family, friends, trade unions, and other organised groups) before they make their choices. Secondly, political 'motivation is hidden; older MPs may have forgotten their initial impetus; candidates may disguise naked ambition under the cloak of public service ...' (Norris & Lovenduski 1997: 182) Indeed, a whole body of literature, including rational

choice theory, assumes that the key motivation for political involvement is always political ambition (cf. Fowler & McClure 1989; Ehrenhalt 1992; Kazee 1994; Herrnson 1997: 187-208). One may then take these two factors as a given and instead explore the further motivations to be found among the political elite.

Although political ambition may have played a part in the motivations of many of the political elite, very few claimed this as their primary reason. Only one MPP openly stated that this was his primary motivation. He said, 'I wanted to be a big man. I wanted to lead the country' (Pers. IFP Interview 138). Here the perception of a political role is interpreted as including status and respect. More common were personal reasons which were related to personal ambition, or a consequence of it. For example, one ANC MPP stated, 'I am from a very poor family and looking at the way my family was struggling I felt bitterness. I thought, "Why should I not get what others are getting?"' (Pers. ANC Interview 109). In this example, a political role was associated with a better standard of living, and through it, better life circumstances through the variety of rewards that success in a political career would bring. In all cases where political ambition was mentioned as a key factor or as a consequence, the MPP concerned only became an MPP in the second term. This indicates that many of the newer generation of MPPs may not be caught up in some of the older fault lines and associative political patterns that divide others and that they are more likely to see their prospective careers as tied to the legislature than to any political party.

Apart from personal political ambition, collective goals provided a key group of motivational reasons for political involvement. The first of these was a desire to change society for the better. Some MPPs, for example, talked about the way in which they wanted to bring their skills to bear in specific public policy areas. One NNP MPP, for example, specifically became involved in politics in 1993 to take up the local government portfolio. Prior to this he had served as Deputy City Treasurer and Town Clerk for the Chief Executive in Durban and was a local government consultant. He was well qualified with a B.Com and had passed the examinations for the Institute of Municipal Treasurers. Entering politics was a way to contribute to policy for society more generally.

Another significant group of MPPs who wished to correct a deficiency in society, and more typical of the South African political context, described their political involvement as a response to the injustices of apartheid. These MPPs spoke broadly of the injustices of racially discriminatory legislation and the need for the extension of rights to all citizens. For example, an IFP MPP said, 'I had a complete abhorrence to any form of individual overpowering another simply because they were in power. I needed to show resistance towards injustices' (Pers. IFP Interview 34). Some of these MPPs, however, discussed their own initial political involvement in this category in the context of the local

and in terms of advancing the interests of certain groups. Another IFP MPP and traditional leader's response was so. He said, 'I helplessly observed the forced removals of my people from the places of their birth for no reason … I became determined as a leader of those communities to become involved in politics so that I could be in a position to fight for their rights' (Pers. IFP Interview 51). Involvement in politics was thus a means to substantive political representation for a community with which he was associated and from a position in which he was already an elite.

Another collective goal expressed by MPPs was to advance the interests of a political party. In this context MPPs were inspired by the leadership of a particular party or had sympathies for a political party and they became active politically as a consequence of this. For example, according to an NNP MPP, 'Mr. De Klerk motivated and inspired me' (Pers. NNP Interview 37). With the exception of two MPPs, all MPPs who fall into this category joined the IFP (see later discussion on party political choice) indicating much stronger bonds of affiliation to politics through a political party than through a legislative structure than any other group.

A final important reason for the initial political involvement of MPPs was the personal impact of the political context. A black NNP MPP, for example, became politically involved after becoming a victim of violence when ANC affiliated youths in KwaMashu set fire to his shop and to his home. As a result he moved to a flat that was attached to NP offices and became a member (Pers. NNP Interview 24). An ANC MPP described his initial political involvement as a consequence of the impact of apartheid upon his immediate family. He said, 'I was born in 1955 in Cato Manor. We referred to the fifties as the fighting fifties … What struck me was the mass removals and especially the removal of my family to KwaMashu. My father resisted. They came and destroyed our house' (Pers. ANC Interview 134). Another MPP – in the IFP – who was directly affected by political violence described the death of his father who was murdered during the riots that occurred during the week-long SARMCOL strike called by COSATU in May 1985 (Pers. IFP Interview 65). In all cases of this type, a particular incident or set of incidents culminated in an individual becoming politically involved by approaching a political organisation that was an adversary to the injustice that they had suffered and that was in competition with the political organisation that was believed to have caused the action.

Circumstances of initial political involvement

The circumstances of initial political involvement reveal much more about the motivations of the political elite. There are seven typical circumstances in which the political elite in Kwa-Zulu Natal became actively involved in politics. Firstly, for the majority of white MPPs, who share a fairly long political history,

the circumstances of initial political involvement were guided by the possibility of political representation. For most, the time period between deciding to join a political party and active political representation as a councillor was less than one year. In most cases, these two events occurred simultaneously. MPP Cliff Matthee, for example, became a member of the Natal Provincial Council representing Durban North in 1974, the same year in which he joined the United Party (Pers. NNP Interview 62). Hence, MPPs became involved to become representatives. Political choice for those who took this route was primarily restricted to the parties that sent candidates to office in the pre-1994 period.

In contrast, another cluster of MPPs became actively involved in politics through a relationship of trust that they had with traditional authorities. For example, an IFP MPP describing his experience said,

> 'As a young man I was invited to serve on the lowest rung of the Tribal Authority. The Tribal Secretary, a man known as Charles came and requested that my mother offer me as a young man because he thought I had great potential … From there I went to the Regional Authority. It was from here that I got involved. I was requested by the thirteen Amakhosi (who constituted the regional authority) to represent them on the erstwhile KwaZulu Government' (Pers. IFP Interview 78).

In this case, an involvement in politics developed over time as the individual actively came to represent the Amakhosi. In this case, a young man with a good education and a traditional upbringing was well placed to serve in this manner, like the Amakholwa decades earlier. Nor were all who became actively involved in politics through tribal society black. Other examples of people who became involved through their proximity and association with tribal society include IFP MEC Narend Singh and IFP MPP Maurice Mackenzie. In these cases, proximity to, and/or representation of, traditional leaders on a variety of different levels was often a precursor to party political involvement. The route of political representation was firstly, within institutions and then secondly, to join a political party. This route of political involvement was often to define the party political choice as the IFP.

A third category of MPPs became politically involved through youth and civic organisations that catapulted them into political protests. MPP Bheki Cele, for example, was a member of Masibonisane[2] Youth Organisation from 1979 onwards. Through this organisation he became actively involved in the municipal bus boycott of 1982 and then the rent boycotts of 1983. Lamontville, where he lived, was one of six townships that united under JORAC and the leadership of the ANC underground to protest at the increased service charges

---

[2] Share our views.

in the townships[3] in March 1983. By late 1983, Cele was also recruited and found himself 'fighting Ulundi instead of Pretoria' (Cele in: *Daily News,* 9 October 1991: 21) when the Deputy-Minister of Co-operation and Development announced the incorporation of Lamontville into the KwaZulu Homeland (cf. *Daily News,* 9 October 1991). Hence the events of specific forms of protest politics further defined the political home after the circumstances of initial political involvement. For elites categorised into this type, the majority associated with the ANC.

Student politics was the route to political participation by a large group of MPPs across the political spectrum. This route applied equally to those who became members of the IFP as of the ANC. For example, IFP MPPs Mandla Malakoana and Nhlanhla Khubisa were involved in South African Democratic Student's Movement (SADSM) that was affiliated to the IFP, the latter MPP then founded an IFP branch at the University of Zululand. MPP Blessed Gwala joined Inkatha after persuasion by a scholarly friend Ziba Jiyane. ANC MPP Cyril Xaba was recruited to the Congress of South African Students (COSAS), a UDF affiliate while still at school. ANC MPP then Premier Sibusiso Ndebele was a founder member of the Black People's Convention and then later he, ANC MPP Nhlanhla Ngidi and IFP MPP Faith Gasa became South African Students' Organisation (SASO) members. Faith Gasa was responsible for changing the student affiliations at the University of Zululand to SASO, a Black Consciousness affiliate. ANC MPP Roy Ainslie was recruited to the National Union of South African Students (NUSAS) and he and IFP MPP Ben Ngubane both served as Vice-President at different points in time. On the University of Natal campus IFP MPP Peter Miller was recruited to the SRC and Phillip Powell to NUSAS and then served as Vice-President.[4] Many MPPs involved in student politics detail their initial involvement as recruitment by a friend in the movement. Some MPPs were also recruited as student before they went to university. In addition to university campuses MPPs were actively recruited into politics at other institutions of learning. For example, PAC MPP Joe Mkhwanazi became actively involved through the influence of his peers at Adams College as did ANC MPP Nhlanhla Ngidi before becoming involved in SASO at the University of Zululand. In the cases of these individuals, particularly the ANC MPPs, they displayed activism from their school years and were assimilated into the dominant party structures very early on in their lives.

For a further group of MPPs, their professional work brought them into direct contact with political organisations or institutions. For those who came to

---

[3] These leaders were Reverend Xundu, Ian Mkhise, Jabu Sithole and Richard Gumede.

[4] Powell also gathered covert intelligence for the police.

parliament with the IFP, development related work brought them into direct contact with politics. An IFP MPP, for example, became initially involved in politics while working in rural development. According to her, 'it was a case of politics joining me … I was working on a farm in KwaZulu-Natal. It was then that I bumped against the Inkatha Liberation Movement who required someone to manage their development office' (Pers. IFP Interview 127). Other examples of those working within rural development include IFP MPP Mzikayise Ngema and IFP MPP Maurice Mackenzie. Hence, through a professional development related role, MPPs were juxtaposed into a political role. Another group included those who were employed as researchers. IFP MPPs Belinda Scott, Phillip Powell and Usha Roopnarain were all employed as researchers at the Inkatha Institute[5] after finishing their postgraduate studies. Their route into parliament was through the party that they later joined.

Family and friends also provided a route into politics for many, particularly in the ANC. For example, one ANC MPP described how she grew up in ANC exile politics where her parents relocated. To her it just seemed like a natural progression to follow in their footsteps. She said, 'I was used to being with the ANC home boys and girls. I did not necessarily understand why my father became involved. I just decided to join the ANC as I was by now above the age of 18' (Pers. ANC Interview 113). Another ANC MPP echoed some of these sentiments. She said, 'I was recruited by my brother. He was involved with the ANC in KwaMashu. At that time it was the UDF. I was a township girl so I became involved … through the civics, through my brother' (Pers. ANC Interview 71). Indeed other MPPs followed this same pattern. ANC MPP then MEC Ina Cronje became involved in politics through her husband Pierre and IFP MPP Lauretta Ngcobo became involved through her husband who was an accused in the PAC treason trial and whom she assisted in the PAC as a courier. Recruitment through family and friends is most common in the ANC although it is present in the circumstances of initial political involvement for some MPPs of other parties too.

There are also some uncategorized circumstances in which MPPs initially became involved in politics. One MPP was putting up posters on a road when a current MPP stopped his car and asked him if he wished to get involved in politics (Pers. IFP Interview 110. In another case, an IFP MPP was threatened by ANC youths who told him that they would burn down his shop. He said, 'I phoned the NP and … asked them to help me sort out the problem. They said, "God Help You". I spoke to Jurie Mentz just after he had walked over to the IFP. He said, "open the shop and call a gathering. I will be there". The day

[5] The Inkatha Institute was a political think tank under the directorship of Professor Lawrence Schlemmer from the University of Natal.

arrived and so did Jurie and Lionel Mtshali and they had a rally. I then joined the IFP' (Pers. IFP Interview 123). Another IFP MPP became involved in politics after his family, along with other land hungry migrants from Ntuzuma, illegally occupied land and established an informal settlement. He contacted the KLA and said that they needed trucks to grade the roads and services to the area. Through provision of basic infrastructure and services by the KLA he became known and then involved in politics himself (Pers. IFP Interview 60). What is clear is that IFP MPPs present a much more diverse grouping than any other group of MPPs in terms of their wide ranging initial political experiences and their route into politics.

With the exception of MPPs who clearly and actively sought a political role because of personal ambition, it is apparent that the majority of MPPs became associated with a political role very gradually. MPPs came into contact with organisations and institutions that were political because of non-directly political roles that they occupied. Over time, they became more directly politically involved. For the majority, three factors are apparent. First, they were already an elite of sorts or active in some way before their initial involvement in politics. This includes professional elites, well educated elites, and those who were involved in a role that was enterprising or committed to better life circumstances for a collective of people. Some of these had already been influenced already by aspects of the social milieu, such as friends, parents and teachers. Others were drawn into politics through outside stimuli i.e. the non-overtly political roles that they occupied drew attention to them by already established political organisations that saw in them the possibility of potential. Secondly, for many their route into politics was almost by accident in which they came across an organisation through a variety of circumstances that they did not consciously choose. Thirdly, (see later discussion) the type of non-overtly political role that elites occupied, in a politically fractured territory, then defined and limited the possibility of political homes that they became affiliated to. Hence, politics in Africa is both 'bottom-up' (Bayart) and hierarchical. Many members of the political elite of today, became affiliated by chance but simultaneously held a position that put them in touch with politics.

Extent of former political involvement: Veterans and newcomers

The overwhelming majority of the political elite had already acquired political experience before they came to parliament. Of these, the majority of those with political experience became politically involved in the 1970s and a few in the 1980s. Most came to parliament with anywhere between 10 and 25 years of prior political experience. Newcomers to the political scene, account for a handful of MPPs who became politically involved in the 1990s.

The racial background of veteran MPPs is directly correlated to the levels of continuous political affiliations that they held. Perhaps this is directly related to the availability of political affiliations that individuals could make in the 1970s and 1980s given the bounded and restricted nature of politics during this period. Most were assimilated into the dominant local party political structure or an affiliation of this structure early on in their political lives, which both established and then reinforced the patterns of political affiliations they were to hold and the associations they were to make. In contrast to this, the majority of veteran white and Asian MPPs who became politically involved in the 1970s and the 1980s served in a number of political homes and capacities within those homes. For example, IFP MPP Derek Watterson had already served as a member of the United Party from 1958 and then the New Republic Party from 1977 and came to parliament with the IFP in 1994. As such, white and Asian MPPs already represented a fluid type of political allegiance when they came to parliament in 1994 and beyond. The majority of black MPPs who became involved in the 1970s and 1980s maintained continuous political affiliations throughout their period of involvement with very few changing party or institutional allegiances.

For MPPs whose political experience goes back much further than 1970 their level of continuous political party affiliation and associative patterns is directly correlated to the political party that they came to parliament with. These are predominantly the older members of the legislature, some of whom have since passed away. Of this category, MPPs who came to parliament with the ANC and NNP tended to maintain a continuous pattern of party affiliation. For example, MPP Harry Gwala joined the SACP in 1942 and took co-membership with the ANC in 1944. His affiliations remained so as he became more deeply involved in struggle politics in both organisations before coming to parliament on an ANC list in 1994. The same applies to MPP Ismail Meer who joined the ANC and SACP in 1942 and to MPP Fatima Nahara who joined the ANC in the 1960s, both of whom came to parliament on an ANC ticket. In the NNP, the longest serving member of a political institution, Valentino Volker joined the party in 1950 and remained a member when he was elected to the provincial parliament in 1994 and in 1999. For each of these MPPs they were exposed only to the philosophies and values of the political homes that they originally chose.

In contrast, MPPs who came to parliament with the IFP or PAC and had political experience that goes back to a period before the 1970s served in more than one political home. This is hardly surprising given that the PAC did not exist until 1959 and the IFP until 1975. However, it is not that simple. These MPPs did not defect to new political homes because of the banning of the former organisations or an inability to carry out their work because of the

political circumstances that they faced. Instead, they defected over differences with the organisations they originally joined. For example, IFP MPPs Frank Mdlalose, Vitus Mvelase and PAC MPP Joe Mkhwanazi were ANC members in the 1950s. All three broke away as a consequence of ideological differences with the party. Mkhwanazi became a founding member of the PAC. Mdlalose, broke away because of the socialist leanings of the Freedom Charter of the ANC and *later* became a founding member of the IFP. Vitus Mvelase who served as Chair of the ANC Youth League in Lamontville and then SACTU member differed with the ANC leadership over strategies of liberation and *later* joined the IFP. Other longer political associations include MPP Lauretta Ngcobo whose husband was a founder member of the PAC and who joined the PAC in 1959, and MPP Ibrahim Bawa who had a long association with the NIC before coming to parliament with the IFP. These long serving politicians were exposed to a richer variety of political ideas than their counterparts who served in one political home, ideas that they brought with them and found reception for in their new political homes. Hence, the IFP, like other parties in Africa has applied 'the logic of inclusion rather than exclusion' (Bayart 1993: 165) incorporating, rather than excluding, a multiplicity of political ideas.

The depth of political experience that MPPs possess and the capacity that they held to define, rather than to be assimilated into, political organisations also correlates with the political party that they came to power with. While the majority of MPPs who came to parliament with the ANC were *assimilated into* the dominant political organisation in their area, this is not the case for those who came to power with the IFP. At least five IFP MPPs were founding members of the IFP in 1975[6] and at least another nine MPPs[7] joined within the first year of the organisation's existence. As such, MPPs who came to parliament with the IFP were much more able to define the core political ideas of the party and the dominant strategies of the movement than MPPs were in the ANC. In addition, they represented a much more senior party leadership in parliament than the relatively speaking less senior ANC MPPs. There are of course exceptions to this. For example both Jacob Zuma and Sibusiso Ndebele both became ANC National Executive Committee Members during the period in which they were provincial MPPs indicating that their internal party seniority had grown and giving them a much greater ability to shape the internal perspectives of the ANC. Indeed Jacob Zuma then went on to become Deputy-President of South Africa, President of the ANC and then President of South

---

[6] These are Inkosi Gumede, Ziba Jiyane, Frank Mdlalose, Senezele Mhlungu and Celani Mtetwa.

[7] These are John Bhengu, Thanda Dingila, Blessed Gwala, Lionel Mtshali, Vitus Mvelase, Mzikayise Ngema, David Ntombela, Thomas Shabalala and Prince Gideon Zulu.

Africa in 2009, after his provincial experience. MPP Harry Gwala was, however, the only ANC MPP who was already a member of the ANC National Executive Committee before he became an MPP. While he demonstrated seniority in this manner in the heart of the movement he was also given almost free rein in the 1980s and 1990s to define the ANC in the space of the midlands region. The newer ANC MPPs were less able to do so provincially and nationally.

In addition, to the MPPs with a long political career, a handful of MPPs only became politically involved in the 1990s. Some of these MPPs joined a political party on the eve of the 1994 elections.[8] In addition, IFP MPPs Eric Coleman and Usha Roopnarain who came to parliament in 1999 only became politically active in the post-1994 period. Some of these newcomers were to hold very prominent positions of responsibility in parliament within a few weeks of their election. It would appear that the pending elections offered to some newcomers the possibility of new spaces for involvement, but on the whole the political elite came into parliament having already acquired some political experience.

Hence, while political experience clearly does not guarantee a safe space in parliament, it would seem that MPPs with prior political experience dominate the legislature. Indeed a party list system of proportional representation makes this more likely given that an elite determine the list of candidates. This might suggest that those with political experience dominate the monopolisation of chances in the legislature, although it is no proof. Hence the agency of political power is to be found in the prior political background of MPPs. If so, this would suggest, as Weber does, that the constuitive element of a political class is present. However, it is not so simple. The question is, however, what type of political experience dominates in the legislature.

Types of former political involvement

The political experiences of the majority of the political elite are very narrow, mostly concentrated in one or sometimes two different role types. While the experiences of the political elite counted together represent a rich tapestry of different forms of political activity, it was marked by divisions and fault lines with limited cross-cutting political experiences to unify those with differing political backgrounds. As such, the political elite may be classified by their predominant organisational and institutional experiences. These include participation in a former legislature or government structure, civil service experience, party-based organisational or mobilising experiences and trade union and civic

[8] These include ANC MPP Ina Cronje, ACDP MPP Jo-Ann Downs, NNP MPP Gordon Haygarth, and IFP MPPs Maurice Mackenzie, Alexander Hamilton and Mandla Malakoana in 1992 and Henry Combrink in 1993.

movement roles. In the few cases where MPPs had a multiplicity of experiences they were found to be senior party members that became senior parliamentarians or MECs in the post-1994 period thus solidifying, for the most part, pre-1994 positions of status in the new provincial government.

Legislative and government political experience

At least 24 MPPs or 15% of the total number of MPPs were formerly representatives in the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly and all, except one of these came to parliament in the post-1994 period with the IFP, having also been long term members of the party. The only exception is DP MPP Rev. Wilson Ngcobo who served as a councillor for the Mzumbe Regional Authority from 1982 to 1988 and then a position in the KLA from 1988. Of these remaining 23 MPPs at least 14 held positions of seniority in the KLA.[9] In most of these cases, those elite members had served as ordinary KLA members for a significant number of years before progressing to these senior policy roles.

For the vast majority of these former KLA members only a very few had gained any other form of institutional experience. Frank Mdlalose, for example, had also served as the Mayor of Madadeni and Celani Mtetwa had served on the Msinga local council. But for the most part these MPPs were experienced in decision-making on a regional rather than a local level. In KwaZulu-Natal there are no IFP MPPs who have only local level institutional experience. Hence one may conclude that the KLA is seen as the most important previous institutional body in the IFP and some continuity with the past is present. The local level and community council experiences of others did not provide sufficient political capital to be an MPP for the IFP.

In addition, those who became MPPs in the provincial legislature and had seniority in the KLA were, on the most part, afforded seniority in the post-1994 period. Of the former KLA cabinet ministers, four became MECs in the new legislature and three served consecutively as Premier. In addition, a former KLA Deputy-Speaker became a Speaker, a Chief Whip became an MEC and a Minister a Chief Whip. As such, some individual patterns of status that had

---

[9] These include John Bhengu and Vincent Zulu, both of whom served separately as Deputy-Minister of Education and Culture, Inkosi Simon Gumede who served as Minister of Works, Lissah Mtalane who served as Deputy-Minister of Health, Celani Mtetwa as Minister of Justice, Lionel Mtshali as Minister of Education, Velaphi Ndlovu as Deputy-Minister of Works, Ben Ngubane as minister of Health, Prince Gideon Zulu as Deputy-Minister of Welfare and pensions, Deputy-Minister of Agriculture and Chief Whip, Inkosi Nyanga Ngubane as Deputy-Minister of Health, Senzele Mhlungu as Chief Whip, Inkosi Calalabakubo Khawula as Assistant Whip, Gideon Mdlalose as Minister of Health and Welfare, Minister of the Interior and Minister of Education.

been adhered to in the KLA were continued into the provincial parliament. Of course, as such the experiences gained in policy and legislative skills in the KLA were also transferred into the provincial legislature.

At least 35 or 23% of the remainder of MPPs also had previous political experience in a legislative or governmental capacity. Of these, those who are black are located in the DP and ACDP. They gained this experience through roles in the former community councils. ACDP MPP Alex Fakude, for example, served as a community councillor for thirteen years and as a mayor for eight years. So while MPPs with previous institutional experience in the IFP all have KLA experience, black MPPs in the minority parties with previous institutional experience have community council experience. Such delineation in the prior political experiences of MPPs has helped to determine their post-1994 political home. In addition, while the institutional experience that provides political capital in the IFP is the KLA, in the minority parties of the DP and ACDP it would appear that any institutional experience combined with racial group is what provides political capital for black MPPs.

Twenty-three white MPPs have previous institutional experience that accounts for all white candidates who came to parliament with the DP or NNP but only 6 of the 19 white MPPs who came to power with the IFP. Of these, those that came to parliament with the IFP were either former local councillors, served in the Natal Provincial Council or were both. Most held senior positions in these bodies. Peter Miller, for example, served in the Natal Provincial Council from 1979-1986 and was an Exco member from 1986-1993. Derek Watterson served as a city councillor, Deputy-Mayor of Durban, Member of the Natal Provincial Council and a member of Exco. Charles van Eck was both a councillor and a former Mayor of Pinetown and Patrick Cornell was both a councillor and a Mayor of Durban. The common thread among such MPPs is that they all served in a senior institutional position, were white and had served in a major urban area that was dominated by ANC and DP supporters, a factor that provided a very particular form of political capital to them as IFP MPPs.

In the DP white MPPs have been drawn predominantly from local level institutions with two exceptions. They are Roger Burrows who served as a national MP from 1984 and Wessel Nel as MP for Mooi River from 1989. Together these two individuals constituted the DP provincial representatives from 1994-1999 and in the second term provincial party leader and whip. All other DP representatives since then have prior experience at the local government level. This may indicate that political capital is gained, from previous institutional experience, and seniority is linked to former seniority.

Similarly in the NNP, of the 10 white MPPs that have served, 7 have previous experience in national government and some held ministerial positions in the late 1980s. MPP George Bartlett, for example served as Deputy-Minister of

Economic Affairs and Technology, Minister of Transport and Minister of Minerals and Energy. MPP Danie Schutte formerly served as Deputy-Minister of Justice and Correctional Services and as Minister of Home Affairs. MPP James Waugh was a member of the President's Council. The President's Council was appointed by the President of Republic of South Africa and was the final arbiter in matters of disagreement between the three racially defined chambers of the Tricameral Parliament established in 1984.Of those with experience at the national level, five also have experience in regional or local government and some, such as MPP Valentino Volker and MPP Brian Edwards have experience of all three. Four NNP MPPs have prior experience in the former Natal Provincial Council and five have experiences as a local councillor. The only distinction between the level of previous political institutional experiences in the NNP and the DP concerns black MPPs. In the NNP, black MPPs have no former institutional experience at all.

Provincially specific institutional experience was gained by both black and white MPPs in the Joint Services Boards and Joint Executive Authority.[10] Seven IFP MPPs and four NNP MPPs have served in these areas. Both Frank Mdlalose and Valentino Volker served as rotating chairs of the JEA, which reinforces the importance of provincial institutional administrative experience for both the IFP and the NNP in the new parliament. MPPs that formerly served on the JSBs and came to parliament with the IFP were, with the exception of Frank Mdlalose members of the KLA but not in a senior capacity. This demonstrates a separation of the political capital derived from policy-making and service provision responsibilities. Elites were only located in one or the other and those in the policy-making arena were afforded more seniority in the provincial legislature. For example, IFP MPP Ellis Vezi was an ordinary KLA member who sat on the Tender Board, served on the Pietermaritzburg Transporation Board and was Deputy-Chairperson on one of the Joint Services Boards. His combined experiences consist of service provision and policy monitoring, but never policy-making. In contrast, the experiences of NNP MPPs demonstrate a combination of role types. For example, MPP Gordon Haygarth served as Chairperson of the Port Natal-Ebodwe JSB and was then a member of Exco.

The IFP, NNP and MF also have Asian MPPs who obtained their institutional experience in the House of Delegates. This applies to six MPPs. Again, in some cases the positions that they held were senior ones. For example, Amichand Rajbansi of the MF served on the National Liaison Committee under Chris Heunis (Minister for Constitutional Affairs) and on the National Consultative Committee under Stoffel Botha (Administrator of Natal) as Chairman

[10] For a discussion of the evolution and composition of these regional alternatives, see Chapter 2.

of the Ministers Council for Indian Affairs and as a member of Cabinet. He thus served in a semi-provincial and semi-national capacity.

In KwaZulu-Natal prior political institutional experience would appear to be an important source of political capital for the 38% of MPPs with such experience in the IFP, DP, NNP, MF and ACDP. Former political institutional experience suggests that the view may be held that such elites are a "safe bet", that they can be trusted to do the job. They may be a part of the new political elite because their political institutional experience means that they were a political elite already. However, not all political institutional experiences carry the same amount of status. In the IFP all those with previous political institutional experience in the KLA held very senior positions in the provincial parliament. In the DP, only white MPPs with previous political institutional experience have come to hold senior posts. While a high proportion of MPPs with prior experience in the practical questions of administration, legislative scrutiny and policymaking is hardly surprising, more important is that the new institutions, in part, replicated important entrenched patterns of political status within the parliamentary parties who survived from the previous dispensation.

The new political institutional format also provided a second chance for those with previous institutional experience. For example, a handful of MPPs managed to reinvent themselves in the new dispensation, even if they were guilty of gross maladministration. MPP Amichand Rajbansi, for example, was previously found to be 'unfit for any public post' by the James Commission of Inquiry in 1989 (*Natal Witness*, 1 February 1989) and dismissed from all ministerial posts. Just prior to the 1989 elections he was charged with criminal defamation, two counts of fraud, making conflicting statements under oath and contravention of the Commissions Act. Prior to the 1994 elections he formed the Minority Front that saw him returned to parliament from where he formed an alliance with the ANC that secured him a position as a Committee Chair and a much larger salary. In the case of parliamentary alliances and floor-crossing it would seem that the quality of political capital from previous institutional experiences is not under scrutiny.

Civil service experience

MPPs with civil service experience account for eight MPPs, six in the IFP and two in the NNP. Four of these MPPs also possess prior experience in a political institutional legislative or governmental capacity. Civil servants display a variety of experience types ranging from a clerk to a development officer to a Director-General. Three MPPs served the KLA as an Urban Representative and were stationed in offices outside of the KwaZulu Homeland. One such MPP described his role as,

> 'Working with people who faced forced removals and evictions … assisting people from KwaZulu who had been victims of violence outside the homeland … I assisted people with pension problems, transport problems … The bus services were owned by the KwaZulu Government and there were price problems …' (Pers. IFP Interview 28).

However, this type of civil service position was multiform and the distinctive nature of the role was blurred. This particular MPP also served as a Political Officer in the Department of the Chief Minister which, given the period of the 1980s, added a distinctly political party flavour to the grassroots service role being articulated here. Another in this category was employed as a "civil servant" to do research for and to write speeches for KLA ministers (Pers. IFP Interview 83). The research dimension included summarising the reports from ANC Radio Freedom, the radio propaganda arm of the ANC and MK, broadcast from radio stations in Zambia, Tanzania, Angola, Madagascar and Ethiopia These two examples constitute two white MPPs who came into the new legislature with the IFP having not served in any political institutional capacity at all. Working in a semi-political, semi-party, semi-KLA role earned them a place in the legislature as individuals who were party aligned.

Not all civil service roles had a political dimension to them. For example the role of IFP MPP Olaf Baloyi as former Director-General of Health in the KLA is a simple policy role. What is clear is that of the four who also had political institutional legislative or governmental experience, they obtained their civil service experience first. Hence, civil service experience per se might not constitute political capital, but simply be a natural step on the way to choosing a role as an MPP for a few.

Political party experience

Political party experience in any political system provides a wide-range of political capital. Parties may simply reward loyalists who have proved themselves as committed to the party over a long period of time. But party service also provides knowledge and commitment to the party organisation, brings the individual into contact with a wide-range of party officials and party bosses and provides an entrance point into party committees and formal and informal decision-making spaces. It provides a point of access to networks and is a space in which individuals can define themselves as a leader, prove themselves and stand out, whether formally or informally.

All MPPs have some form of political party experience. This is not surprising given that in a party list system of proportional representation a candidate first has to persuade a party to select him or her for the candidate list and some form of demonstrable commitment to the party is necessary for a political party to invest in that individual. However, the type and depth of

political party experience varies considerably from party to party and within each party. These party service types are, in part, determined by two factors. Firstly, the political environment in which the political party operated both restricted the range of party activity types that was possible and directed the types of party service in particular directions. For example, the extra-parliamentary political parties that were banned – ANC and PAC – operated in a climate of secrecy until 1990 so the range of party service was atypical. Formal party positions were often intertwined with less formal ones. In contrast, parties that were not banned or operated under the cover of a cultural movement (such as the IFP) placed more emphasis upon the formal party service types and legislative roles. Secondly, the type and depth of political experience is also, in part, determined by the particular type of party organisation (cf. Painebanco 1988). The type of party organisation determines the type of political capital that is important. For example, strongly centralised parties are more likely to place greater emphasis upon centrally organised party experiences, whereas mass branch based parties will place emphasis upon both branch and centre activities. Branch type parties are more likely to emphasize mobilisation, recruitment and propagandization of the electorate than strongly centralised parties that will emphasise leadership (cf. Duverger 1954).

According to Robert Michels, all organisations are in fact oligarchies (Michels 1962: 365). Individuals occupying leadership positions gain expertise and experience and their necessity to the party becomes entrenched. Hence, an elite hierarchy emerges. He says,

'In the catechism of party duties, the strict observance of hierarchical rules become the first article. The hierarchy comes into existence as the outcome of technical conditions, and its constitution is an essential postulate of the regular functioning of the party machine' (Michels 1962: 72).

This hierarchy sustains and reproduces itself. If this is the case, the question in the KwaZulu-Natal context is how many of the MPPs formed part of a party elite prior to coming to parliament? What roles constitute the upper echelons of this hierarchy and leadership and were the personnel that occupied them transferred into the legislature?

Eighty one MPPs have occupied senior service positions within a political party or could be seen to have significant status as a result of their commitment, prior to coming to parliament. The positions range from MK soldier, Robben Island veteran, central committee member, chairperson of a youth league to a standard party branch treasurer. MPPs have been classified into eight forms of political party experience. The first of these is standard party office bearer. At least fifty MPPs have held a position as a standard party office bearer. These include roles such as a chairperson, secretary or treasurer of a local party branch. For the minority parties, the predominant pattern is that individuals

were not party office bearers unless they had significant institutional experience in either a local, regional or national setting. Hence, a legislative career is a route to significant party office and not the other way around. The majority of these individuals who were standard party office bearers are in the IFP and the ANC, which is indicative of their development as branch based parties. Such examples include IFP MPP Nomthandazo Mkhize who served as the IFP Branch Secretary for the Newcastle district or ANC MPP Meshack Radebe who served as Chairperson of Mpumalanga. Hence, in occupying such positions MPPs would have done campaigning, recruiting and organising within a defined local area.

In addition to these standard party office bearer positions, a number of MPPs also served as office bearers for sectional groups. This is most evident in the women's sections of the IFP and the ANC. All women party members automatically become a member of the women's section of the party with their party membership. Of the MPPs in the provincial legislature, some were significant sectional office bearers beforehand. For example, IFP MPP Faith Gasa served as IFP Women's Brigade Chair and IFP MPP Abbie Mchunu as its President. In the ANC, Happy Blose served as ANC Women's League Natal Midlands Chair. It is clear that in balancing the interests within the party, both the IFP and ANC have drawn in some sectional interests and office bearers to the legislature based upon gender.

In the IFP, ANC and NP a total of 48 MPPs have party political experience in the *formal* senior decision-making structures. In the NNP, these constitute regional and/or national formal position-holding such as in the case of MPP Brian Edwards who was Natal Treasurer or MPP James Waugh who served as Provincial Secretary. In the IFP, the formal senior decision-making structures include 26 MPPs who served on the IFP Central Committee, the key decision-making body. In addition, MPPs served in a range of other senior positions.[11] In such positions, these MPPs displayed senior leadership characteristics. They were proven leaders with highly responsible party positions. Of these MPPs two thirds of those with formal senior leadership experiences in the party came to occupy senior roles in the provincial parliament.[12]

---

[11] These include the three National Chairperson's – Frank Mdlalose. Ben Ngubane and Lionel Mtshali, the Deputy-Secretary General – Inkosi Gumede, Senior Media Spokesperson – Ziba Jiyane, and the Head of the IFP Mission to Bonn – Senzo Mfayela, who was responsible for the IFPs external relations with Germany.

[12] These included, among others, IFP MEC Nyanga Ngubane who was a former IFP central committee member, as was MEC Vincent Zulu. IFP Chief Whip Inkosi Gumede who was a senior office bearer, MECs and Premier's Mdlalose, Ngubane and Mtshali who were senior office bearers.

Likewise, in the ANC, more than half of the MPPs have party experience in the *formal* senior decision-making structures. For most MPPs this is on a regional level.[13] For some ANC MPPs they also have party political experience in formal senior decision-making structures at a national level. For example MPP Cyril Xaba was Chairperson of the ANC Youth League, MPP Sipho Gcabashe was on the UDF COSATU Joint Working Committee and MPP Harry Gwala was in the most senior internal ANC structures of all – the Internal Leadership Core. The distinction between this group of MPPs and those in the IFP is that party experience in these *internal and formal* senior decision-making structures does not translate into the most senior positions in the provincial parliament. With the exception of MPP Gwala who served in the most senior internal role and became leader of the ANC in the provincial parliament from 1994-1999, all other MPPs in internal leadership positions of this nature became members of the legislature, not the executive and they served in committee. Some became committee chairpersons. Hence, while such formal internal senior decision-making roles might provide sufficient capital for a legislative role, they do not in the ANC translate into sufficient status, and hence political capital for an executive position.

A fourth category of political party experience in which a significant number of the political elite have gained experience is that of political party military structures. These political military structures may be divided into different forms. The first of these forms is that of experience within the "official" armed wing of the party. Eight MPPs (7 ANC MPPs and 1 PAC MPP) were directly involved in the official military wing of the political party to which they came to parliament with. PAC MPP Mkhwanazi, for example initially recruited APLA soldiers, and then joined the PAC military commission before becoming secretary general. In the ANC, of the seven MK veterans, three have focused experiences almost entirely in this arena (while the other four possess a combination of other senior experiences as well) and were based in primarily in exile. MEC Dumisani Makhaye, for example, joined the ANC underground in 1974 and then MK in 1976. After military and political training in exile he returned to South Africa as a political instructor in the first group of eight MK soldiers to register MK's presence in the province in 1977. In 1978 he was sent to Cuba to study politics and then for political training in Angola. He was then appointed Commander of Specialised Units of MK in the GDR to train units to infiltrate other structures in Natal, and then in 1981 returned to South Africa as

[13] It includes, among others, MPP Willies Mchunu who served as Regional Coordinator for Northern Natal, MPP Senzo Mchunu as Regional Secretary for Northern Natal, MPP Inkosi Zibuse Mlaba as the Deputy-Chairperson of the Natal Midlands and MPP John Jeffrey as Deputy-Secretary of the Natal Midlands.

the Natal Provincial Commander of MK (Pers. ANC Interview 134). According to an ANC MPP, the work of the Natal Provincial Command included,

> 'infiltrating weapons, personnel into organisations, identifying targets, … establishing revolutionary bases in Natal, training people in uprising, … propaganda machinery … it was an entire political-military strategy' (Pers. ANC Interview 134).

Below the structure of MK existed a range of other political military forms. One such example is the Self-Defence Units created predominantly in the Natal Midlands within internal political military structures linked to MK. According to an ANC MPP, at least five further MPPs, including himself, were involved in establishing SDUs for the ANC. In the midlands region, for example, ANC MPP … (X) … was involved in establishing a range of SDUs from Dambuza to Greytown and acquiring weaponry for them from MK through the Transkei (Pers. ANC Interview 94). In addition, SDU proficiency led to further MK training. There were at least four training depots in the Natal Midlands. There was one under ANC MPP … (Y) … in Willowfontein with MK trainers and a military arsenal, another in Dambuza under former ANC MPP … (Z) … which had its own arsenal and a further one in Estcourt/Loskop staffed by MK trainers, and a final one under ANC MPP … (X) … in Richmond. ANC MPP (X) described this training process as thus,

> 'people were brought in and went out … those who showed promise in the training depots would be sent to the Transkei to be trained further by the Transkei defence force under Holomisa and more MK. Many were taken out of the country then to be trained … mainly around 1992' (Pers. ANC Interview 94).

Another MPP was the leader of a SDU in Greytown. He describes his role in this way, 'in 1984 the struggle took a dramatic shift. We were told to target soft targets, people. We were told who …' (Pers. ANC Interview 124). Two MPPs involved in SDUs defected to the UDM, Sam Nxumalo before he came to parliament disillusioned with a lack of development in rural areas and Sifiso Nkabinde afterwards, claiming that the ANC were attempting to assassinate him. He was subsequently assassinated. The orchestrators of the assassination remain unknown. The IFP counterparts to the ANC SDUs were the Self-Protection Units (SPUs). At least three IFP MPPs were involved in the creation and training of SPUs. One IFP MPP was involved, for example in the conceptualisation and establishment of Mlaba Camp, a training camp based on an earlier prototype in the midlands to train IFP members in weaponry as a shield against the ANC SDUs from 1991 onwards (Pers. IFP Interview 28). Another IFP MPP was involved in acquiring the finance for the camp and the training programme (Pers. IFP Interview 28). What is notable in these political military structures is that the political elite was primarily involved in leadership roles whether in MK in exile or in internal political military structures. None of them (with the ex-

ception of Sam Nxumalo who did not come to power with a major party) were involved as a simple cell member of these units.

In addition to coordinating and directing within these political military structures, a number of MPPs were also involved in informal frontline roles of a political military nature against the opposing political party within localised politics. These roles were on the ground IFP-ANC conflict in the context of the more official political-military struggles. Whereas it is not clear that such roles were formally sanctioned, they were until 1994 certainly tolerated within the movements. Such individuals came to be *the* representative of the party within certain geographical areas and they were afforded power and respect from the movements for their strong-arm roles. At least two ANC MPPs and two IFP MPPS could be said to fall into this category.

A further category of party political experience is those MPPs who were formally sentenced to imprisonment on Robben Island. Four members of the ANC who went into the provincial parliament served sentences on Robben Island. A further ANC MPP – Ismail Meer was an accused at the 1956 Treason Trial along with Mandela before the charges were dropped. The four who served on Robben Island were Harry Gwala, Jacob Zuma, Sibusiso Ndebele and Bheki Cele. Zuma was sentenced to ten years imprisonment for conspiring to overthrow the government in 1963 after becoming a founder member of MK. Ndebele was arrested in 1976 after working under Thabo Mbeki converting black consciousness supporters to the ANC underground and recruiting them to MK. He served ten years. Bheki Cele was sentenced to six years on Robben Island in 1989 for having received military training abroad. He served one year before he was released in 1990. Harry Gwala served two terms of imprisonment on Robben Island. The first was in 1964 for sabotage and for recruiting for MK for a period of eight years. On release, he was restricted to the Pietermaritzburg area. He was sentenced again, this time to life imprisonment, under the Terrorism Act in 1976. On Robben Island he became known for his Marxist – Leninist teachings until his release in 1988 after being diagnosed with motor neuron illness.

All MPPs who had experience of serving sentences on Robben Island acquired senior positions within the provincial parliament. Harry Gwala, Jacob Zuma and Sibusiso Ndebele all served consecutively as ANC leader in parliament. Bheki Cele served as Head of Committees and then an MEC. His relatively short term on Robben Island in comparison to the other three correlates with his less senior role in parliament. In addition, although he topped the branch nomination list for the ANC in 1999, ahead of Ndebele he was then placed fourth by the ANC selectors proving the centralised nature of leadership appointments in the party. Nevertheless, considered veterans and old guard,

these ANC MPPs were considered to have earned their positions in parliament through tremendous loyalty and sacrifice for the movement.

A number of roles played by MPPs do not fall directly into the category of political party experience, but because of the political climate and the collapse of clear distinctions between parties and other organisations they can be considered party aligned or at least party associates. The first of these are the civic organisations. Much of the MK internal organising took place within civic structures (see Chapter 2). At least ten MPPs have political experience within the civic structures. Of these one became an IFP MPP and the other nine ANC MPPs. In fact, the IFP MPP Vitus Mvelase was a founder member of Umlazi Residents Association in 1973 and then Vice-Chairman in the 1970s before the ANC merged UMRA into MK. The other nine MPPs all have experience in ANC aligned civics. These include, for example, Lungi Gcabashe in the Kwa-Mashu Residents Association, Mjabulise Madondo who was central to the ANC aligned Msinga Peace and Development Committee, and Zweli Mkhize who headed the ANC front – the Willowfontein Community Committee, among others. Within these civics, MPPs actively recruited ANC members, and some MK members, organised protests and sowed the seeds of dissatisfaction against the state.

A second political party aligned form of experiences is trade union work. At least ten MPPs were directly involved in trade union work, eight from the ANC and two from the IFP. In the case of the IFP MPPs, one was directly involved in the establishment of the United Workers Union of South Africa (UWUSA), the attempt to set up a union structure affiliated to the party to counteract the growing power of ANC aligned COSATU. The other MPP is IFP MPP Vitus Mvelase who was a member of SACTU before it became a shield for recruitment into MK. In terms of SACTU two ANC MPPs have direct political experience with the union. Harry Gwala was the brains behind the transformation of SACTU into a recruiting agency for MK and Ismail Meer served as its Natal President. Five further ANC MPPs were primarily involved in COSATU. These are Sipho Gcabashe, Mike Mabuyakhulu, John Jeffrey, Thami Mohlomi and Paulos Ngcobo. These MPPs served the unions, usually in senior positions. For example, Sipho Gcabashe began his experience in the union structures in the Transport and General Workers Union (TGWU) in 1979 and became an affiliate to COSATU and then served COSATU in the COSATU-UDF Joint Working Committee as did Thami Mohlomi. Likewise, Paulos Ngcobo served in COSATU as the KwaZulu-Natal South Regional Secretary and the Provincial Secretary. Willies Mchunu gained extensive union experience in the Metal and

Allied Workers Union (MAWU)[14] and then was part of the Mass Democratic Movement structures as Regional Education Officer for the National Union of Metalworkers of South Africa (NUMSA) in Northern Natal. In these eight ANC cases the boundaries of political party and trade union work were not clear. In some cases, recruitment into a union and organising on behalf of the union often meant recruitment into the ANC structures and organising on ANC initiated or aligned campaigns. In other cases, as in the distinctly workerist MAWU and NUMSA involvement in campaigns was in an attempt to promote a distinctly working class flavour to them while retaining independence.

A number of other party related political experiences include a handful of MPPs. Indeed many of the ANC MPPs were also indirectly affiliated with the UDF and then the MDM, either through civic structures or trade unions. However, for some their role in the internal political movement was much more central. Sibusiso Ndebele, for example, on his release from Robben Island in 1987 used the internal democratic structures to co-establish the ANC in Southern Natal. Another individual but very senior ANC party political role was that of intelligence. While many MPPs were directly involved in the transmission of intelligence information, Jacob Zuma became Head of ANC intelligence in 1987 after serving on the ANC's Political-Military Committee and heading up all underground structures. Less significant, but still important party related experiences include serving as an editor of a party aligned publication. In the ANC, MEC Dumisani Makhaye served as editor of Mayibuye[15] in exile and IFP MPP Konigkramer as editor of Ilanga,[16] seeking to propagandise and display the views of the movements. Finally, five MPPs, all whom came to parliament with the IFP worked previously as researchers at the Inkatha Institute. Of these three are white and one Asian who had no previous political institutional experience beforehand.

The political elite who came to parliament brought with them a diverse range of party and party related political experience. For the most part they were already a political elite in a very specific context. Of the two major parties, the IFP MPPs brought with them much more traditional forms of party political experiences. In contrast, the ANC MPPs, because of the hostile context in which the party operated brought less conventional experience to the legislature. ANC MPPs also differed in two other key ways. Firstly, the most senior ANC members in the provincial parliament demonstrate multiform political experi-

---

[14] MAWU was an affiliate of FOSATU which gave the organisation a distinctly workerist flavour.

[15] Mayibuye was the newspaper of the ANC from 1991 to 1998.

[16] Ilanga was founded as the first isiZulu language newspaper in 1903 by Reverend John Dube, first President of the ANC. It has been in continuous existence since then. In 1987 it was bought by Mandla Matla, an Inkatha owned company.

ences. The most senior members of parliament have party political experience from exile, were involved in senior party work either inside or outside of South Africa, or both. They recruited for the movement either ideologically or militarily, they conceptualised policy and strategy and they implemented ANC directives. Several of the most senior were also imprisoned on Robben Island for a long period of time. They include, for example, Jacob Zuma, Harry Gwala, Sibusiso Ndebele and Dumisani Makhaye, leaders with a particular form of status within the province as a consequence of these combined experiences.

Secondly, the type of party political experiences acquired by ANC MPPs who became senior in the provincial parliament is also region dependent and in turn, this has determined their longevity in parliament. For example, senior MPPs from Southern Natal are more likely to have been recruited into MK, and/or spent time in senior party work in exile and possibly served time on Robben Island. They include, for example, Jacob Zuma, Sibusiso Ndebele and Dumisani Makhaye. Their main political activities were either directed from exile or they themselves directed others from exile. They were linked into the broader strategies of liberation of the national movement of the ANC and they were involved in the conceptualisation of these strategies and their implementation in Natal. They moved in and out of South Africa and directed others in the struggle locally. This demonstrates a particular form of political capital. As such the broader strategic views of these MPPs were linked with and coincided with the national movement (in the same way as within the earlier ANC). Over the two terms of parliament, these MPPs have continued to maintain their seniority in the parliament. In contrast, in another region – the Natal Midlands – MPPs shared different experiences to those from Southern Natal. These MPPs were more likely to have political experience gained from being at the frontline of political violence inside South Africa. They recruited for MK, were involved in transforming movements internally in a hands-on capacity, secured territory for the movement and were involved in the training of SDUs, the use of the weapons imported and some of the worst battles between the ANC and IFP. Furthermore, (again like in the earlier ANC) this group of parliamentarians did not always conform to national political imperatives and the midlands struggle sometimes took on a momentum and a character of its own. In the midlands some MPPs also received their political experience in association with these frontline struggles but not in the direct struggles themselves. This included violence monitors for example. In the provincial parliament, this group of MPPs have gradually diminished as the context of politics has changed in the new political dispensation. So while in 1994 politicians, such as Harry Gwala, Sifiso Nkabinde and Shakes Cele, had significant political capital as a result of those frontline struggles that capital gradually diminished as the spaces through which politics took place changed.

Different types of political experience lead to different forms of political capital. It is clear that for the formerly white only parties and Asian party, the political capital is primarily constituted from a previous institutional political experience or experiences. This shows that for those parties the role of a parliamentarian is a professional career. To get into office, one must already have served in office. In the case of the other parties this is not the case.

In the IFP, 33 out of 79 MPPs had prior political experience in a political institutional role. This constitutes the largest single bloc of MPPs in any one party. The remainder of these MPPs are drawn from a vast array of different political circumstances such as party political work in a research capacity or development work. The political experiences that such MPPs bring to parliament ranges from expertise in legislative work (in a parliament with no opposition party), policy formulation work, experience in research on policy issues and party mobilisation experience. Some bring local knowledge and some bring provincial knowledge. In contrast, in the ANC those who came to power in the provincial legislature bring virtually no policy or legislative skills with them. They are drawn from a political elite whose main experience is in political mobilisation and political strategy, some of which is military strategy, and the integration of these strategies into civil society. So the IFP and ANC MPPs bring very different experiences with them into the provincial parliament, some of which is useful for a parliamentary role but most of which, in democratic political institutions, has no bearing on parliamentary work. Not all of the roles previously held by the political elite bring the same level of political capital. The different experiences do not carry with them the same level of prestige but there is a level of continuity among some of the political elite in terms of seniority in the roles they previously held and those that they came to hold provincially.

Patterns of party political identification

The reasons and the circumstances by which the political elite came to identify with their party political home, and choose one party over another is a key factor in understanding their party and legislature affiliations. It in part explains alliances, coalition possibilities and fluidity in party caucuses and in the legislature. In some cases the reasons that political elites chose their political home is grounded in the principles, policies and values that the party of choice is deemed to represent. In other cases, affiliations were a consequence of lack of choice and circumstances of chance. In some cases, the justification for choosing a political home has diminished as a consequence of changing political contexts. In this section I explore the reasons for the choice of one political party over another by the political elite.

Current party political principles, values and policies

Sixty eight percent of the political elite identified current party political principles, values and policies as the reason for their political affiliation with the party that they came to power with. The greatest concentration of these MPPs is found in the IFP, DP, PAC and ACDP, with the least concentration found in the ANC, NNP, MF and UDM. There are four different types of current party associations that can be found. Firstly, of this 68%, 53% of the political elite identified socio-economic development objectives as the reason for their choice of political party. This, as the single biggest reason, is hardly surprising given the socio-economic needs that remain unaddressed in South Africa. However, this particular broad association does not provide any substantive differentiation between the parties as the development goals of parties are essentially the same. All want to address poverty in KwaZulu-Natal, and a wide range of public policy priorities were discussed. These include housing, unemployment, health care and education as well as poverty per se. Education as a method to address poverty was discussed as a key objective of almost all MPPs who chose the DP and the NNP and was a key priority for the lone PAC MPP, but was rarely discussed among IFP and ANC MPPs. What is surprising is that 47% of these MPPs did not identify socio-economic objectives as a key reason for choosing the political party they came to power with and many of those that did discuss broad socio-economic objectives also gave other reasons (see later discussion).

Within the socio-economic development objectives that were identified, 76% of IFP MPPs identified rural poverty as a key reason for choosing the IFP as their political home. These MPPs firmly believed three factors. First, that only the IFP had the knowledge and understanding of rural issues in KwaZulu-Natal to address rural poverty. Second that only the IFP cared about rural poverty and, hence only with the IFP in power would rural poverty be addressed. Third that only the IFP had attempted to address rural poverty in the past. There was also a clear correlation in this grouping between rural poverty as their key public policy priority and the IFP as the only vehicle through which that aim would be addressed. In the ANC and other parties there was not the same level of specification. Only 30% percent of ANC MPPs discussed poverty at all, and those who did so discussed it in much broader terms than in the other parties. For example, one MPP stated that the reason he identified with the ANC is because,

> 'There is still unfinished business. People still live in poverty and it is worsening. The rate of unemployment has increased. Some of the people that I knew in the 1980s were not fortunate enough to get into education. They are caught up in a web of poverty … only with the ANC in power will these things change' (Pers. ANC Interview 57).

Indeed, there were other MPPs who defected and who claimed that they had chosen their political home as a consequence of the ANC failing to address the socio-economic needs of the population. One MPP argued,

> 'In the community that I had been heavily involved in there had been casualties and no development. I said to the ANC that before the (1999) election there must be at least one tap of clean water in that area. There were no basic services … Nothing happened … I told the ANC that they had betrayed us and I will believe no more promises. I told them I was going over to the UDM' (Pers. Interview 124).

Indeed continued poverty, particularly rural poverty in KwaZulu-Natal, has been a mobilising tool at each election since 1994. In the recent 2009 elections highly visible fifteen metre posters in Ulundi of former ANC Minister (then Premier) Sibusiso Ndebele were complemented with similar ones of Zweli Mkhize and Bheki Cele advertising the work of key ANC ministries. Using government funds the ANC also held imbizos throughout rural KwaZulu-Natal and placed government funded newspaper adverts linking government poverty alleviation initiatives to the provincial ANC. In highly targeted service delivery initiatives, the incumbency of the ANC at the national level was utilized in specific areas of northern rural KwaZulu-Natal to target voters who have traditionally voted IFP. In Nkandla, Uthungulu (Jacob Zuma's birthplace) water and electrification projects were underway and national energy minister accompanied Zuma to a grand opening of a substation to electrify 10,500 homes and nine schools. This is in addition, in the same area, to a pasture fencing project, the provision of computers to schools in Nkandla and a new service centre for the department of Home Affairs to provide better access to social development grants, identity documents and pensions (Francis 2009a: 156-157).

The reality of this rural socio-economic development in KwaZulu-Natal is that it is highly targeted in the district of Uthungulu, Zuma's birthplace and the place through which the provincial ANC has attempted to push into the traditional IFP voting community. It is not widespread throughout rural KwaZulu-Natal. In Abaqulusi, one district away, 71% of people are still without potable water (a national government competence). Prior to the 2004 elections they were promised water in the ANC campaign. Large scale pipes were brought into the area. The electorate overwhelmingly voted for the IFP. The pipes were never hooked up (cf. Francis 2009a: 157).

The new Zuma presidency in South Africa promises a refocus on rural development with the creation of a new national ministry specifically on this area. However, how much of this will be highly targeted service delivery at the behest of national rather than provincial elites is open to question. Zuma faces the challenge of providing basic services to less visible, structurally poor rural communities without neglecting the highly mobilised and visible urban voters

(predominantly ANC voters) who have high expectations of job creation in the near future. Whereas the concept of poverty alleviation in KwaZulu-Natal harnesses voters at election time, the fact that only 30% of ANC MPPs in KwaZulu-Natal discussed poverty at all does not translate into the political capacity to meet those expectations and to fulfil the Zuma promises through the policy portfolios in the legislature. This is all the more so given the low educational levels and professional skills of the ANC elite. In parts of KwaZulu-Natal where pre-election promises were made to address basic needs that did not then materialize, voters in local government bi-elections have withdrawn support from the ANC (cf. Francis 2009a: 161). Within the national ANC alliance, Zuma faces an increasingly nationalist, populist and militant rhetoric from the Youth League President – Julius Malema – offering direct intervention in the economy, increased transformation of the state through black economic empowerment and the abandonment of the free market economy as solutions to poverty. If the provincial elite fail to address poverty, the Zuma presidency faces severe populist challenges from its youth wing.

The key socio-economic development objective that was identified by the majority of MPPs was the question of land. Almost 70% of IFP MPPs, a handful of ANC MPPs and the sole PAC MPP discussed land as a priority. However, it was discussed in different terms by ANC and IFP MPPs. ANC MPPs discussed land hunger more generally and associated this with the provision of houses and other resources such as water and sanitation. In the IFP, MPPs were clear that they supported the IFP because they believed that communal land ownership was the best way in which to guard against abject poverty. One MEC stated,

> 'Our approach is a traditional African one … All resources should be shared by all members of society … (to) … guard against others from acquiring wealth to the detriment of others like in some capitalist societies. The poor are at the mercy of those with skills. This is best expressed in the distribution of land, our only fixed resource. Communal land is being held in trust for the generations to come and traditional leadership have a very important role to play here as trustees' (Pers. IFP Interview 66).

A final area in which MPPs stressed the current prevalent socio-economic development objectives of the party in which they came to power with was in relation to the economy and what they perceived as the economic policy of the party they chose. Eight of the eleven DP MPPs stressed the importance of free market economic principles and practice as the best way through which to develop the province and as a foundational principle of the DP that they ascribe to. In the IFP approximately 30% of MPPs can be categorised as supportive of free market principles, but with a more nuanced vision of how links between business and politics can assist with development. One MPP said, for example,

> 'I began the LEARN fund and I was involved in projects where I would assist business in KwaZulu-Natal to meet black chiefs and KLA members … I led industry to the Indaba in 1986 after I led a trade delegation to the UK. I invited the Durban Chamber of Commerce and we established good links … The Indaba was supported in the UK … The Nats were fools. They turned it down … Buthelezi was the only black leader who understood the economy … My main interests are the airport and the port of Durban. This province has every resource it needs to make it the most successful. The IFP understands that' (Pers. IFP Interview 49).

Linked to the socio-economic objectives in which they perceive their party to represent is another area of current party political associations; that is the perception held among MPPs of which socio-economic constituencies of people the party represents. Again, there was a substantial difference between the MPPs from the IFP and the ANC. ANC MPPs typically responded in broader terms pointing to the party as a 'broad church' (Pers. ANC Interview 109) of constituents and interests in which 'all are accommodated' (Pers. ANC Interview 53). The few MPPs that did choose to be more specific, pointed to "the poor" more generally and claimed that there was no substantive difference between the constituencies of people that they, the ANC represented and that the IFP represented. For ANC MPPs, this was not then, a substantial reason as to why they chose their political home. In contrast, in the IFP the majority of MPPs clearly stressed that the party was the party of the rural poor. Those that did not stress this (15%) articulated their core business as concerned with the urban poor. These were primarily MPPs who had experienced urban poverty themselves and had come into contact with the party through their own experiences of their development needs. For example, one MPP said,

> 'I represent the urban poor, but the two are not separated … In KwaMashu and Ntuzuma the issue was over houses. There were many people on the government list and no new houses. We occupied the land … We couldn't wait … there were 18 in my family. There were no roads … in terms of water, there was none. It was very difficult for all the families. I contacted the Department of the Interior … they gave us KwaZulu government trucks to deliver water to the tanks we had built … they scraped the roads for us … KwaZulu was Inkatha. So you see, Inkatha did this for us' (Pers. IFP Interview 60).

Despite MPPs in the DP asserting that they represented all socio-economic and racial interests in South Africa, IFP MPPs perceived the DP as being the 'party of white business' (Pers. IFP Interview 131). In terms of racial representation, both ANC and NNP MPPs believed that a key reason for choosing their party was because of its multi-racial character. One ANC MPP, for example, claimed that a key reason for his choice of political home was the 'tolerance expressed in the party for all race groups' (Pers. ANC Interview 27). Another ANC MPP discussed in racial terms how 'the real victors are generous' (Pers. ANC Interview 134) through their incorporation of all racial groups.

Similarly, MPPs in the NNP discussed how they were impressed with the party because of its reformist path in which it had opened its doors to all races. This was perceived by NNP MPPs across the racial spectrum as one of the most important reasons for their choice of affiliation, in both newer members and older members alike. Hence, questions of identity married with perceptions of constituency drive some associative patterns.

A third area in which current party associations are the key reason for the choice of political home is in the principles that form the core basis of the party and the character which is deemed to constitute its core essence. In all cases, MPPs who pointed to the values that make up the party principles and character belonged either to the IFP, PAC or the DP. For example, in the DP nine out of eleven MPPs stressed the party principles of good governance, anti-corruption and the importance of a democratic opposition as key reasons for their choice of party political affiliation, all values upon which the DP took a position and campaigned on. Another key principle upon which DP MPPs agree draws them to their political home is that of federalism. Eight of eleven DP MPPs stressed the importance to them of the federal character of the party as opposed to a centralist party political structure. Federalism, as a concept, is also held dear by twenty percent of IFP MPPs, but the key distinction between those who associate with the DP and the IFP is that the IFP MPPs see federalism as a value to be aspired to in the specific form of the state and not in terms of political party structure. In these cases, the majority of IFP MPPs who consider federalism as a key reason for their choice of political home are white or asian, indicating a racial division in interpretations of the party's real core values.

Two further intrinsically linked principles are central to IFP MPPs and the PAC MPP in choosing their political home. They are firstly, the concept of ubuntu-botho and secondly, the prevailing style of political etiquette in the party. At least 70% of IFP MPPs discussed the concept of ubuntu-botho[17] as a core reason why they associate with the IFP as did the lone PAC MPP as to why he associates with the PAC. For example, one IFP MPP defined ubuntu-botho in the following classic terms and claimed them for the IFP:

> 'the IFP was founded on the principles of ubuntu, the principle of humanity. You must respect others, including your elders, as you would respect yourself. We only exist through others. These principles are carried through today. The IFP is a cosmopolitan party based on respect of each other' (Pers. IFP Interview 51).

Indeed, not only did the IFP MPPs see this principle as constituting the core character of the party but they believed that it was only the IFP that really had this as a value to be desired. For example, one IFP MPP stated, 'so the principle

[17] Ubuntu-Botho is a form of African humanism and the key idea in attempting to give an indigenous cast to South Africa's emerging political culture.

of ubuntu-botho is an ideology which the other parties are trying to copy, but they don't, they can't. They don't understand it, it isn't their essence' (Pers. IFP Interview 99). Similarly, another MPP claimed that 'there has been a breakdown in morality. I believe in ubuntu. There must be respect for elders and for youth and society must be brought back to normality. I support the place of tradition. The respect for women has gone. The ANC made the country ungovernable, they have done this' (Pers Interview 67). Linked to this is the concept of political etiquette and political style. Even MPPs who did not mention the concept of ubuntu-botho discussed the prevailing political style in the IFP as one of 'respect for each other' (Pers. IFP Interview 34), 'dignity' (Pers. IFP Interview 18) and 'very dignified' (Pers. IFP Interview 131) and 'disciplined' (Pers. IFP Interview 106) referring to the way in which party business is conducted. There is no parallel discourse in any of the other political parties and this sets the IFP MPPs and the lone PAC MPP apart from others. However, the MPPs who discussed the concept of ubuntu-botho and political style are primarily black. Hence, it would seem that the associative value of this discourse is racially constructed and white IFP MPPs do not see it as a core value that determined their choice of party.

The final type of current party political association held by MPPs is in ideology. Ideology was a core determining factor for MPPs in the DA, IFP and ANC. However, it was for most parties the least mentioned reason for choice of political home. In the DP, seven out of 11 MPPs described themselves as liberal and discussed the party in terms of its liberal principles. There was, however, one exception. That is Roger Burrows, provincial party leader, who specified his social democratic principles rather than liberal principles. Others who described themselves as liberal as a reason for the choice of political party were found in the ANC and the IFP. However, in the ANC, these individuals only served in the first term of parliament and constructed their discussion of liberal principles alongside the principles of multiracialism in the party. One such MPP, for example, is ANC MPP Ismail Meer who formed the Liberal Study Group at Sastri College and served only in the period of the first legislature, 1994-1999.

One set of ideological values that cuts across the IFP, ANC and PAC is the concept of black consciousness. For example, one ANC MPP described his choice of home thus, 'I was mostly influenced by black consciousness. The basic message "black man, equal and proud" appealed. Through Griffiths Mxenge[18] I began to understand the ANC, and the ANC leadership were more

[18] Griffiths Mxenge was a lawyer and former ANC political prisoner who was assassinated in 1981. In 1975 he was in communication with Steve Biko, Robert Sobukwe and Zeth Mothopeng (the most senior PAC leader after Sobukwe) about the

well known than the PAC. I read more about Mandela than Sobukwe. The party accommodated our views' (Pers. ANC Interview 87). In the IFP, the following sentiments are so widely held among black MPPs that they may be deemed as typical.

> 'I was one of the people in the *old* PAC. There is basically no big difference between the old PAC and the IFP … The old PAC was very African … The IFP represents African values and its core essence is very African, like the old PAC …' (Pers. IFP Interview 116).
>
> 'We wanted to revive the old ANC, the ANC before it joined with the communists, the non-violent African organisation. Our constitution for Inkatha was the same. We all supported those values back then' (Pers. IFP Interview 74).
>
> 'As a young man I was aligned to the ideas of black consciousness. I lived in a rural area and the IFP was very development driven. I subscribed to the ideas of Steve Biko and supported the IFP' (Pers. IFP Interview 78).

A key difference between the IFP and the ANC is in the way in which MPPs view the core ideological values of the party. In the IFP, the majority of black MPPs view the party as constituting definable and limited ideological values but in the ANC the majority of MPPs do not. For example, one ANC MPP discussing ideology claimed,

> 'There are signs in the broadness of the ANC of how far it has progressed. Its' discerning quality is that it is a broad church and can thus accommodate trends within it … communist members, capitalist members … There are no problems within the ANC in these relationships. The ANC accepts everyone. It is essential to accommodate everyone' (Pers. ANC Interview 87).

Hence, those MPPs who set ideology as a core reason for their party political choice in the ANC do so in the belief that their core ideological position may not be the central ideology within the party, or on the basis that ideology as a construct and value to be held dear is less central to the ANC than to the IFP, DP and PAC with other reasons for their affiliation holding more importance to them.

MPPs had multi-faceted reasons linked to current political values, principles and issues for their affiliations to the political parties that they came to power with. Despite this, two factors are clear which separate the political elite by party. The first is that only the majority of, but not all, IFP, DP and the lone PAC MPPs make clear and unwavering distinctions as to why they are affiliated with their political home. These reasons are based upon policies, values and ideology. Secondly, for the majority of ANC MPPs their political affiliation to

---

possibility of a unified resistance movement (p.149). He was also the instructing attorney in the PAC terrorism trial in Bethel in 1977 in which Mothopeng and 17 others were tried for terrorism (cf. Karis ad Gerhart 1997: 286-289).

the party is not based upon clear distinctions of values, policies and ideology, but on other factors altogether.

Past party political principles, values and policies

Despite subscribing to current party political principles and values, at least 40% of MPPs associate with their political party on the basis of party political principles and values of the past. There are four forms of past principles which MPPs subscribe to. The first of these, and the most commonly held across the political elite from MPPs of different parties centre upon the form of the struggle adopted by the party during the apartheid period and the MPPs own allegiance with the strategy. In most cases, support for one party also correlates with a lack of support for another that was perceived to have followed a strategy in antithesis with that supported. IFP MPPs in this category most commonly pointed to the IFP position on sanctions, ungovernability and the armed struggle as a key reason for their political affiliation. Twenty-eight IFP MPPs did not support the sanctions and disinvestments strategies of other political parties. As one said, 'I looked at the parties and I made my choice … I did not believe in sanctions because they would just make people suffer … Since we have been free we have suffered economically because most companies that left under sanctions have not returned' (Pers. IFP Interview 60).

In addition, 42 IFP MPPs did not believe in the armed struggles of the ANC/SACP and PAC. Instead, one of the key reasons for their associations with the IFP was as a consequence of the party strategy of non-violence. The following quotations are typical sentiments of IFP MPPs.

> 'When I joined Inkatha I was against the concept of achieving the liberation of this country through the armed struggle because I was aware that South Africa was armed to the teeth, and that no African country or even a combination thereof could ever take South Africa militarily … I also knew that if there was to be an armed struggle … everything would be destroyed … I also believe that the pen is mightier than the sword … and believed that, at the end of the day, the politics of negotiation as against the politics of armed struggle will at the end prevail, as was the case in South Africa. We were right … this country achieved its liberation and freedom out of the negotiated settlement' (Pers. IFP Interview 51).
>
> 'We wanted to revive the ANC non-violent organisation' (Pers IFP. MEC Interview 74).
>
> 'When Dr. Buthelezi introduced Inkatha he said "non-violence". I said, "let me be part of that organisation". I was following a man against violence. In the armed struggle innocent people were killed. The UDF were putting tyres around people's necks with petrol and burning them. The ANC supported the UDF in this' (Pers. IFP Interview 65).
>
> 'The armed struggle could not work in South Africa. Only negotiations could work … The IFP were talking about non-violence as an alternative' (Pers. IFP Interview 92).

In addition, to the strategy of non-violent liberation as a reason for their affinity to the IFP, at least 18 MPPs stressed that the ANC policy of ungovernability was a reason for their affiliation with the IFP. As one argued,

> 'The IFP was defending those harassed by the ANC … There were lots of boycotts and strikes in the midlands … so the unemployed would take a temporary job at the factories. They needed work so they could eat. The UDF killed those taking temporary jobs. They just needed to eat … I got involved … I would hire trucks to take workers into town if COSATU wanted to boycott and if people wanted to work …' (Pers. IFP Interview 65).

Finally, there are a group of MPPs whose affiliation to the IFP is based upon their perceptions of a communist state that the ANC would usher in the post-1990 period. The following statements are typical examples of these sentiments.

> 'I didn't like the ANC because I suppose I was a victim of the communist bogey. I also had a profound fundamental problem with the armed struggle … I am not sorry that I left the DP … it was just touch and go as to which party to go to' (Pers. IFP Interview 16).
>
> 'When I joined the IFP Buthelezi had heard me in zulu, in full cry, speaking on the injustices of the previous regime and the imposed doctrine of socialism to come under the ANC' (Pers. IFP Interview 43).

These MPPs whose affiliations to the IFP are based upon non-violence, anti-sanctions and lack of support for the ANC's policy of ungovernability and communist tendencies may be divided into three groups. In the first group, are predominantly black MPPs who believed fundamentally that violence and ungovernability as any form of strategy was wrong and that sanctions and communism would hurt the poor. They were either founder members of the IFP who sought an alternative strategy to that of the ANC or had very long affiliations with the party and their affiliations are based upon strategies that they conceptualised and devised. In the second group, again made up of predominantly black MPPs, these individuals were at the frontline of black on black violence, sanctions and ungovernability in the province between the ANC and IFP and their views are as a direct consequence of their protracted critical experiences. Their affinity to the IFP is deep rooted and long lasting. For the most part, although this method of affiliation is based upon politics of the past, these MPPs are long time party veterans who have been assimilated into the party to such an extent that another political home would be inconceivable to them. In addition, most have other reasons for their affiliation to the party that locks them into the party in other ways. As veterans, many play a central role in the decision-making and direction of the party. So, while the debates over armed struggle or non-violent negotiations, sanctions or anti-sanctions, or governability and ungovernability are no longer central to the politics of the province, many MPPs possess a long memory of politics centred on these debates and the

conflicts surrounding them and have developed party loyalties on other levels and hence, remain deeply committed to their political party. In contrast, a third group of IFP MPPs who are predominantly white or asian are the newcomers to the IFP and were not sufficiently assimilated into the party to find affinity on a range of other levels. They have had no direct experience of the war in the province and do not specify current party political principles or values for reasons for their affinity. They chose the IFP because of the principles of the ANC in the past. When the armed struggle ended and the socialist doctrine was not implemented all that remained was their need to play a role in a black based political party in the provincial government. Hence, this third group constitute all of the defectors from the IFP to the ANC and the majority of the white and asian MPPs who left the party during the first term of office. In this group, eight white and asian IFP MPPs said that one of the key reasons that they chose the IFP was because they wanted to belong to a black-based political party in the post-1990 period. This indicates a concern for a legislative future, rather than a desire to promote party policies.

While IFP MPPs stressed their allegiance to the party as a consequence of anti-ANC communist tendencies, some ANC MPPs discussed their allegiance to the ANC in terms of policies and principles of the Left Wing. For the most part, those who used the term "socialism", however, did not serve after the first term of office. Instead, newer MPPs manage to equate past left wing policies of the ANC with a right of centre party, integrating outdated and outmoded policies in the discourse of the present as reasons for why they are affiliated to a party today. For example, one MPP claimed,

> 'When I actually look at the Freedom Charter it tells me that this covers everything, my whole life. I have a firm belief that the Freedom Charter is advancing and improving the life of the people. This is the party for me because it is clearly spelt out in the Freedom Charter that it addresses the needs of the people in everything' (Pers. ANC Interview 109).

In 1996, the introduction of the Growth, Empoyment and Redistribution strategy (GEAR) as the primary policy of job creation and economic growth in South Africa indicated a demonstrable shift in public policy to the right. GEAR provided comfort to the market with an emphasis on privatization, tariff and deficit reduction and government "rightsizing". GEAR was far removed from the socialist ideals of the Freedom Charter of 1955 which promised the restoration, to the people, of national and mineral wealth, the ownership of banks and monopoly, the free occupation of land and the lowering of rents and house prices. Hence, these MPPs either believe their own rhetoric by not seeing that the party has shifted to the right politically, or are able to integrate the past as on a continuum with the present. In 1997 Peter Mokaba (now deceased former

member of the ANC Youth League) claimed that 'the Freedom Charter had always aimed to build a capitalist South Africa (Cronin & Nzimande 1998 in Lodge 2002: 30). These tensions in the struggle for a socialist or nationalist vision of a future South Africa (articulated in chapter 2) have a long history and form a part of the present struggles as well as those of the past. Linked to this is the concept of the ANC as "the true" liberation movement, no matter what policy positions the party takes in the present. One MPP in KwaZulu-Natal justified his affiliation to the ANC by saying, 'the ANC has a long history, longer than any party. It was first formed here as a provincial organisation. Our Kings belonged to the ANC … We liberated South Africa. To belong anywhere else would be a betrayal' (Pers. ANC MEC Interview 134). Here, the inference is that the party demands loyalty and affinity in the present because of the past. Hence, despite the irrelevance of the Freedom Charter in current positions that the party takes, those who joined as a consequence of left wing aspirations are compelled to loyalty in the present because of the status of the party history. This is not an unusual feature of politics in Africa. Often the ideological discourse of socialism enabled the integration of a heterogenous political elite; that is, 'its adoption as the unifying code of the political class usually happened when this class was highly divided' (Bayart 1993: 173-174; cf. Decalo 1979, Jowitt 1979).

Some MPPs chose their party affiliation in the past as a consequence of becoming inspired by the party leader or leadership. At least nine IFP MPPs and 3 NNP MPPs and 1 ANC MPP were enthused by Buthelezi, De Klerk and Mandela respectively. In all cases, MPPs were impressed by what they saw as the courage of these leaders in standing up to other powerful constituencies that did not agree with their viewpoint. In the NNP, the three MPPs who were impressed with De Klerk are all non-white. Hence, they display a conservatism towards the ANC, did not hold sufficient political capital to be IFP and were able to equate a sense of racial forgiveness with the reformist path of De Klerk in the late 1980s and early 1990s. In the IFP, the majority of MPPs that are white or asian are also strongly anti-sanctions or saw non-violence as the only liberation solution. In addition they are Christian. These MPPs interaction with the IFP prior to 1991 was predominantly limited to the speeches of the party leadership and the public policy stances that he made. Thus their early links to the party was through the man himself.

A final reason for which MPPs chose the affiliation of their current political home is because they felt they had no other choice. Fifty two percent of ANC MPPs fall into this category with very few expressing other concurrent reasons. These ANC MPPs were not exposed to other organisations and so to be political meant to join what was available. Those organisations that were available in their geographical were either ANC or ANC affiliates which took these individ-

uals on a road to greater involvement with the party. The following statements are typical.

> 'I became political through COSAS.[19] Clermont was highly politicised. Maybe if I had lived in the north I would not necessarily have come to the ANC. There was no COSAS there' (Pers. ANC Interview 57).
>
> 'There were no other political organisations. The first time I heard of the PAC was when I came back (from exile to implement MK operations) …' (Pers. ANC MEC Interview 134).
>
> 'For students, there were very few organisations that were legal. For students, SASO was the only organisation that existed. So I took that path' (Pers. ANC Interview 87).
>
> 'There were no other organisations then in KwaMashu. There was only the UDF, … then with the UDF I became involved in MDM structures' (Pers. ANC Interview 71).
>
> 'I became involved through my family … in Mozambique … there were no other organisations … we linked up with Mozambican youth and commemorated ANC campaigns' (Pers. ANC Interview 113).

Hence, chance is one of the key reasons for ANC MPPs choosing their political affiliation with the ANC. Such selection is limited by the structural consitions by which parties could organise and the occupation of political space by the ANC as it became institutionalized in the civic movements in the late 1980s and 1990s. Without an alternative, these MPPs gradually became part of the dominant movement, rather than consciously choosing a movement with which they had a deeper ideological affinity. This is in stark contrast to IFP, DP and PAC MPPs whose key reasons for joining the party reflect the values, policies and ideology of their political home, rather than a need to be political, and this being the only way. As is indicated in the second quotation, these MPPs became bound more firmly into the party as time progressed, sometimes without being aware of alternative viewpoints or value systems. The potential implications of the need to be political are that these MPPs are less ideologically driven than others and potentially more firmly tied into the legislature than to the political party.

Conclusion

The political elite in KwaZulu-Natal were already an elite before they came to parliament but not solely and primarily in socio-economic terms. They are an activist elite of the electorate, of their political parties and of the political experiences they hold. In countries that operate a party list system of proportional representation, the potential for the political elite to form a political class is

[19] COSAS was affiliated to the UDF.

greatest as the lists are by-and-large established by the higher ranks that set the rules. In this case, one may speak of not one, but of many political classes. The political elite in KwaZulu-Natal are connected with political power, both in the past and in the present. The senior position holders have certain political experiences, and those experience types are dependent upon the parties with which they came to office with. In this way, they monopolise the administration of political careers through party political knowledge. They coalesce with people in their own image, elites who have been "blooded" by sharing similar political experiences. These shared experiences contribute to a common identity. The senior political elites in parliament have recalibrated their status in the new parliament. The political classes in KwaZulu-Natal coalesce around parties, and these classes co-exist. However, the potential for the transformation of these fractured political classes into one political class exists. This is because the currencies of political capital are mainly symbolic. They are based upon political experiences. In the ANC, they are further based upon a need to be political, rather than policy preferences, which in turn creates a need to live from politics. Because the political capital is predominantly symbolic, based on respect, values, experiences, shared identity, it also contributes to closing off power from other elites. Hence, their experience of a common income or of the increasing professionalisation of politics is not what contributes to the myriad of political classes. Rather, the political background of the political elite that is simultaneously shared, and yet distinct, originating as it did in the period of struggle politics and immediate post-war period in KwaZulu-Natal creates divisions among the elite that are somewhat and sometimes superficial, yet binds them to parties all the same. This indicates the possibility of increasing fluidity across parties (and may explain in some states the decline of multipartyism and dominance of one party) as time passes and the political elite interact in the new political institutions.

5

Intra-party dynamics and political elite circulation

> 'By the circulation of elites, the governing elite is in a state of continuous and slow transformation. It flows like a river and what it is today is different from what it was yesterday. Every so often, there are sudden and violent disturbances. The river floods and breaks its banks. Then, afterwards … the river returns to its bed and flows once more freely on' (Pareto 1976: 250).
>
> 'History is the graveyard of elites' (*ibid*.: 249).
>
> 'The governing class is … renovated … by recruiting to it families rising … (and) … also by the loss of its more degenerate elements' (*ibid*.).

Political elite theorists focus extensively upon the methods of political elite circulation, rather than its causes, consequences or characteristics. Mosca, argues that circulation takes place when organized interests actively seek power (Mosca 1939), and Pareto claims that this innovatory elite become conservative once entrenched, just like the elite that they replace or are assimilated into (Pareto 1935). Indeed, assimilation is a popular theme among classical and contemporary political elite theorists alike, with Michels focusing upon assimilation into oligarchies (Michels 1915) and Dye and Zeigler contending that compromise between elites shields them from "the masses" (Dye & Zeigler 1990). In contrast C. Wright-Mills suggests an almost absence of circulation, that the elite come to represent certain vested interests that become unchanging even if there is a circulation of personnel (Mills 1956).

Political elite circulation, if and when it occurs, does not take place in a vacuum. Rather than focusing upon the methods of circulation, it is more useful to examine the causes, characteristics and consequences of it. The party list system of representation which characterises the South African electoral system is important in shaping South African political elites and giving the provincial political elite its character. Party systems vary in the degree to which political parties determine who goes to the legislature. Even in constituency based systems like the Westminster model, parties can play the preponderant role. However the complete absence in national and provincial elections in South Africa of a territorial element of representation means the political party is entirely responsible for the placing of the political elite in the legislature and can discount virtually entirely questions of electability (though not of course entirely the preferences of its own grass roots membership). Furthermore, in party-list systems, intra-party dynamics play a key role in the way in which elites are positioned, whether on a party list or in the allocation of portfolios in legislatures. This effect is seen to its greatest refinement in the ANC's cadre deployment system, by which all party members, including elected representatives, serve where and how the party chooses, irrespective of the electorate. As such, elite circulation cannot be studied empirically without an understanding of the organizational dynamics and political culture within party caucuses.

In this chapter I analyse political elite circulation within the provincial legislature as it pertains to intra-party dynamics. As such, this chapter is divided into four parts. In the first part I explain the structure of opportunities for the political elite through an exploration of the institutional context and the political party system including the party caucuses of the IFP and the ANC. These structures provide both boundaries and opportunities for movement. I then turn to an interrogation of the common and divergent patterns of intra-party political culture including conceptions of etiquette and leadership as they are present in the discourses of party caucuses. Thirdly, I examine political elite circulation within the legislature as it pertains to intra-party dynamics. Finally I explore volatility in the legislature as this pertains to democratic elite circulation in KwaZulu-Natal.

The purpose of this chapter is to show how the prevailing norms of political culture in intra-party dynamics in the IFP and the ANC are the main reasons for political elite circulation in KwaZulu-Natal. These political cultures are not identical. While the IFP has re-cast its political elite through political elite circulation to re-establish its core being within the prevailing political culture, the ANC's hierarchical conceptions of leadership are the reasons for the circulation of its political elite.

The structure of opportunities within the provincial legislature

Political systems, including the institutional chances,[1] electoral rules and system of party competition determine the spaces through which political elite circulation takes place in legislatures. The institutional context of the structure of opportunities in KwaZulu-Natal is provided for in the South African Constitution (republic of South Africa 1996a) which sets out the separation of powers between legislative and executive authority as vested in the legislature and members of executive councils and premier respectively. In addition, the legislature has the power to formulate its own rules, orders, procedures and internal arrangements that include the prescription and provision of the powers, functions and procedures of parliamentary committees (Republic of South Africa 1996a: Section 116) and the duration of legislative sittings (Republic of South Africa 1996a: Section 110). This provides for wide latitude in the way in which legislative members construct committees including the career structure within the committees that are available, the manner in which they operate and the depth of scrutiny of the business before them. In the KwaZulu-Natal Provincial Legislature elected MPPs each serve on at least one parliamentary committee which is substantively congruent to the corresponding ministerial portfolio.[2] These committees provide the structure through which parliamentary activity takes place with a general legislative sitting of a few days per month taking place less than twelve times per annum.

In addition to legislative committee offices and executive branch policy portfolios, there are other offices within parliament. These include the roles of chairperson and deputy chairperson of committees, who through organizing the business of the committee upon which he or she serves, theoretically links the executive and legislative branches of government. In addition the role of

---

1 These are the opportunities for involvement within political institutions.

2 The political elite in the Provincial Legislature of KwaZulu-Natal determined and established 22 committees. Of these, 17 deal with substantive policy matters. They consist of 11 portfolio committees (agriculture; conservation & environmental affairs; education; finance & economic development; health; housing; local government & traditional affairs; public accounts; public works; transport; and welfare and population development) which have corresponding provincial executive portfolios and 6 standing committees (arts, tourism & culture; national council of provinces; sport & recreation; premier & royal household; community safety & liaison; quality of life and status of women, children, youth and disabled persons) without a corresponding provincial executive portfolio. Of the 22 committees there are also four management committees (chairpersons; rules; discipline & ethics; private members bills, petitions and pensions) that address management in the House, the conduct of business and the regulation of persons and benefits. One final committee is the Parliamentary Women's Caucus which, although listed as a committee, has no formal status, funding or resources.

speaker and deputy-speaker who preside over the legislative sittings, and are theoretically neutral, cast deciding votes in debates in the House. Finally, the parliamentary whips who order the business on the parliamentary order paper link the legislature with political parties through parliamentary party caucuses from whom they receive instructions. The structure of opportunities within the Provincial Legislature of KwaZulu-Natal is thus wide ranging. The positions held by individual MPPs within this system are determined by and within political parties.

Political parties have almost unfettered power in determining who gets into parliament. The South African Constitution provides for a party list system of proportional representation at both the national and provincial levels of government (cf. Republic of South Africa 1996a: Schedule 6) that, in effect, entrenches political parties as the key organizations that determine who gets into parliament. Potential parliamentarians must appeal to parties to be placed on their party electoral list. The party then arranges the list in order of preference and may de-select and remove candidates from the list. If they wish to be re-selected by their party, parliamentarians once in parliament must abide by party discipline and party policy. This electoral system potentially produces centralized party control over MPPs in a manner described in other African states by Goran Hyden as a 'suspended state' (Hyden 1981: 7) because, unlike a constituency based electoral system, candidates key loyalty is to the party that selects them and not to the public. Hence, the political elite exists in a disconnected manner from the public that elected them. They have no geographically defined constituencies to be accountable to,[3] nor do they need to seek constituency approval on any matter. The electoral system provides senior party members with significant power in determining the composition of the elected and the structure of opportunities in a legislature with already wide latitude of powers. While it would be naïve to underestimate the power of parties in other democracies – Britain for instance – nevertheless, South Africa is an extreme example of party power.

In 2002 the South African Constitution was amended by the national government to enable parliamentarians to cross the floor to another party and to retain their parliamentary seat during specified annual window periods (cf. Republic of South Africa 1996a; 2002a, 2002b, 2002c, 2002d). This is the only context in the world in which floor-crossing has been introduced in a party-list system of proportional representation. Originally conceived of by the DP in the local government constituency based system to enable the Democratic Alliance of DP and NNP to come about, floor-crossing was introduced by the ANC in the

[3] Parties do assign members to geographical areas for purposes of communicating with the electorate, but there is no formal or accountable link.

parliamentary list system to enable the NNP to join with the ANC at national and provincial levels. Schumpeter, in his discussion of minimalist forms of democracy, argues that the right to choose who governs is the only role that the electorate has in a democracy (Schumpeter 1954). Floor-crossing legislation, in removing the voter's democratic right to select who governs through voting, further disconnects MPPs from the electorate. It also favours larger political parties because the rules of crossing stipulate that a minimum of 10% of elected MPPs in any party must cross the floor at the same time. Hence, the larger parties cannot easily fracture through floor-crossing whereas small parties are easily assimilated into the larger ones. Thus, the already extensive powers provided to party bosses through minimal connection to the electorate in the party-list system of proportional representation are extended to the benefit of party bosses and selectors in the larger political parties through the floor-crossing legislation.[4]

The key political party institutional space in the legislature is the parliamentary party caucus. Each political party with representation in the legislature has a party caucus consisting of all of its parliamentary members. The caucus coordinates MPPs' actions, determines policy to advocate in parliament and policy positions, decides on parliamentary strategies and tactics towards the opposition and in opposition to policy and selects members to serve in parliamentary institutional positions. As the key link to the party outside the legislature the caucus also serves as a peer group, providing support and discipline and grounding MPPs in the perspectives of the political party for which they were elected.

In sum, the structure of opportunities within the Provincial Legislature of KwaZulu-Natal is for the most part determined by political parties. They select and place MPPs in institutional roles in committees, the constitution of and business of which is determined by MPPs whose position and conduct is checked by the political party to which they are affiliated. The placement in these roles of individual MPPs is thus for the most part a product of intra-party dynamics.

Intra-party dynamics in the IFP and ANC

Intra-party dynamics in KwaZulu-Natal, as revealed through interviews, have their roots in intra-party political culture. The term intra-party political culture is defined as the prevailing conceptions of leadership held among the political

[4] In April 2008 the South African Cabinet approved constitutional amendments to abolish floor-crossing at the national, provincial and municipal levels. These constitutional amendments were tabled in the National Assembly in 2008. Since 2009, MPPs are longer be able to cross the floor and to retain their parliamentary seat, nor will MPPs from political parties that merge or become subdivided.

elite, their patterns of interaction and the manner in which the rules of discipline are applied to them.

Conceptions of leadership and patterns of interaction

In the ANC, the concept of leadership is tied to two interlinking factors. They are past party political experiences and institutional position held. These factors are not mutually exclusive, with past experiences often dictating the positions that are held institutionally within party structures, and within the political institutions in the province. That is, (as detailed in the previous chapter) the most senior institutional positions in the province are repeatedly occupied by individuals with extensive political party experiences. When asked who the leaders were, interviewees repeatedly pointed to a person followed by the rationale that they occupied a particular parliamentary institutional position. In fact, most MPPs also correlated the senior party members, with senior institutional roles in the legislature. For example, one MPP claimed, 'The senior leadership of the party is the government' (Pers. ANC Interview 71). Within these positions, executive portfolios were viewed as the most senior, and individuals were considered leaders because they occupied these positions. The ANC political elite thus have structured conceptions of leadership with clear correlations between seniority and institutional position.

Informally, however, the concept of seniority is viewed by the ANC political elite as encompassing more than the designation of roles. Interviews showed that for a few MPPs, and particularly the ones who came into office in the second legislative term, seniority is also guided by perceptions of respect that provide informal hierarchies of interaction within the institutional context of leadership. For example, one MPP claimed of the ANC provincial leader, 'There is of course this other issue … I respect him because he is my elder brother. He is also senior which means that I respect his views and engage with him with respect' (Pers. ANC Interview 57). In terms of how that translates into political interactions it holds a double meaning. By way of their institutional position leaders were to direct the content of discussions and opinions on them and by way of conceptions of respect were rarely challenged on this established way of interaction. For example, leaders were found to direct and frame the debates that take place in the provincial party caucus. The seating order established the most senior leaders institutionally sat in a row separated from the other caucus members. The speaking order was established so that the most senior leader speaks first, followed by the next senior and so on. In 2003, the seating and speaking order was challenged by a group of newer ANC provincial MPPs. According to one MPP, 'We said that this thing where the leadership all sit together … where S'bu speaks, then Zweli, then Dumisani … that must change. They must sit among everyone else. They must deploy themselves

among the rest of us' (Pers. ANC Interview 57). However, the manner in which this was challenged was to raise it in caucus and then allow the senior MPPs to decide upon it, giving respect to the senior MPPs to whom it was directed to make the decision on whether it would be in the best interests of the caucus to change the manner and the method through which debate happened. Once the decision by the senior MPPs was taken, the caucus was to abide by it. Thus the cleavages in terms of intra-party political culture in the ANC are mutually reinforcing. Respect thus translates into recognition of hierarchy and the reinforcement of hierarchical distinctions between MPPs in the ANC.

In contrast to the ANC, conceptions of leadership in the IFP are much more diverse and not directly related to the institutional position held by MPPs. Like the ANC, conceptions of leadership are based upon prior experiences, but those experiences are not necessarily related to party political institutional experiences. Alongside the formal designated structure of party and parliamentary offices, a parallel structure exists, that serves to provide political relationships with a procedure and boundaries. In the IFP respected "leaders" consist of a variety of individuals. There are members of the Amakhosi, who are the most respected. There are also individuals with other claims to leadership. These "other" leaders have achieved this status for a variety of reasons, but to become a respected leader takes time. In attempts to determine whether interviewees were considered leaders a discussion always ensued on the importance of two factors both premised on a conception of "greatness". The first was who ones parents and grandparents were, whether they were great men, and what their role was in the wars against the British and the Boers. As one interviewee stated, 'you cannot just emerge as a mushroom' (Pers. IFP Interview 92). The second factor was whether one could be considered to have earned greatness through engaging in activities which tended to benefit ones community at a grass roots level. As one MPP said of another, 'he has earned his greatness by defending the blood of our communities. He is hard but his motives are good and he deserves our respect' (Pers. IFP Interview 128).[5] In practice, respect was not found to translate into authority, nor into institutional position. Instead, respect was framed in terms of rules of etiquette characterised by a hierarchical system of interaction.

This is not to suggest that authority is determined on this basis, but rather it is a collective procedure through which ideas are canvassed. For example, a non-leader with a good idea would approach a respected leader, who in turn would approach a more respected leader, until the most respected had the

[5] The 'defending the blood of our communities' was a literal reference to paramilitary activities involving communal warfare.

opportunity to express a view. By the time an issue surfaces in the IFP party caucus it has been carefully canvassed through this method.

Unlike in the ANC, the cleavages present in terms of who fits into the hierarchy are cross cutting rather than mutually reinforcing. Leaders can be leaders in more than one domain. An individual may be respected because of past party related work, also hold a senior parliamentary institutional position because of a degree in that particular policy area, be a member of the Amakhosi and have been involved in developmental related role. As such, the route to leadership can take a variety of forms, doesn't dictate seniority in terms of debate and decisions and ties MPPs together across a whole range of cleavages. All MPPs follow these prevailing rules of political etiquette in their interactions with one another, so an idea can *emerge* from anyone, but is likely to be *introduced* through a leader.

Intra-party discipline

A central feature of intra-party political culture is intra-party discipline. Discipline is a factor that clearly demonstrates the prevailing rules of interaction between the political elite within each party. In the ANC, discipline is predominantly private, formalised and institutionalized. Central to party etiquette is the concept of democratic centralism. Although debate and discussion is accepted in caucus, MPPs are expected to abide by the decisions that are taken by party leadership. As an ANC MPP explained, 'We are all on the same level when it comes to making contributions. Then somewhere decisions are made and checked to see they are not in conflict with party policies' (Pers. ANC Interview 71). And as another said, 'Everyone speaks, everyone is heard. Once a decision has been taken by leadership, caucus has no power to change it' (Pers. ANC Interview 113). Thus an individual is likely to be disciplined for deviating publicly from the official position presented by the party. As one ANC MPP stated, 'We do not like dissidence. You must not renege on any agreement. You must not try to twist the hand of the party. This is seen as a form of treachery' (Pers. ANC MEC Interview 134). There are very few examples of both formal and informal disciplinary measures that have been taken against members of the provincial parliamentary ANC. This absence of disciplinary cases against MPPs is indicative that discipline is taken seriously by them. This is, in part, explained because the penalties for deviation are harsh.

Internal dissidence, by those who have grassroots popularity in the parliamentary party, is addressed by the party through the process of sidelining individuals. The consequences of failing to abide by leadership decisions can effectively mean expulsion or the end of a political career through the leaking of, or manipulation of information or misinformation to discredit the individual. The most obvious example is that of MPP Sifiso Nkabinde, who was expelled

by the ANC on unproven spying allegations. He was murdered in January 1999, after joining the UDM.[6] He had been a charismatic, populist strong arm man in the Natal Midlands who had held turf for the ANC in the early 1990s in the townships around Richmond, in areas that saw some of the worst violence in the post-apartheid period. This area was also a depot for ANC arms into the region from the former Transkei. Two factors changed his position of importance for the ANC. The first was a concerted attempt to shift power from regions to the national parliament in an attempt to stop KwaZulu-Natal issues from dominating national discourses. In 1996 Nkabinde was asked not to stand for the position of ANC provincial secretary[7] at the ANC Provincial Conference in December of that year. He chose to ignore that instruction and stood for the position claiming 'I would not be blackmailed and denied my democratic right' (Nkabinde in Jones 1997). The voting process was chaos and many of the delegates (including many of Nkabinde's supporters) had left the hall before the vote, believing that there was not going to be a vote. He lost the vote in a chaotic situation but incurred the wrath of the party leadership for disobeying their instructions of not to stand. The second factor was the peace process in the province between the ANC and the IFP which led to a new discourse among some members of the ANC and IFP by May 1996. As the peace process between the ANC and IFP took shape in the province it could be argued that Nkabinde was no longer trusted by the ANC to be silent about knowledge he held of ANC arms caches, violence and the assassinations of IFP members in the provincial turf wars in the 1990s. A relationship did, however, begin to develop through the peace process between him and former adversaries David Ntombela and Philip Powell of the IFP and Sifiso Nkabinde even provided them with information about the assassination of some of the IFP aligned amakhosi in the 1990s. As the 1996 local government elections loomed, both Ntombela and Nkabinde were to put up election posters together and Nkabinde made an impassioned speech to the provincial legislature declaring an end to violence and urging others to do the same (Grimbeek 1996). By the time of his expulsion, Sifiso Nkabinde retained a large populist following, was openly discussing the war in the province with the ANC's former adversary – the IFP (Pers. IFP Interviews 28, 120 and 43) – and had indicated that he would not be prepared to simply step aside at the call of national leadership. His expulsion, on the basis of unproven allegations, was almost inevitable. Such examples of

---

6 No-one has been charged with his murder and the perpetrators remain unknown.

7 This instruction was presented to Nkabinde at a meeting he was called to with ANC Provincial Leader Jacob Zuma, Mpumulanga Premier Matthews Phosa and Walter Sisulu.

the consequences of ill discipline, for those with widespread popular followings, serve as a severe deterent to others in the party.

In contrast to the ANC, discipline in the IFP, is frequently personal, public and related to conceptions of etiquette and respect through ubuntu-botho. Within ubuntu, an individual in the IFP is mainly valued because he/she forms a part of a greater collective. Thus, it follows that discipline is also a collective enterprise. Ordinarily an MPP would be disciplined for bringing the party into disrepute by going against the party line in the legislature, for making comments to the media that bring another MPP into disrepute or for engaging in an activity that is against the values of the ethics committee. Discipline is frank, open and personal with the disciplinary committee of the IFP levelling charges and the MPP expected to explain him or herself to the entire National Council. In accordance with IFP etiquette, however, all interviewees explained that a significant part of the disciplinary process includes the essence of forgiveness. Once the MPP has apologised and asked for forgiveness for hurting the collective they are forgiven. As one MPP argued, 'Discipline is very important … A child needs to be disciplined. They are taught by their mother and father. Family values are very important. The party becomes the extended family' (Pers. IFP Interview 106). As another argued, 'We have been taught to be honest. We have been taught to be disciplined. There are certain things that you just can't do because then it takes away your self-respect' (Pers. IFP Interview 131). In essence, discipline in the IFP is about loyalty, loyalty to the party ethics located in ubuntu and to party etiquette.

The clearest example of this is MPP Shabalala who was disciplined and then expelled by the party's National Council for leading an unofficial and unapproved march of hostel dwellers through the city. After taking the party to court, Shabalala was reinstated to the provincial legislature. Despite the serious nature of the matter, after seeking forgiveness within the party, Shabalala was appointed to the position of Chairperson of the Portfolio Committee on Housing in the legislature – a position of significant promotion in the party and within the legislature.

Recruitment and circulation

In KwaZulu-Natal, the primary impact of the prevailing intra-party political cultures is seen in the deployment of the political elite. Hence, recruitment and circulation among the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal is a product of intra-party political culture. Table 5.1 illustrates recruitment and circulation in the KwaZulu-Natal Provincial Legislature organised by political party affiliation.

Table 5.1 Recruitment and circulation by political party affiliation[a]

Political party	1994 elections	Mid-term exits A 1994-1999	Mid-term entries A 1994-1999	End of first term	1999 elections	1994 election survivors in 1999	Mid-term entry survivors from first term	New MPPs in 1999 elections	Mid-term exits B 1999-2004	Mid-term entries B 1999-2004	Totals 2004
IFP	41	18[b]	19[c]	42	34	17	9	8	9	6	31
ANC	26	5	7	28	32	17	3	12	8	10	34
DP/DA	2	0	0	2	7[d]	2	0	5	4	4	7
NNP	9	4	4	9	3	2	0	1	1	1	3
MF	1	0	0	1	2	1	0	1	0	0	2
ACDP	1	1	1	1	1	0	1	0	0	0	1
PAC	1	0	0	1	0	-	-	-	-	-	0
UDM	0	-	-	-	1	-	-	1	1	1	1
IAM[e]	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1	1
TOTAL	81	28	31[f]	84	80	39	13	28	27	23	80

Notes:

a) The table has been constructed from interviews. No parliamentary or other record exists of this data. Numbers in the table represent the actual number of MPPs

b) IFP MPP Thomas Shabalala has been counted only as a 1994 election entry, 1994 election survivor and 1999 election entry, although he qualifies as a mid-term exit A, mid-term entry A and mid-term entry survivor because he was elected in 1994, suspended in 1996, reinstated in 1999 and then re-elected in 1999. For a true representation of turnover, this would increase these figures by 1.

c) The IFP was entitled to one extra entry between 1994 and 1999 but chose not to replace an MPP due to the proximity of the June 1999 elections.

d) Belinda Scott has been counted as a new entry in 1999 on resigning from the IFP and then being placed in parliament for the DA because she represented a new member for another party.

e) The Independent African Movement (IAM) was created in 2002 within the legislature by IFP MPP Theresa Millin during the floor-crossing period when she left the IFP. It won no seats in 2004.

f) The Independent African Movement (IAM) was created in 2002 within the legislature by IFP MPP Theresa Millin during the floor-crossing period when she left the IFP. It won no seats in 2004.

As indicated in the table, circulation of the political elite has been significant both at election time and mid way through terms of office in both the first and second terms. This circulation will be explained in this section through a discussion of the two terms of office from 1994-1999 and from 1999-2004. This will show how intra-party political culture, including decision-making impacts upon recruitment and circulation in the province.

Circulation in the first term

Interviews show that the loss of the first provincial elections to the IFP came as a shock to the ANC. The provincial ANC did not, in 1994, take rural voting behaviour seriously (Johnson 1996a: 274-300). Johnson argues that even in those constituencies in which the ANC perceived its main strength lay (Durban, Pinetown, Inanda), 'the ANC's hegemony within its strongholds turned out to be far less complete than had been imagined' (Johnson 1996b: 316).As is demonstrated in Table 5.1, there were high levels of turnover in the legislature and hence of political elite circulation in both the IFP and the ANC in the first term of office. In the IFP, of the 41 MPPs who were elected, there were 18 exits (43.9%) during the first term. In the ANC there were 5 exits (19.2%) from 26 seats gained in the 1994 elections. The reasons for these exits are located in the internal party dynamics of the individual parties.

• Circulation in the IFP from 1994-1999

The compilation of the party lists was a contested process in the IFP. The party relied on existing social and political capital in 1994 in order to hurriedly construct an electoral list a few days prior to the election. Entering the electoral contest only six days before the polls, this last minute entry meant that the party could not, as they would in 1999, use the party branch system for nominations for the party list. Instead, the National Council constructed a committee of senior party members in order to choose potential parliamentary candidates (Pers. IFP Interview 92). This committee had the monumental task of constructing a list from established party members, a multitude of KLA members from a legislative assembly that had 144 seats[1] and new party members from the former white only parties. As a consequence, a hastily compiled electoral list excluded many potential IFP MPPs who would, in all likelihood, have been nominated to serve as MPPs through a proper branch based nomination system.[2] In addition, it included members who had no viable constituency support and

[1] These were comprised of the Zulu King and his representative, 74 Amakhosi, 65 elected representatives and 3 nominations by the Chief Minister.

[2] It excluded MPPs such as MPP Vezi, who had served in the KLA and through the branch system of nominations in 1999 were then elected.

had limited experience of the internal political culture of the IFP. Interviews show that of the 41 MPPs who went to parliament for the IFP in 1994, 19 of them had joined the IFP no more than two years before the first democratic election and 18 of them had no prior experience of internal party political culture prior to becoming an MPP. More than half of these MPPs were of the former white only political parties who joined the IFP *en masse* on the eve of the 1994 elections. As discussed in chapters three and four, many of these MPPs had extensive prior political experience in government institutions. They also knew each other and could vouch for each other. Social capital provided for them the basis of a new bloc within the party that they had joined. These organised interests sought and grasped significant power in the IFP in the way perhaps that Mosca suggests circulation exists.

When the hastily constructed electoral committee put together the party list for the province, it included some, but not all of these MPPs. However, the person tasked with delivering the list[3] to the Independent Electoral Commission for submission apparently substantially changed the list. More than two thirds of those interviewed who were elected in 1994 knew their designated position on the list after the committee had made its selections and of these, more than three quarters discovered that this position had changed after the list had been submitted. One MPP, for example, stated, 'I knew that I was number 12 on the list three days after the committee met, but when it came back (from publication) I had been moved down the list more than 10 places' (Pers. IFP Interview 92). Instead, the new bloc that had joined the party on the eve of the elections was included *en masse* on the party list. Included because of the political capital they possessed and the social capital that they shared with each other, it was believed, that this bloc would deliver a crucial white racial vote for the party through the social capital that they shared with the white segment of the electorate in the first multi-racial elections.

This intervention, made without the sanction of the party, was to cause significant turmoil within the IFP for the next two years. The list process for the 1994 elections had excluded many of the IFP's core constituency and instead included individuals who had no experience of intra-party political culture in the IFP. As Table 5.1 shows, during the first parliamentary term 18 IFP MPPs (almost half of those elected in 1994) exited parliament. Although on the surface this significantly high turnover appeared to be a racial division (with more than half of these MPPs non-african) it was not actually so. Instead, it was a realignment of the IFP political elite in congruence with the core political culture of the party. Of those who exited in this period, Patrick Cornell, David Durham, Charles Van Eck, David Watterson, Clive Wilkins and Hugh Lee had

[3] IFP MPP Walter Felgate.

joined the party on the eve of the elections. The political etiquette of the party was alien to them, particularly the nature of internal party canvassing of opinion and decision-making which they could not reconcile with their own political experiences. This also applied to MPPs such as Belinda Scott who worked as a researcher for the party and had no experience of its internal workings and who left the party to join the DA in early 1999. The long National Council meetings in Ulundi in which the opinions of hundreds of amakhosi and local leaders were canvassed on crucial policy and legislative matters did not sit well with their own perceptions of westernised government. Their reasons for going to parliament were to retain a political tie to the legislature, not to serve the party's core mandate through its particular style of etiquette. Thus their departure and replacement could be considered to be evidence of a reassertion of internal IFP democracy and a realignment of the party's political elite with its core being.

It was not only non-Africans who departed in this period, but all those who had not grown up within the traditions of the IFP. For example, MPP Robert Mzimela is an African who was deployed to the legislature in the wake of the realignment in 1996 and then departed in 1997. Mzimela is a clear example of someone who did not grow up within the political culture of the IFP, nor understand it, despite holding senior positions for the party. Originally an ANC member, Mzimela went into exile for the ANC in 1961 to Swaziland and then Tanzania from which he was sent to Czechoslovakia for education. It was 18 months into this education when Mzimela became disenchanted with communism in the ANC and he left to settle in what was then West Germany and trained as a priest. His priesthood took him to the USA where he wrote a book entitled 'Marching to Slavery: South Africa's Descent into Communism' published in America. Joining the IFP in 1990 because of his anti-communist stance and accepted by the party because of his criticism of the ANC, Mzimela had no prior experience of the branch structures or internal political culture of his new political home. When it seemed clear that the South African Communist Party and the Left in general were being marginalized in the ANC, he called for a merger between the IFP and ANC (*Independent on Saturday*, 27 February 1999), which was anathema to the discourse of respect within the political culture of the IFP, whose memory of war with the ANC was still very fresh in their minds. It is hardly surprising, given that he did not grow up in the traditions of the party that he would find himself, like some of the white bloc that had joined just prior to the elections, an almost alien entity in a party that was premised on political etiquette.

The departure of these MPPs forced a readjustment of the IFP MPPs that were deployed to the provincial and national legislatures from this point onwards. In essence, the party replaced each departing provincial member with a senior IFP member, some of whom had been excluded from the original party

list in 1994 and some of whom had been deployed to the national parliament in 1994. These included MPPs Faith Gasa and Eileen kaNkosi-Shandu who had been negotiators for the party at CODESA; MPP Ziba Jiyane who was part of the National Coordinating Committee of the party; MPP Lionel Mtshali who became Party Chairman; MPPs Ellis Vezi, Mziwamandla Mzobe, Vitus Mvelase and Inkosi Bonginkosi Mdletshe from the former KLA who had been excluded from the 1994 list; MPPs Abbie Mchunu and Lauretta Ngcobo who worked in senior party structures; MPP Phillip Powell who had worked for a long period as an urban representative for the IFP and been involved in SDU training in the early 1990s and MPP Narend Singh who had worked alongside the Amakhosi in rural development before becoming an IFP MPP. Members of this core were predominantly well educated with prior political experience, but more importantly they were well versed in the political culture of the IFP, having been long serving IFP party members and understanding, and in fact maintaining, the system of political culture within the party. In addition, those who came to be replacement MPPs represented the circulation into power of those with constituencies of support through the party branch system and the validation of those who had been long serving ordinary members of the party and had worked hard for it. Hence, a different form of social and political capital was emerging over that which prevailed when the lists were put together, one which was much more reflective of the essence of the party's internal dynamics, both in terms of political culture and through its branch organisation.

Other departures in this period were as a consequence of death, old age or reallocation of members to the national parliament. For example, MPP Romlall Haripersaad died in a helicopter accident, MPP Thanda Dingila was assassinated while working in the peace structures, MPP Nkanyiso Biyela (from a long line of Biyelas who served the KLA) retired citing old age and MPP John Bhengu was moved to the national parliament. However others, as discussed later, who were senior IFP party members retired from legislative politics altogether for other areas of service tied to politics.

IFP political elite circulation in the legislature during this period is partly in contrast with elite theory. The replacement of IFP MPPs in this period does not represent a new innovatory elite emerging, nor a fusion or coalition, but rather a recasting of the political elite in the legislature through the incorporation of individuals who understand the prevailing and established political culture of the party. Circulation in the IFP in this period may be seen as a process of rectification and amelioration of internal disharmony created by the grasping, through the 1994 list process, of significant power in the IFP by those from the crumbling white parties. At the same time, circulation represents, as in the work of Pareto, the ascendance of those with the attributes and characteristics that are most needed – those with the ability to perform in government who possess

both the social characteristics of education and professional experience, but who also claim as their own the prevailing style of political etiquette that glues the party together.

• Circulation in the ANC from 1994-1999

There are three reasons for circulation of the ANC political elite during this period. They are, a growing trend of the use of the province by the political elite as a basis from which to enter national politics which began in late 1997, death, and the sidelining of the militant provincial core so that it has little impact upon national political imperatives.

The compilation of the party lists in the ANC was a process that was as contested in the ANC as it was in the IFP, but not for the same reasons. In the ANC, the question was over leadership in the province, not the ordinary rank and file MPPs. Given the power that is provided to leadership through the decision-making processes of democratic centralism in the ANC, the recognition of hierarchy and the respect afforded to those in institutional leadership positions within internal ANC political etiquette it is hardly surprising that the decisive battles between political elites in the party are at the leadership level. It is in this context that the militant provincial core located in the midlands region of the ANC was sidelined in the first period of office and it began with the question over who would be provincial leader.

Militant midlands leader MPP Harry Gwala was the popular choice among the ANC branches for the leadership of the ANC in the province. Gwala was fiercely outspoken against the negotiation process from 1990-1994. He argued that the negotiation process should be subjected to the armed struggle and not visa versa. Gwala followed the trend of earlier midlands leadership (discussed in Chapter 2) in forcing what may be seen as provincially based issues up through the party to make them the central issues on a national agenda. Gwala had, by 1993, managed to pull behind him in his opposition to compromises made at the negotiating table, other party members from the internal structures of the other two ANC regions – South and North and the Southern Natal structures of COSATU, the ANC Youth League, the SACP and the Marxist Workers Tendency (cf. *City Press*, 21 February 1993). As the national political context changed and the ANC imperatives – predominantly of the exile elite – turned to questions of governance there was a concerted attempt to rein in this militant core of essentially internal elites so that provincial dynamics no longer drove national imperatives (as they had done through the century) and the essentially exile elite could take power smoothly without challenge. This accounted for the most crucial circulation in the provincial legislature in the ANC, where the national leadership of the ANC sidelined Harry Gwala and then his lieutenant Sifiso Nkabinde to force provincial obedience.

Despite Gwala's popularity, the national leadership invoked an ANC constitutional clause to prevent Gwala from standing as Midlands leader (which put him in line to stand as provincial leader) by arguing that he already served on the NEC and thus could not hold two positions consecutively. Gwala's response was to offer to resign his NEC position and in late 1993 he was re-elected Midlands Leader. Instead, the ANC at the national level sidelined Gwala by parachuting Jacob Zuma into the region. This was effectively a coup that deposed the relatively weak Northern Natal leadership which supported Gwala and imposed Zuma. Zuma was born in the Northern Natal region at Nkandla, although he was essentially an exile figure and in fact served the ANC through its Southern Natal branch. The *coup de grace* in sidelining Gwala was the election of Jacob Zuma as ANC leader for the province. Harry Gwala's death in 1995 and MPP Sifiso Nkabinde's expulsion in 1997 (discussed earlier) represent the breaking of the power not only of the midlands leadership, but more importantly, this particular formerly internally-based midlands leadership.

Zuma's credentials have been discussed in chapter three. The choice of Zuma represents a number of factors. Firstly, Zuma's exile status provided the social and political capital for his acceptance as provincial leader by the Southern Natal region of the ANC, whose political elite were almost entirely from exile and whose leadership candidate – Jeff Radebe – knew him from exile. Secondly, with both his urban and rural credentials, Zuma was accepted by the IFP as a candidate not only of sufficient seniority to satisfy their need for demonstrable respect but someone who understood the more traditional elements of the party and had been delegated to make peace – something Gwala would not do. Thirdly, it required someone who possessed sufficient political capital to break the historic hold on power that the midlands had in the region and to enable those from exile to return to positions of power in Southern Natal and the Natal Midlands in a coup over the internal ANC. Fourthly, it was a priority among the returning ANC to break the power of the SACP by incorporating them into the ANC without conflict through the method of appeasement. Zuma did not renew his SACP membership in 1992 when ANC members were instructed to declare joint affiliations, but it was well known in the movement that he had been members of both organisations. His provincial candidacy was thus acceptable to both parties. Finally, and most importantly, in 1994 Zuma understood and practised the prevailing methods of political culture in the ANC, particularly in terms of political etiquette and the language of respect for hierarchical distinctions. His social and political capital made him trusted. The sidelining and provincialising of the province was thus complete by the end of 1997 in a top-down manner that had begun before the elections and played itself out through elite circulation.

The only other dynamics of circulation for the ANC in this period were as a consequence of death – as in the case of MPP Bheki Mthembu who was assassinated in 1998 while working in the north coast peace structures – and through circulation of the elite from provincial government to the national level – as in the case of MPP Shakes Cele in 1998 and MPP Jacob Zuma in early 1999 – in what became a growing ANC trend discussed later. Suffice to say, that in the first term of office, elite circulation in the ANC is directly related to intra-party political culture. Because of the political capital possessed by MPP Harry Gwala, it required someone of even more seniority to replace him and to be accepted and respected within the ANC provincially. Once Zuma was chosen that respect for his political and social capital trumped that of Gwala and the provincial elite complied with his leadership as he was inserted into the senior institutional role in the province. Hence, the intra-party political culture of democratic centralism is what explains the method of circulation but the acceptance of it is very much a part of the discourse of respect for seniority through social and political capital and the respect of institutional hierarchy in the ANC.

Circulation in the second term

As shown in Table 5.1, 17 MPPs in each of the IFP and the ANC who were elected in 1994 survived to be elected again in 1999. In total this represents 51.5% of MPPs who were elected in 1994, or 69.7% of MPPs if one takes into account those who entered during the first parliamentary term. Given the reduction of seats for the IFP from 41 to 34, this represents continuity of 50% of the MPPs from the first election. If, however, one takes into account the MPPs who entered during the first term and survived into the second term, this figure rises to continuity of 73.5% or almost three-quarters of MPPs which is indicative of no major intra-party turmoil since the realignment that was complete by 1997. In the ANC, continuity from the first election to the second election accounts for a much higher figure of 65.4% but because of the increase in seats from 26 to 32 in the second election this figure appears to be less so at 62.5% when one takes into account the mid-term entries from the first term who survived into the second election.

- Circulation in the IFP from 1999-2004

The IFP newcomers to parliament in 1999 represented a predominantly younger, educated crop of individuals who, despite their relative youth, had for the most part grown up within the traditions of the party like those who were mid-term replacements in the first term. Of the eight new MPPs, two (or 25%) held doctoral degrees – Usha Roopnarain and Nhlanhla Khubisa – a trend that has significantly increased. Five had held long term party affiliations and worked

extensively through the branch system – Inkosi Simon Gumede, Professor Nhlanhla Khubisa, Elias Mbatha, J.M.A. Ngcobo and Sibusiso Ngidi – with Khubisa even founding a branch. The trend established during the first term of replacing MPPs with those who understood and practised the internal political culture of the party thus continued into the second term.

This process and pattern of placing emphasis on the social capital of political etiquette in selection of MPPs became a factor in the second parliamentary term that led to more circulation. Internally driven IFP circulation in positions and posts from 1999 onwards had the consequence of inter-party circulation in the legislature when floor-crossing legislation was introduced in 2002. In 2002, the ANC extended floor-crossing legislation operational at local government level to national and provincial legislatures. This enabled members of parliament to cross the floor, taking their parliamentary seats to the party to which they crossed. With the number of seats held by the ANC and IFP almost on a par (the IFP had 34 seats to the ANC's 32) the IFP attempted to pre-empt any loss of parliamentary seats by a reshuffle of MPPs at the national and provincial levels. In effect this accounted for three exits from the provincial parliament to the national level[4] to be replaced by three MPPs from the national to the provincial parliament.[5] In effect, the IFP misread who the potential defectors were in the party. They were in fact to come from some of the remaining white bloc that had joined the party on the eve of the elections in 1994, who were aggrieved at internal circulation in the allocation of committee positions in the legislature by the IFP caucus.

In mid-2002, IFP MPPs Tarr and Mackenzie crossed the floor to join the ANC along with UDM MPP Sam Nxumalo who was under internal party investigation, DA MPP Tim Jeebodh and DA MPP Belinda Scott who was an IFP MPP in the first term. This shifted the balance of power in the province to the ANC and gave them 37 seats leaving the IFP with 32 seats and the ANC prepared to take control of the provincial executive and premiership. As it happened, the Constitutional Court declared the floor-crossing unconstitutional at provincial and national level (cf. Madlala 2002), in what was its present form, but there was no going back for these five MPPs whose five seats were not added to the ANC tally.

The reasons for the defection of Mike Tarr and Maurice Mackenzie can be found in IFP intra-party dynamics and specifically party etiquette. Both Tarr and Mackenzie had joined the IFP on the eve of the 1994 elections as part of the white bloc of members who were given significant legislative portfolios through their legislative membership. Tarr had served until 1999 as IFP Chief Whip in

---

4 They were MPPs Mzikayise Ngema, Ellis Vezi and Maria Xulu.

5 They were MPPs Velaphi Ndlovu, Geoffrey Bhengu and Olaf Baloyi.

the legislature to be replaced by the IFP Caucus in the 1999 elections by MPP Ellis Vezi. Tarr in 1999 became an ordinary MPP. Vezi was a new MPP in 1999 that had been excluded from the list in 1994, had extensive legislative experience in the KLA and had grown up through the branch system and within the traditions of etiquette within the party. While on the one hand the replacement of the elite and replenishment through internal circulation into senior legislative positions represented the practicing of internal party democracy in the IFP, it is also indicative of the importance of a return to the prevailing norms of political etiquette. Tarr had no history of work for the party, did not come through the branch system and simply emerged, after joining the party in the post-apartheid period to take on a key institutional political leadership role for the party. But in IFP etiquette, Vezi was a leader in the broader scheme of IFP political culture. His long party service meant that in IFP etiquette he had earned the political institutional role of leadership that he came to occupy from 1999 in the IFP realignment that had continued from 1996 onwards.

Maurice Mackenzie's defection to the ANC, for different reasons than Mike Tarr's, was also as a product of the loss of a senior institutional role and the relegation to an ordinary MPP. Unlike Tarr, Mackenzie lost the position of Chairperson of the Portfolio Committee on Agriculture that he had occupied since 1994 to the ANC in the coalition between the IFP and ANC that was formed in 1999[6] and more importantly, was on the verge of being moved to the national parliament in Cape Town in an internal reshuffle meant to continue the pattern of incorporating provincially more of the IFP members versed in the historical traditions of service for the party. For Mackenzie, the impending relocation to Cape Town was to remove him from the core area that he had carved out for himself – that of land, agriculture and the environment in Kwa-Zulu-Natal. In essence the ANC offered him the opportunity to stay in the province in a significant role.

In both cases normalization in the party re-establishing its institutional leadership core of MPPs from the established party core who had grown up through the branch system and had been immersed in party political culture, had led to their defection to the ANC. There are no cases of IFP defections of individuals who have joined the party at the branch level and grown up through the branch system. Again, this pattern was continued in the later defections in 2003 – when floor-crossing was legalized by the Constitutional Court – of the charismatic Gabriel Ndabandaba who had no long term history of involvement with the party and defected to the ANC, and Theresa Millin who joined on the eve of the 1994 elections and was later stripped of her Whip position and formed her own party in 2003.

---

6 For an extensive discussion of this coalition, see Chapter 6 of this book.

The re-establishment of internal IFP democracy by choosing candidates who represented the core political culture of the party was the catalyst for defection. In effect, by the end of the second term, the party had come full circle from the disastrous list system process in 1994 in which a new bloc was parachuted into power and the core party members were sidelined institutionally. As such, Pareto's theory of circulation does not apply to this case. Rather than circulation providing renovation to the political elite, it provides a re-establishment of the core personnel and political culture within the IFP political elite. Nor does IFP elite circulation in the second term mean the 'loss of its more degenerate elements' (Pareto 1976: 249) in the legislature, as those who were circulated out of an IFP institutional position found a guaranteed home as an MPP in an ANC institutional position – or in the case of Millin created her own. As such, they came to tie their interests to the legislature, rather than the party, in an anti-democratic act that was to guarantee their continued political elite status.

• Circulation in the ANC from 1999-2004

The 1999 elections produced a consolidation in the ANC political elite through national level interventions, as was the case in the earlier installation of Zuma as provincial leader. As discussed in chapter four, the pattern of institutionalizing those with particular forms of political capital in senior institutional roles was entrenched by the second term – those from southern Natal, such as Fatima Nahara who became Chairperson of the Portfolio Committee on Conservation and the Environment, Nhlanhla Ngidi who became Chairperson for the Portfolio Committee on Social Welfare and Population Development, Cyril Xaba who became Chairperson of the Portfolio Committee on Finance, Dumisani Makhaye who became MEC for Housing, and of course Sibusiso Ndebele who became Provincial Leader – the most senior with links to exile politics and/or imprisonment on Robben Island. But the interventions in 1999 went further and showed an increasingly top-down style of political culture. In 1999, the ANC branch system nominated MPP Bheki Cele as the most popular candidate for the ANC in KwaZulu-Natal (cf. Ngubane 1999c). Despite this, Cele was not afforded any executive position and the installation of Sibusiso Ndebele as ANC provincial leader was on the basis of an appointment from the national level, and not through the caucus or the branches. Ndebele's nominations by the branches had placed him only fourth on the provincial list (cf. Ngubane 1999c). This was in the period after the province had been provincialised through the sidelining of the internal midlands leadership, so the need for a national intervention was no longer pressing. However from 1999, president Mbeki was determined to centralise senior leadership appointments in his own hands on the grounds that factionalism in several provinces (including Gauteng and the Free

State) was weakening the ANC. As one interviewee put it (possibly with ironic intent):

> 'When we came to government we found that we were too democratic. So now the President with the NEC appoints the provincial leaders of government and the provincial leaders of government appoint cabinet' (Pers. ANC MEC Interview 134).

This is reflective of the top-down form of leadership that was consolidated and extended during the Mbeki presidency as the party political culture in the ANC. As a consequence of a respect for political institutional leadership positions in the emerging ANC political culture, it is almost guaranteed that appointments will be accepted by the lower levels in parliament.

In the ANC, as Table 5.1 shows, 50% or 17 of the 34 MPPs that had come to power in 1994 were re-elected in 1999. Taking into consideration the first term mid-term replacements for those who were sidelined in the realignment of the province with national imperatives, this figure of continuity jumps to 26 of the 34 or 76.4% of the political elite who retained their seats in 1999. The 8 ANC newcomers to parliament (shown in Table 5.1) or 33.6% of the total in 1999 represented, like in the IFP, a predominantly younger crop of individuals. However, these ANC newcomers differed from their IFP counterparts in that they were not as highly educated. Moreover, they had neither experience of exile politics or the midlands-national internal struggle and they slotted in as ordinary MPPs holding their first institutional political role for the party. Recruitment in the second election in the case of the ANC reflected a replenishment of the elite through incorporation of post-struggle parliamentarians – but only at the lower levels of the party's institutional political roles.

In keeping with this pattern, all mid-term replacements from within the ANC party structures slotted into ordinary MPP roles and emerged through the ANC branch system. These three replacements do not, however, account for the majority of new additions to ANC MPPs who were in fact the product of defections from other parties. Floor-crossing accounts for 8 out of 11 or 72% of the mid-term entrants to the ANC (shown in Table 2) in the 1999-2004 period. Five of these were the MPPs who jumped to cross the floor in 2002 ahead of the constitutional court ruling and subsequently lost their seats, which also accounts for five of the exits. The other three individuals crossed the floor in the 2003-2004 period – two from the IFP as mentioned above and one – MPP Singh – from the DA.

Volatility in political elite circulation

Table 5.2 illustrates volatility in political elite circulation organized by political party affiliation. The figures shown in this table represent the turnover in actual seats and not individuals. Overall, less than one third or 31.2% of seats were

occupied for the entire two term period of 1994-2004 which at face value illustrates a high level of political elite circulation which is conducive to democracy as an innovatory elite come to replace established elites in a competitive manner. However, this is not entirely the case. If one compares retention rates over the two periods of office there is greater volatility in seats during the first term than in the second term. In the first term 71.6% of MPPs retained their seats for the full term compared with a slightly higher figure of 75% in the second term. Considering the substantial circulation in the IFP in the first two years and the sidelining of the internal Midlands ANC leadership in the first term, the figures shown for the second term are low in comparison. Even more so when one considers that floor-crossing was the major form of circulation in the post 2002 period.

Thus while intra-party circulation (which brings in a new elite into the legislature) has decreased, inter-party circulation (which shuffles the same elite across the legislature) has increased over the two parliamentary terms from 1994-2004. This is indicative on the one hand of an increasing trend among the political elite of identifying their own interests with the legislature and not with their party or democracy. So while the political elite may not form just one political class (as discussed in Chapter 4) and replicate the same types of personnel into office they increasingly identify their own perceived personal interests with it and prevent circulation to their own personal loss of power. Indeed, in one example, MPP Millin created her own political party within the legislature (in the absence of any election) in 2003 rather than give up her seat to another IFP candidate. This phenomenon has been replicated in the national parliament and in other provincial legislatures by other parliamentarians who created their own political party during the floor-crossing periods.

Volatility in political elite circulation, however, is not the same in each political party. In the IFP less than a fifth or 19.5% of seats were constantly occupied from 1994-2004 illustrating a very high turnover of MPPs in comparison to the ANC who had much less circulation with 53.84% of seats constantly occupied. In the IFP, this represents a steady flow of recruitment and replacement of the political elite throughout the two terms of office. The major periods of replacement occurred in the 1995-1996 period (indicated by a retention rate of 65.83% in the first term) and the 2002-2003 period (indicated by a retention rate of 67.64%) as explained above but also in the second election as MPPs were brought into the legislature for the first time from within party structures, the civil service or from the national legislature to the provincial legislature. This form of circulation is conducive to democracy in KwaZulu-Natal as it precludes an association of an individual's role as tied into particular

Table 5.2 Volatility in circulation of seats by political party[a]

Political party	Seats gained 1994 elections	Seats constantly occupied 1994-1999	Seats with turnover of 1 (2 MPPs) 1994-1999	Seats with turnover of 2 (3+ MPPs) 1994-1999	Seats gained in 1999 elections	Seats constantly occupied 1999-2004	Seats with turnover of 1 (2 MPPs) 1999-2004	Seats with turnover of 2 (3+ MPPs) 1999-2004	Seats created floor crossing	Seats constantly occupied 1994-2004
IFP	41 (43 in 1997)	27 + 2 senate	9[b]	5	34	23	11	1	0	8
ANC	26 (28 in 1997)	22 + 2 senate	3	1	32	29	3	0	7	14
DP/DA	2	2	0	0	7	3	4	0	0	1
NNP	9	5	4	0	3	2	1	0	0	1
MF	1	1	0	0	2	2	0	0	0	1
ACDP	1	0	1	0	1	1	0	0	0	0
PAC	1	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
UDM	0	0	0	0	1	0	1	0	0	0
IAM[c]	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0
TOTAL	81 (85 in 1997)	58 + 4 senate[d]	17	6	80	60	20	1	8	25

Notes:

a) The figures have been constructed from the data collected through interviews. No other record of this data exists. Numbers represent the actual number of seats held by each party and the volatility of turnover in those seats, not the number of MPPs.

b) The IFP was entitled to one seat replacement between 1994 and 1999 but chose not to replace an MPP due to the proximity of the June 1999 elections.

c) The Independent African Movement (IAM) was created in 2002 within the legislature by IFP MPP Theresa Millin during the floor-crossing period when she left the IFP. It won no seats in 2004.

d) Following the ratification of the South African Constitution in December 1996, which established a National Council of Provinces to replace the Senate, the number of seats each held by the IFP and ANC was increased by 2 each in February 1997. This accommodated the returning members from the Senate. These figures have been counted as seats constantly occupied since they were new seats created in 1997 whose membership of them did not change.

legislative structures. In fact the career path of an MPP can be in almost any direction – from party to local government to national government to civil servant to party related work to provincial MPP and back again.

Indeed, the question of where do MPPs go after they leave office supports this argument. In the IFP, MPPs who were not deceased or left office to defect to another party followed one of two main patterns. They either retired from politics altogether (often taking full retirement from any form of career) or they became involved in politically related work not tied to the legislature. For example, the two former IFP Premiers from the first term – Frank Mdlalose and Ben Ngubane went into the diplomatic service as South African Ambassadors. Likewise, former IFP Minister for Education Vincent Zulu took up an ambassadorial posting to Jordan on leaving the legislature. In these typical cases of politically related service the MPPs concerned devoted their remaining politically active life outside of the realm of competition for power to a life of service to the whole country across partisan lines.

Volatility in circulation in the ANC stands in contrast to that in the IFP. In the ANC 65.83% of seats were constantly occupied from 1994-1999, a figure that climbed to 90.62% from 1999-2004. More than half of ANC MPPs elected in 1994 retained their seats for the full ten-year period of this study. This high level of retention instead of recruitment and replacement is a challenge to democracy in the province.

In comparison to the IFP, ANC MPPs who exit their seats do not retire from legislative politics or enter the diplomatic service. With the exception of those who retire from politics due to old age, there has been a steady but increasing pattern of ANC MPPs who leave the provincial parliament in order to take up other institutional roles. The first of these institutional role types is a political managerial role of significant status. Examples of this type include Michael Sutcliffe who departed from the legislature to take up the position of Chairperson of the Demarcation Board (organizing voting boundaries) and then became Municipal Manager of Ethekwini, Felix Dlamini who managed the City of Durban and Nhlanhla Ngidi who became Provincial Commissioner for the South African Police Services. This trend began in 1999 and has been steadily increasing over the two parliamentary terms. However, the most significant and increasing trend is that of ANC MPPs leaving provincial politics for the national legislature. Examples of this kind include Roy Ainslie, Mildred Buthelezi, John Jeffrey and, of course Jacob Zuma who became Deputy-President and then President of South Africa. In all such cases, provincial MPPs served a full term in the provincial parliament prior to their departure to the national legislature.

The provincial parliament has thus become for ANC MPPs a springboard to the national parliament and to senior political institutional managerial positions. It would seem that political institutional roles have become a career path for

ANC MPPs who use the province as a springboard to further career opportunities. This is a cadre deployment system in which extensive patronage is open to ANC MPPs at all levels of government, in the parastatals and even in the private sector. This is consistent with Bayart's specific discussion on the civil service in Africa that acts as a,

> 'shock absorber which softens the blows of fluctuations in individual careers … the provider of ambassadorial posts, and also the posts of managing directors of national companies, of high level administrators and of delegates. It prevents disgraced people from leaving the system, for they are always likely to stir up a dissident counter-elite' (Bayart 1993: 169).

This is congruent with ANC political culture and, in particular, to conceptions of leadership among these MPPs. Political institutional seniority is viewed as a pathway to greater respect, influence and power with the most senior roles considered to be at the national level and the management of entire municipalities in an executive role. This argument is borne out if one considers the level of influence that the national level exerts over the provincial ANC since the removal of Harry Gwala and then Sifiso Nkabinde.

If a political institutional role is seen as the most desirable form of leadership among ANC MPPs then this raises questions over the long-term impact of the prevailing norms of ANC political culture on democracy. Alongside these hierarchical conceptions of leadership within political institutional roles is a growing affiliation to the legislative structures in order to secure a political institutional role. The provincial ANC MPPs response to the floor-crossing provides evidence of this. In 2002, when the Constitutional Court declared that the first five floor-crossers had jumped too soon and would not be able to add their seats to the ANC provincial tally, the response of the ANC was to attempt to make the floor-crossing retrospective (see Chapter 6) rather than to respect the ruling. Ndebele was excluded from the discussions between the ANC and the IFP and the bid failed through national ANC interventions (see Chapter 6). This, however, had been a clear attempt to take control of the executive and to expand the number of ANC MPPs who occupied ministerial posts and chaired portfolio legislative committees. In effect the attempt to take control of the province was both an attempt to secure power for the party through the back door and to increase the institutional status of more than half of the MPPs overnight.

Conclusion

Political elite circulation and volatility in the occupation of seats in KwaZulu-Natal is a product of intra-party political culture in the IFP and ANC. These political cultures are not the same, and as such, do not have the same conse-

quences. In the IFP, elite circulation has been a product of a re-casting of the political elite to incorporate those who operate within the parameters of the prevailing norms of political etiquette. The concept of leadership within these prevailing norms, as a role not tied to any particular legislative structure, means that the rules of canvassing of ideas provide for broader leadership opportunities in the party and not necessarily in government. In effect, circulation has been a process that re-established the prevailing norms of political culture within the legislature.

In contrast, in the ANC there exists a much more structured conception of leadership that correlates to hierarchical distinctions in institutional position held. The legislature, in these conceptions of leadership, provides a springboard to greater leadership positions. As such there is a growing affiliation to legislative structures to secure a political institutional role that is tied to conceptions of leadership and respect. Circulation in the ANC is a product of these conceptions of leadership.

6

Inter-party dynamics, coalition politics and cross-party elite bonding

> Governance based on attitudes and values may be seen as 'a primordial carryover, a traditional or atavistic residue, to be cured or erased with the march of modernity' (Mamdani 1996: 187).

Literature that assesses the formal, procedural or institutional requirements of democracy emphasises the process whereby political elite conduct becomes increasingly governed by rules and procedures and elite political behaviour becomes structured by institutions. Some theorists emphasise the implications of specific forms of institutions. For example, Putnam's empirical study of the political elite in Italy (cf. Putnam 1993; Putnam 1976) demonstrated how modern institutions of government led to ideological de-polarisation and more tolerance among the political elite. As parties entered parliament for the first time they brought with them a zero-sum conception of politics, which rapidly dissipated as the elite succumbed to the moderating effects of the institutions. Substantive changes in the formal institutional structures 'gradually remoulded informal relations' (Putnam 1993: 47). Moreover, Przeworski, highlights the submission of elite interests to competition, a process of transaction through which inter-group conflict is processed and resolved. Consequently, specific outcomes are not guaranteed by such arrangements and continual conflict is thought to become institutionalized (Przeworski 1986: 47-63; Przeworski 1991). Hence, 'democratisation is an act of subjecting all interests to competition, of

institutionalizing uncertainty. The decisive step towards democracy is the devolution of power from a group of people to a set of rules' (Przeworski 1991: 14). A wealth of studies on developing countries has sought to probe the pattern of interaction between elites. Democratic elite theorists Reis and Chiebub, for example, explain the consequences of democracy as a result of elite values and attitudes. Inter-elite competition is explained through the way in which elites rank priorities (Reis & Cheibub 1997). Hence, implicit in democratic elite theory is the notion that institutions and elite values are intrinsically linked. Indeed, changes in elite values and attitudes may have consequences for democracy.

This chapter explores the patterns of interaction among the political elite in opposing political parties, primarily through an examination of the changing context in which a governing coalition between the IFP and ANC in KwaZulu-Natal was formed, and for a period provided a framework for parliamentary politics, before breaking down. Following a brief profile of elite cooperation and competition in the first term, the discussion turns to an examination of the 1999 coalition as well as the beliefs, conceptions and abstractions that comprise the parameters informing and motivating political action by elite sub-groups in parliament. The impact of the coalition on institutions and parties, since 1999, is then explored. Finally the breakdown of the coalition is investigated and the basis of syncretic elite bonding is examined. The purpose of this chapter is to demonstrate how the development of a variety of alliances – based upon shared characteristics among segments of elites and symbolic socio-cultural norms – impacted upon the legislature, and in turn upon elites. Ultimately, political elite formation in KwaZulu-Natal is determined by the way in which the political elite members relate to one another, a factor in which socio-cultural norms penetrate the balance between issues and functions, a force that is not diminished in the new political institutions.

The first term: Strengthening institutionalizing rules and procedures

The 1994 negotiated electoral outcome was to condition the attitudes of parties to politics and to one another in the first parliamentary term by bringing into the parliamentary realm their hostility to one another. This negotiation of seats took place between nationally based ANC elites and provincially based IFP elites. The provincially based ANC was essentially excluded from the process. The antagonism between the IFP and ANC of the 1980s and early 1990s continued within the realm of parliamentary institutions. Structural conditions required for cooperation between the IFP and ANC were not present as both set their sights on conquest of the key arena of the state.

The first few years of the first parliamentary term signified a duality of political practice and was characterised by extensive criminal investigations into a few senior office holders (cf. Goodenough 1998: 15-17; Johnson 1998: 2-17; Claude 1997: 1-7). Formal political practice (policymaking, practical questions of administration and legislative scrutiny) took place within the confines of the newly established institutions of government, yet anti-institutional destabilising politics continued informally in a parallel party power structure and struggle outside the legislature. Although political violence had abated in general after the first election, various flashpoints around the province indicated that the war was not entirely over. The most publicised of these centred on the locations around Richmond (Nkobeni, Magoda, Ndaleni, Patheni, Simozomeni), an ANC stronghold reinforced by a military arsenal and SDUs under the command of Harry Gwala and then Sifiso Nkabinde who both became MPPs. During this violence, thousands of families fled the area, frequent massacres occurred and a complex web of political manoeuvring by both the ANC and IFP tried to stifle the investigation. Despite the findings of the Richmond Sub-Committee – a sub-committee of the Portfolio Committee on Safety and Security – that a Commission of Inquiry should be authorised to probe the causes of the violence, no such commission was established. The sub-committee even included Sifiso Nkabinde who was under investigation for murder in the district. Despite questions addressed to parliament by the ACDP as to the reasons why the resolutions were never carried through, a public answer was not provided. The party received 'only a private response from the Premier in which he said that the IFP caucus said "no" to a commission' (Pers. Interview 31). Although the IFP feared the discovery of training camps that they had formerly established in the area to counteract the ANC, the ANC had much more to fear from a full inquiry. The result of the ANC's push into the region in the period after 1990, not before, was highly organised intelligence and self-defence units with the backing of a military arsenal. An inquiry threatened to expose this and, with it, the full nature of Operation Vula (see chapter 2) including the implicit support of terror and violence by ANC elites to counteract the IFP. So while the IFP "said no" and the ANC tried to downplay the crisis by denouncing Nkabinde, in the usual manner,[1] as a police spy, political elites simply went through the motions in parliament by appearing to address the situation without ever probing the reasons for the crisis.

[1] It would appear that denouncing individuals in order to sideline them has become a popular method in some ANC circles. The use of misinformation has a long history in the ANC and was used as a method of denouncing the IFP in the 1980s. The recent Bulelani Ngcuka spy allegations are a case in point.

Notwithstanding that such examples of duality in political practice were a consequence of attempts to cover up the actions of the parties from inside parliament, violence in the province also claimed the lives of some of the political elite.[2] These were individuals who had seen the need for both a peace process (discussed below) and the open and free competition of parties. The assassination of ANC MPP Bheki Mthembu[3] while working (alongside IFP MPP Blessed Gwala) to restore peace in northern KwaZulu-Natal signified that the new framework within which parties were to compete was not fully accepted by communities as well as parliamentarians. Blessed Gwala and Bheki Mthembu had been working in the areas around Gingindlovu to try and bring IFP and ANC youth together to find an alternative way of resolving political differences when Mthembu was killed. These early initiatives among IFP and ANC MPPs were later, in the post 1999 period, to provide a foundation for other adversaries in the legislature to seek a transformation of their relationships in the ANC-IFP Coalition (see later discussion). A public commitment to peace by MPPs, who were previous adversaries, appearing together on a shared platform in some of the worst areas of political violence signified an attempt to reign in supporters and to transform conflict. However, in 1998, this new approach was not fully accepted by all. The response of an IFP MPP to the assassination was indicative of this. He said,

> 'We need people who are able to cross the party divide to restore peace in our communities. The IFP cannot comprehend how the ANC will replace Mr Mthembu. There are too few members of the ANC who are equally able to put aside their political differences for the sake of peace' (IFP MPP Blessed Gwala in: Inkatha Freedom Party 1998b).

Within parliament the IFP and ANC sought to control the key positions from which their own involvement in political violence might be revealed. As such they made various attempts to control the parliamentary institutional arena of safety and security. In April 1999, the IFP ousted ANC MPP Bheki Cele from the role of Chairperson of the Portfolio Committee on Safety and Security. The

---

[2] These were ANC MPP Bheki Mthembu assassinated in July 1998 and IFP MPP Thanda Dingila assassinated in August 2000, as well as expelled ANC MPP Sifiso Nkabinde who was assassinated in January 1999 after joining the UDM. Later IFP MPP Thomas Shabalala was also assassinated in January 2005.

[3] An inquiry into the assassination has still not resolved who the perpetrators were. In 2002 the Portfolio Committee on Safety and Security called the Provincial Commissioner of Police before it to ask why nobody had been charged with the assassination of former ANC MPP Bheki Mthembu or with the assassination of former IFP MPP Thanda Dingila who was murdered in a separate incident. Today these assassinations have still not been solved, nor have those of IFP MPP Thomas Shabalala and ANC MPP turned UDM MPP Sifiso Nkabinde.

ANC responded by claiming that the IFP could not do this and it signified a crisis that threatened peace (cf. Ngubane 1999a). On the surface, this decision, taken in a special sitting of the Parliamentary Rules Committee, seemed to be a direct result of Cele's tense working relationship with IFP MEC for Safety and Security Inkosi Nyanga Ngubane. However, this tension signified a deeper power struggle over a key position. This suggests that as the IFP attempted to dominate policy and oversight in the portfolio that offered the most threat to both parties, the ANC endeavoured to retain the position that offered the most chance to restrict any probes into its own role in the political violence.[4]

By the end of the first term, however, expulsions and suspensions through circulation of the political elite (discussed in Chapter 5) appeared to combine with more tolerance in legislative committees and the realisation that the elite were responsible and accountable for practical questions of administration to produce an institutionally 'consensually unified' (Field & Higley 1985: 1-44), 'pluralistic' (Fleron 1969), or 'competitive coalescent' (Putnam 1976) political elite. Three tangible factors contributed to a gradual modification of attitudes among political elites from opposing parties.

Firstly, the circulation of elites reduced the most militant core of the political elite to a much smaller cluster and changed the dynamics that co-existed within and outside the legislature. The internal ANC coup in 1994 which installed Jacob Zuma as the ANC provincial leader (see Chapter 5) in a bid to provincialise and pacify the province – was the beginning of a process in which more militant elites in both the ANC and the IFP found themselves without the internal party support or freedom of action that they had enjoyed in the 1980s and early 1990s. If the method through which parties were to interact had now changed within the new institutional context, so had the composition of elites that were to carry out that interaction. In the ANC, although the coup of 1994 was to indicate that changes in the method of interaction were underway the discrediting of the more militant core was the culmination of that process. One might also argue that the ANC had the confidence to play a long game, banking upon what it believed to be the natural attrition of IFP support in the long "modernizing" run (cf. Johnston 1996c: 11-15). Two cases in particular illustrate the changes that took place. In the first, the removal of former ANC midlands leader and militant Stalinist Harry Gwala aided in the reorientation in the focus of political elites. If the ANC's concerns at national level were practical questions of administration, then reducing provincial concerns to provincial boundaries and making peace with the IFP within those boundaries were

[4] Control of key positions has been a continued feature since 1994. For example, in 2009, ANC MPP Bheki Cele was promoted, by the ANC, to the role of National Police Commissioner.

priorities, two factor that were aided by Gwala's departure. Fiercely outspoken on communism, issues of poverty and uncompromising towards the IFP, Gwala – 'Robben Island's Socrates' (Worsnip 1998) but "grassroots" leader – interjected and centred provincial political dynamics at the heart of national ANC priorities. This was a factor that earned him immense popularity. The extent of that popularity is well illustrated by Worsnip. He remembers, '… Harry Gwala arriving midway through an ANC meeting in the Pietermaritzburg City Hall which was being addressed by none other than Mbeki himself. It was fairly dry fare and the masses were a little restless. Then Gwala arrived. There was toyi-toying in the aisles. The whole hall erupted and brought the speech of the future president to a standstill for a long time' (Worsnip 1998). Gwala was deposed and then discredited in 1994 through a suspension from the SACP in which he was accused of operating hit squads against SACP rivals (a charge he denied). Gwala died in 1995 and was thus removed from the provincial equation. In the second case, the removal of populist midlands leader Sifiso Nkabinde from the legislature was one of the final stages in the ANC's attempt to rein in its militant core. Expelled from the ANC in 1997 over allegations within ANC circles (that he denied) that he was an apartheid-era spy, charged with and acquitted of murder, Nkabinde was assassinated in 1999. Like Gwala, Nkabinde was prepared to use the most militant tactics in securing the Midlands for the party and himself, even if it meant disregarding national directives. According to an IFP MPP,

> 'There were more problems with Nkabinde than with any other ANC leader in the Midlands. It was very acute …he was prepared to get his hands dirty and work at the coalface. He was different to people like Mkhize and Nzimande – they were academics. He was a kind of operational commander … Up until the 1996 local government elections, *he was* the ANC in the midlands.[5] In the election campaign, I spoke at 48 public meetings. At every one of them I heard Nkabinde's name' (Pers. IFP Interview 28).

If Sifiso Nkabinde's removal was part of the master plan of the national ANC to provincialise KwaZulu-Natal, it worked, but his demotion did not end his political career. Rather, Nkabinde's removal from the ANC catapulted him into a relationship with his former adversaries in the IFP who used him to provide answers to questions about political violence. The IFP had rejected the Truth and Reconciliation Commission on the basis that the commission was only established with a mandate to hear evidence of atrocities for and against the state. It did not include a framework in which evidence of violence between the IFP and ANC in KwaZulu-Natal could be presented (Francis 2010). Facing

---

[5] The interviewee is referring to the growth of power by Nkabinde under Gwala and then the expansion of his influence on Gwala's death.

a barrage of criticism over their rejection of the TRC process, the IFP sought to discover directly from Nkabinde an understanding of the context of the murder of IFP leaders in the Midlands that they could give to the TRC Nkabinde, rejected by the ANC, was willing to provide this (Pers. Interviews 43, 28 and 120). As an IFP MPP stated,

> 'In Edendale between 1983-85 thirty seven IFP leaders were killed … between 1987-90 approximately forty five were killed … In Ixopo all IFP leaders were killed … Nkabinde assisted in putting together a framework of names. For example, he explained that Ixopo was the logistical staging area for Transkei weapons into the province … The leaders were just in the wrong place …' (Pers. IFP Interview 28).

While Nkabinde's departure from the legislature eased tensions between parties in the House by instilling confidence that the ANC took peace seriously and could control its militant elite, it also provided some in the IFP with a measure of closure. Sifiso Nkabinde's departure was symbolic of the end of an era of violent competition for many IFP MPPs.

Although circulation was the answer to the militant core in the provincial ANC, the IFP addressed its own militant problem differently. This was partly because militancy took a different form in the IFP. In the ANC the struggle against the institutions of state (in which the militant core had been central) continued into the new order as synonymous with the struggle against the IFP (which now controlled the province). In contrast, the IFP's militant core combined populism and the capacity for direct action and physical force with conservatism and the party's discourse of respect. While the form of politics may have taken on a militant stance, the elite were more willing to defer to the decision-making body of the party and the party was more willing to find creative solutions to retain their populist vote-bringing elite. The most obvious example was Thomas Shabalala who disregarded party directives forbidding him to lead a march of the National Hostel Residents Association in May 1996 in protest against a ban on carrying traditional weapons by the National Assembly (controlled by the ANC). Although consequently suspended from the IFP in 1996 and then expelled, Shabalala sought the intervention of the courts. The judgement directed in 1998 that he be reinstated with all privileges, rights and offices held prior to his suspension (cf. Doonan 1997; Beukes 1998; Mchunu 1998; Ngubane 1998; Msomi 1998; Madlala 1998; Ngubane 1999b; Arde 1999). The IFP responded by awarding him a promotion as Chairperson of the Portfolio Committee on Housing in the legislature, not as a result of the court battle, but instead because of his apology to the party. In so doing, the IFP tamed Shabalala's militant tendency by apportioning to him responsibility for oversight of the department in the policy area in which he was concerned which afforded him an increase in salary by way of occupying this position, yet re-

tained his populist mobilising skills in Inanda, KwaMashu and Lindelani (cf. Vapi 1999) in the run up to the second national election.

If circulation and reining-in of the militant core served to remove some of the barriers to a working relationship between parties in the legislature, the second factor that contributed to a modification of attitudes was the institutionalization of a peace process between them. Alongside elite circulation, the Provincial Peace Committee – a sub-committee of the Portfolio Committee on Safety and Security – worked to establish peace in the province through regular appearances of former adversaries in communities that were designated as no-go areas for one of the political parties. As one MPP described it,

> 'When Nkabinde and I were in the peace committee we worked to show people that we were not fighting and they must not be fighting … We drank tea together … We sometimes travelled together … At the end of each day we wanted to win the other over. We went to Escourt together and some IFP members there wanted to assault him. They said to him "now you are in an IFP stronghold you are not leaving". I said to them "no-one will assault Nkabinde in my presence". I put his wife in my car with my bodyguard and I drove in his car with him … Then at Port Shepstone I defended S'bu Ndebele. I gave him my overcoat and I put him in my car …' (Pers. IFP Interview 65).

Although it was not only former adversaries that came to work together through the Provincial Peace Committee[6], the most acute aspects of the hostile relationships between adversaries were tempered through it. In institutionalizing a process through which former adversaries were compelled to interact within a formally designated framework, and publicly appear in no-go areas, the extra-institutional and informal spaces in which each personified gradually became modified. Hence, the coalition did not come about simply because members of both parties were pro-peace. Rather, the modification of attitudes of MPPs who were former adversaries was a greater factor in enabling the coalition. The earlier attempts to institutionalize peace in communities through public appearances (by MPPs such as Blessed Gwala and murdered Bheki Mthembu) were resurrected, but now by former adversaries.

Finally, the third component that contributed to an incremental modification of attitudes was the gradual understanding that the political elite were responsible and accountable for public policy in the province, a factor that demanded an element of cooperation between former adversaries. With the actions of the political elite now highlighted publicly, dual practices within and outside the legislature began to give way as the focus gradually shifted to carrying out their designated functions. The new institutional framework, however, also provided

---

[6] For example ANC MPP Bheki Mthembu and IFP MPP Blessed Gwala worked together in peace initiatives on the north coast of the province yet neither was implicated in violence and their relationship was not previously hostile.

a new arena for competition which parties readily seized, and for those who did not perform within it, the penalties were stiff. Within this new arena, individuals who proved less than competent found that their party's support was withdrawn from them. For example, MEC for Education, Vincent Zulu was fired by the IFP following poor matriculation pass rates (cf. Mthetwa 1999). Zulu had been accused of being 'uncaring, intolerant and inefficient' (Naidoo 1999), encountered criticism from the South African Democratic Teachers Union over 'deteriorating administrative capacity' (*Natal Witness*, 15 July 1988) in the education department, faced protests by angry teachers who had not been paid by the department while "ghost" teachers collected salaries (Ayoob 1998), and collided with the Provincial Public Service Commission over civil service appointments in education (cf. Broughton 1995. With the focus of the elite shifting in order to survive in the new political terrain, and the media closely scrutinising the actions of MECs and legislators, dual practices had been greatly diminished by the end of the first parliamentary term. The second election, however, provided new challenges for a political elite whose conduct had gradually become modified.

The 1999 IFP-ANC coalition: Institutionalizing certainty

The second democratic election in 1999 produced a hung parliament in KwaZulu-Natal that led to a coalition government. The government that was formed represented a cluster of elites in both the IFP and the ANC whose shared value systems were to direct the form of the coalition that unfolded. Cooperation and accommodation emerged among elites to the extent that values impacted upon institutions. Cooperation led to another duality of political practice through an institutionalization of power beyond the domain of the state in extra-institutional forums that circumvented the power of formal institutions. The legislature itself enforced this arrangement. A powerful cross-party hegemonic discourse, supportive of a parallel extra-institutional system of authority, tied elites into this arrangement. As such, former intra-party allies faced a decline in their relationship, some of whom became the new clients and were forced to enforce the position of the dominant faction. Consequently, the cross-party discourse and extra-institutional forums weakened the two signatories – the IFP and ANC – to the agreement, but not on an equal basis. One of the signatories, the ANC, faced a disruption in their organisational ties, a diminishing relationship with its core constituents and, to some extent, became the public relations arm of the state. In part, these factors (discussed later in this chapter) were as a result of unpopularity of the coalition at a grassroots level. The other signatory, the IFP, retained its links to its core constituencies through a parallel system of authority – traditional and chieftaincy structures – and informal rules of political eti-

quette, the very processes that were supposed to give way in a democratic system.

The negotiations and the agreement

The results of the June 1999 elections[7] necessitated a search for a coalition partner by the IFP. Although they obtained the highest number of seats, their loss of an overall majority precluded them from governing alone. Their exploration of coalition options was hampered by a move by the MF to align itself with the ANC. Rajbansi's decision to form an alliance with the ANC led to outrage among both voters and opposition parties because he had campaigned on the question 'Are you angry with the ANC?' (*Independent on Saturday*, 3 July 1999). However Mr Rajbansi is not new to forming alliances. He aligned his party with the NP before 1994. This alliance, in 1999, was in exchange for the receipt of the position of Chairperson of the Standing Committee on Private Members Bills, Petitions and Pensions for the second term. This position would otherwise have gone to the ANC. While the MF became entrenched as the only minority party to hold a Chair, the ANC utilised this newfound alliance to claim that they had parity in seats with the IFP and hence an equal claim to the provincial Premiership. This was a position that was coveted by a segment of the ANC who believed that the only way to exercise real power was to control the province[8] and whose failure to win an election in KwaZulu-Natal was an embarrassment to the provincial leadership. Since there was no national intervention in 1999 to negotiate seats, the election results could logically be assumed to be a reflection of public opinion at that time. As such the provincial ANC could no longer claim that their support was greater than the seats they held. Consequently, in the few days that followed the second democratic election, a series of coalition negotiations took place among segments of the IFP, ANC and DP that finally resulted in an IFP-ANC agreement to the exclusion of other parties.

---

7 The seats gained by political parties in the June 1999 elections were: IFP 34, ANC 32, DP 7, NNP 3, MF 2, ACDP 1, UDM 1, PAC 0.

8 In a personal interview with an ANC MPP he argued that it was a common belief in the provincial ANC that, 'as long as the ANC is not in power things will not change … Only when the ANC is in power do things change … We need a change of provincial leadership' (Pers. ANC Interview 57). See also Hlela & Rapoo 2002: 1-7.

• Coalition negotiations between the ANC and the DP

During three ANC-DP meetings a coalition format including up to four parties was discussed.[9] This scenario set out a provincial cabinet consisting of 4 MEC positions for each of the ANC and IFP and one MEC post for each of the DP and NNP. However, the ANC proviso for offering posts to the DP and NNP was that the Premiership be held by the ANC, a position that the DP would not endorse. While the DP had campaigned on the basis that they would not serve in an alliance with the ANC, they were prepared to dilute these assertions in a broader coalition format to accommodate their own ministerial posts into any agreement so long as the premiership was not in ANC hands. According to a DP MEC, the problem with the negotiations was that 'in the ANC camp … S'bu Ndebele genuinely believed that they could strike a deal with the DP despite national leader Tony Leon's position' (Pers. DP Interview 75). This position was that the DP had campaigned in opposition to the ANC and would not form an alliance now with them to the exclusion of other parties simply to be in government, nor would they support an ANC Premier. With the Premiership out of reach, the ANC recourse was to an arrangement with the IFP in which they could secure more ministerial posts with the exclusion of the DP and NNP. In the official election of the Premier that followed, the DP followed through with their rejection of both an IFP and ANC Premier by offering their own provincial leader – Roger Burrows – as an alternative candidate, a proposal that received only eight votes in the legislature, seven of which were by DP MPPs.

• Coalition negotiations between the IFP and the DP

Given the necessity of coalition, the IFP was placed to enter an agreement with either the ANC or the DP in order to forge a governing majority. Party factions within the IFP competed in alliance-building in support of their preferred partner. At first, the possibility of a coalition with the DP was explored but this failed due to a lack of consensus on political etiquette, the key method of intra-party interaction as discussed in chapter five. In essence, the DP failed to comprehend the significance of political etiquette in the IFP or how it guided their perceptions of other parties. In three meetings the IFP explored the potential for an understanding with the DP. In the first of these, as one MPP stated,

> 'The brief we were given for the meeting was "how far and how ready is the DP willing to work with us?" It was a good meeting … we looked at common agree-

[9] Present at the discussions were ANC MECs S'bu Ndebele (also ANC Provincial Leader) and Zweli Mkhize, DP MPP Roger Burrows (also DP Provincial Leader) and DP member Mike Ellis.

ments …we moved towards the idea of building a stronger pressure group with the DP that we could use in other provinces too …' (Pers. IFP Interview 99).

While the first meeting indicated to the DP that a segment of the IFP had no particular desire to form a coalition with the ANC (Pers. DP Interview 75), one of a series of preconditions for an agreement attached by the DP, and discussed at later meeting, frustrated the potential for any arrangement between the two parties. First, the DP was unwilling to form a coalition with the IFP on a similar basis to that which the MF had entered into an agreement with the ANC. That is, they would not be a silent and dominated partner but would instead be willing to vote against the IFP when MPPs deemed it to be in their best party interests (Pers. DP Interview 75). Despite the discomfort in the IFP camp at this precondition, it was not a deal breaker as past experiences proved that the DP voted with the IFP on a significant number of occasions.

Second, whereas the DP had already made clear to the ANC that it would not support an ANC Premier, their negotiators stressed to the IFP that they would not be party to a coalition that excluded either the ANC or the IFP. Hence any governing arrangement had to include the ANC. Although this precondition precluded any two-party governing arrangement from emerging from the meetings, it was not this precondition that frustrated a deal. In fact, a three-way coalition would have suited the IFP as a measure in which to appease different fragments of the party. IFP negotiators could not at this stage negotiate the IFP into any arrangement that would threaten the perceived interests of party Africanists that desired a closer relationship with the ANC. On the other hand, a three-way agreement had the potential to provide assurances to IFP MPPs who favoured a coalition with the DP over and above any arrangement with the ANC and who had in fact become IFP MPPs in opposition to ANC policies (see chapter 4). The assistance of anti-communist IFP MPPs who retained anti-ANC values and social and cultural links to elites in the DP bolstered the potential for understanding, as the meetings between the IFP and DP demonstrated.

Thirdly, although the DP supported an IFP Premier, it was with the precondition that it could not be the current incumbent, Lionel Mtshali. While internal party dynamics within the IFP might have occasioned a change in leadership, prevailing rules of political etiquette within the IFP necessitated the rejection of this demand. Instead of approaching the Premier privately, this precondition was stated openly in the presence of a full negotiating team[10] and was subsequently considered by the IFP to be a sign of rudeness on the part of the DP. If the DP could not work within the limits of customary good manners then

[10] On the first occasion the team included DP members Roger Burrows, Wessel Nel and Mike Ellis and IFP members Premier Lionel Mtshali, Prince Gideon Zulu and Faith Gasa. On the last occasion, the team included ten members from each party.

it was thought that they could not hope to govern a province jointly with a party whose entire being was premised upon a political culture of respect. In the IFP, the form of politics is as influential as the content. In this light, the rules of political etiquette prescribing political relationships determined that the DP, the third largest party in the KwaZulu-Natal government, provided a more credible threat to the IFP's very spirit as an organisation than its traditional adversary the ANC.

The rules of etiquette in the IFP premised on respect refer to a hierarchical system of interaction, a parallel structure through which leaders are consulted (see chapter five). It has three key features. Firstly, it provides a process through which ideas are canvassed among the political elite. As such, it provides political relationships with both boundaries and procedures. Ignoring someone who is respected within this process is considered to be bad manners. Secondly, this process draws boundaries, not merely in enabling and restricting interaction, but also in the form of that interaction. Finally, respect is a central feature and condition of ubuntu-botho. The individual is valued because (s)he is part of a greater collective. Insulting a leader in this context would therefore be an offence to the whole, and in this case the party. Hence, etiquette for IFP MPPs is more than a form of interaction within the IFP (as discussed in Chapter 5). It is also applied in the interaction of the IFP with others outside of the IFP.

Bayart suggests that African politics in the post-colonial state is 'comprised an ethic that is more complicated than that of lucre. A man of power who is able to amass and redistribute wealth becomes a man of honour' (Bayart 1993: 242). But the example of KwaZulu-Natal demonstrates that wealth is not the only route to honour in African politics, and not the only organising feature in the African state. Rather, if honour is a central virtue in African politics the practise of respectful etiquette is a key organising factor.

In the IFP camp, these prevailing rules of political etiquette provided the key factor in the particular form of coalition. An IFP discourse of "respect" that embodied a variety of cultural practices informed the party's choice of coalition partner. The failure of the DP to approach the issue of the Premier privately proved to the IFP that its discourse was effectively foreign to the DP, which was thereby excluded from any arrangement. Whereas the "non-Africanists" in the IFP realised the fundamental blunder of the DP and the consequences of this for a coalition with the DP, Africanists were provided with good reason to pursue the shared values they held with a cluster of ANC MPPs through a coalition with the ANC. Although these practices of political etiquette ran counter to the modernist discourse of the ANC, elite brokers within the ANC were able to relate to the discourse at a sufficient level to broker a collation agreement. As one IFP MEC stated,

> 'There are ways of being polite … Whites have been here hundreds of years and they still have not learned how to approach an African. They expect the African to approach them they way they approach each other because Africans had to do so in the past' (Pers. IFP MEC Interview 74).

The equation of an IFP discourse of respect with a broader discourse of race set the scene for the negotiation of a coalition agreement with the ANC which had as its basis, a shared discourse of Africanism between clusters of elites in both parties.

• Coalition negotiations between the IFP and the ANC

In failing to secure the premiership through a proposed four-way coalition, the ANC provincial elite drew on the resources of their national counterparts in an attempt to secure the province and shift the balance of power away from the IFP. A presidential intervention to offer IFP President Dr. Buthelezi the position of South African Deputy-President in exchange for an ANC provincial premiership demonstrated the first sign of a failure, by the ANC, to grasp the dynamics of internal IFP politics, a factor that was to lead to the later breakdown of the coalition. The offer was rejected by the IFP National Council, The rejection reflected Buthelezi's very limited interventionist role in the allocation of positions and the centrality of the IFP National Council in deciding on critical provincial and local matters. Instead Dr. Buthelezi retained the position of Minister of Home Affairs and former ANC KwaZulu-Natal provincial leader, Jacob Zuma, became Deputy-President. Interviews show that even if senior IFP party members had embraced the offer, the large amakhosi component of national council would not have endorsed an ANC led coalition (which intended to restrict their powers and functions) and the IFP would not have risked an internal fracture to the degree that this would have caused (Pers. IFP Interviews 127 and 116).

Devoid of other options and despite this rejection over positions to be held, negotiations between the IFP and ANC concluded an agreement that could only have been achieved as a consequence of a shift in the dominant ideological stance of the ANC. In the course of this dominant ideological shift, the former allies of African nationalists – advocates of a socialist state and liberal democrats – and their political ideals were suppressed. The two stage revolutionary project that coalesced socialists and nationalists in exile in the former Revolutionary Council and Politico-Military Council terminated at the end of the first stage – the realisation of the African nationalist project. Frequent ANC public reference to a "patriotic bourgeoisie" – an African bourgeoisie remaining patriotic to the two-stage revolution – served simply as a source of symbolic empowerment for former comrades lacking influence in the new political dis-

course. The concept of a two-stage revolutionary project existed now only in rhetoric, as African nationalists talked "left" but acted "right".

As discussed in chapter four, more that 80% of IFP respondents who joined the IFP prior to 1994, when asked in the interviews for this study why they chose to join the IFP, as opposed to the ANC, chose anti-communism as one of their three top reasons. They viewed the ANC as unacceptable because they saw it as SACP dominated. In addition, interviewees expressed a view that the ANC "policy" of ungovernability led to more poverty, as citizens attempting to earn a living was prevented from so doing through coercion into strikes and stay-aways. Ungovernability was equated with the socialist revolution to come. By 1997 all elite advocates of a socialist state in the KwaZulu-Natal Provincial Legislature had resigned or had been removed from office. A substantial proportion of IFP elites in the KwaZulu-Natal Legislature now viewed the ANC as 'speaking our African language' (Pers. IFP Interview 116) and as 'the old ANC, before it joined with the communists. Our constitution for Inkatha was the same … so we are reviving our relations, our oneness with the ANC' Pers. IFP Interview 74). Likewise the influence of liberal democrats within the provincial ANC had dissipated. An examination of the political background of MPPs has revealed that all but one[11] of the most senior governmental posts including those in the executive branch, held by ANC elites are occupied by former exile comrades. None of these posts are occupied by former political elites in the United Democratic Front – an umbrella body for a wide range of civic groups, trade unions, rent payers associations, church groups and others within a tradition of community based popular politics. Significantly, the ANC's ideological position has continued to reflect the values of the African middle classes and discarded the political ideas of former internal and external partners whose main contribution to the post-apartheid state can now be seen as providing organisational and mobilising skills for its very creation.

As a consequence, the modernising discourse of the ANC, albeit alien to segments of the IFP, reflected the language of respect but was articulated through a discourse of Africanism. This discourse resonated within the Africanist cluster of the IFP elite. As one MPP stated, 'African politics is very different to a Western political style. There is an umbilical cord between the IFP and the ANC. You can differ in politics, but there is no way you can divide us' (Pers. IFP Interview 92). Hence on a very real level, once some of the policy preferences of the previous decade were stripped away and peace was secured, a segment of the IFP and ANC saw that they had some key values in common.

---

[11] The exception is ANC MEC Mike Mabuyakhulu.

The nature of the IFP-ANC agreement

The particular form in which the governing coalition manifested itself is important to an understanding of the relationships between groups of elites. The agreement between the IFP and ANC consisted of a number of interdependent parts, only some of which were set out in a Record of Understanding tabled in the legislature and which specified a two-thirds legislative majority to overturn it. The name of the document is ironic given that this replicates the name of a document first used by the ANC and the NP for a national agreement in September 1992 that excluded the IFP. The September 1992 document set out certain sunset clauses where the ANC and the NP were prepared to commit to concessions that shaped the framework of Codesa II, to the detriment of the IFP and their negotiating stance. The new use for this title can be interpreted as a subtle indication of recognition by the ANC of the need to confer at least some measure of respect on the IFP.

In the new Record of Understanding it was agreed and tabled by both parties that they would use the coalition to address the contentious issue of a provincial constitution and the position of traditional leaders, issues on which the parties were polarised, and to establish a "balance" in executive position holding. The five-a-side committees were tasked to facilitate the formation of the coalition but a stalemate was reached over the distribution of portfolios. The question was whether equity (the premise that guided the ANC) meant equal distribution. An amendment changed the term to balance to translate into seats actually won, rather than equal distribution. This was referred to the three-a-side committee that met in Johannesburg which was in existence to look after national relations between the IFP and the ANC (Pers. ANC Interview 56). Excluded from the tabled document, but central to the untabled agreement[12] were two interlinked factors. They were the method in which the concerns were to be addressed and the way in which balance was to be interpreted. It was agreed that the question of executive balance would be addressed only once a provincial constitution had been agreed and that the constitution had to address the powers and functions of traditional leaders. In terms of balance, it was agreed that once the question of traditional leadership had been addressed and a provincial constitution established, the provincial executive would be expanded from 10 to 12 ministerial positions (requiring an amendment to the South African constitution) that would effectively provide the ANC with two additional ministerial posts (Pers. IFP MEC Interview 74 and Pers. ANC MPP Interview 87). Immediately, however, legislative committee positions were redistributed equally among IFP and ANC

[12] That there was an extra untabled agreement was confirmed in personal interviews (Pers. IFP MEC Interview 74; Pers. ANC MEC Interview 56; Pers. ANC MPP Interview 87).

MPPs and these positions were expanded to include the new post of Deputy-Chairperson for every committee, effectively increasing senior posts in the 80 seat legislature by almost twenty percent.

The basis on which the agreement was forged was reflected in the manner in which committee posts were redistributed. The newfound alliance of elite clusters, across the two parties, came to dominate the legislature as committee chairs were reallocated tipping the balance of power and control in the direction of the new alliance. The equilibrium that existed in functions across elite segments gave way, as many MPPs who did not support the coalition were succeeded by others and relocated to other legislative roles.

In addition, 3-a-side, 5-a-side and 10-a-side forums were developed to provide an arena in which those in the IFP and ANC that were formerly involved in the war between parties could address the issues that divided them (Pers. ANC Interview 78, Pers IFP MEC Interview 41; Pers IFP MPP Interviews 60 and 65). The idea for these forums was rooted in the earlier, but quite different, 1992 National Peace Accord. In this earlier accord, dispute resolution committees were established throughout South Africa as instruments of conflict transformation within communities. However, in 1994 these peace committees disappeared, while political violence continued to ravage KwaZulu-Natal. The immediate reason for this was that the ANC national government discontinued their funding. The ANC government no longer needed the peace committees to mediate conflict and smooth the negotiation process for the new form of the state. The ANC was the unrivalled party in power at the national level, constitutional principles which were to bind the final constitution-making body had been decided and the transfer of power was complete. The peace committees were now in tension with the ANC because decision-making within them comprised other political parties and civil society groups (Francis 2010). Parliament – in which the ANC was dominant – was now to assume the role of processing conflict.

The creation, in KwaZulu-Natal, of the 3-a-side, 5-a-side and 10-a-side committees in 1999 was thus a highly symbolic act. First, in the creation of these committees it was implicit that parliament did not serve as an arena in which tension between the parties could be resolved once and for all. Second, the creation of these committees signified a shift away from community-based strategies for peace towards an acknowledgement that the political elite were responsible for driving that peaceful co-existence. Third, these forums were the first in which the IFP and ANC were equal partners in the form and content of the committees. Although the committees had no formal or institutional powers and functions, they were conceptualised as forums through which the IFP and ANC could address the barriers to cooperation in the provincial legislature. As such, they had a dual role. First, the committees were arenas in which individual members involved in the war between the parties could talk and transform their

relationships. Second, the committees performed a monitoring function to ensure that neither of the parties acted in a manner that would undermine their peaceful co-existence. Hence, these committees were created by agreement between the IFP and ANC and had no formal institutional powers or functions yet they were to become (as discussed later) the main forum through which politics and public policy took place in the legislature.

Inter-party dynamics as a consequence of the coalition: Selling the agreement

The coalition was a point of discord in both parties. In the ANC camp, a cluster of MPPs believed that they had the right to control the province and unless the IFP was defeated a true victory had not been realised. In the IFP camp, a cluster of MPPs could not reconcile their traditional cultural values with the modernist language of the ANC, but they were prepared to endorse the coalition because of the agreement to define the powers and functions of traditional leadership. However a further cluster could not harmonise their anti-socialist values with the ANC although, in fact, it was discarding much of its revolutionary and socialist baggage. Their frustrations at the thwarted opportunity for an alliance with the DP were temporarily quelled, but then resurfaced in 2002 and in such a manner that a later alliance with the DA[13] was too late to appease some of them.

The concerns of these elite clusters were restrained by the manner in which the coalition was endorsed in the legislature. It was assented to on the basis of two factors. These were that this form of coalition would finally lead to peace in KwaZulu-Natal and that this would further enable development to take place.[14] The following sentiments were typical among MPPs.

> 'I support the coalition because of the bloodbath in the past. It is bringing stability in the province' (Pers. IFP Interview 106).
>
> 'It is a good start to ending the conflict and the killing of people. We come and talk ... We have an open chest ... So far, the talks have been helpful …' (Pers. IFP Interview 65).
>
> 'I am not privy to the ... meetings ... because I am not part of the history of conflict between the IFP and ANC. This allows those who were hurt to talk to one another in the face' (Pers. IFP MEC Interview 41).
>
> 'The ANC and IFP share the same constituency. We want peace and stability. The committees were established to look into the violence. We are looking at the

[13] The Democratic Alliance (DA) was formed ahead of the 2000 local government elections through an alliance between the DP and NNP. However, until the period after the floor crossing legislation was effected, MPPs in KwaZulu-Natal retained the title DP / NNP. To change their title before then would have meant a loss of seats as they were not elected on a DA ticket in 1999.

[14] Even the parties that were excluded from the coalition agreement congratulated the IFP and ANC on reaching an agreement based upon peace and development.

entire province and the damage done by political violence. They have worked very well' (Pers. ANC MEC Interview 113).

Because it emphasized peace, none of the political elite could challenge the form of the coalition (Pers. IFP Interviews 41, 131, 68, 92 and ANC Interviews 126, 57, 87), but the same did not apply to development. As the basis for development provision could be interpreted on a range of levels, from technocratic capacity to political will, the key discourse that came to be used to ratify the coalition was "representation". As the IFP and the ANC both claimed to be the authentic representatives of the urban and rural poor, the coalition would thus favour the constituents that were most in need. As this became articulated within the parties it translated into a justification for why the DP could not be an alliance partner. In the words of one MPP, '... in no uncertain terms could we enter a coalition with the DP. Their policies represent white business' (Pers. IFP Interview 131). As another MPP contended, 'If there was to be progress in the province it was better that the two parties, the ANC and the IFP, that represent the majority of the formerly oppressed govern' (Pers. ANC Interview 87). With the coalition justified to all, it became the dominant factor in the KwaZulu-Natal Legislature.

Cross-party political elite bonding

Coalition accommodation developed beyond an alliance of necessity, into a dominant set of political ideas at provincial government level. An examination of interviewees' fundamental beliefs, conceptions and abstractions which served as a "social construction of reality" and which motivated political action suggests that a powerful cross-party hegemonic discourse developed during the coalition. This discourse is multi-faceted. Table 6.1 shows the elite clusters of political ideas by party affiliation. Interviewees are categorised into clusters of political ideas, which were identified during the interview process as driving action and, in the case of the IFP and ANC sustaining the coalition. The categories are not exclusive. Interviewees were categorised by dominant value sets, notwithstanding that they may display values that cut across categories used. Interviewees have been placed in up to two groupings.

As the table indicates, multiple clusters of political ideas were found to exist among the political elite. These ideas cut across the two main political parties.

• Rewardist nationalists

Rewardist nationalism refers to a belief that the key positions of power and authority in society should be held by those who subscribe to Africanism. In its militant form, interviewees stressed that the African nationalist movement was the vanguard of change and the true defender of the rights of the poor. As one interviewee said,

Table 6.1 The total number of MPPs by party and political ideas* (N=128)

Value systems**	Number of IFP MPPs	Number of ANC MPPs
Rewardist nationalists	9	16
African consciousness (cultural communitarian)	23	18
Ethno-linguistically bounded communitarians	10	1
Traditionalists	7	0
Cosmopolitan modernizers	35	9
Pragmatic political pluralists	11	13
Individualists	8	5

Notes:
* The categories used are "ideal" types employed as heuristic devices as an exercise in ideal typification. The methodological approach used was semi-structured interviews in which interviewees were asked a series of questions on democracy and institution building, their most important beliefs and the representation of those beliefs within past and present political institutions, and their rationales for political action. These results were then analysed to produce six ideal types.
** Interviewees were asked a range of questions about their values, attitudes and belief systems. The answers to these questions were then grouped according to patterns and trends and then categories of value systems were drawn up in which these groupings were placed.

> 'Without us there will be no development. We (the African nationalist movement) are guided by a deep philosophical outlook, some might say arrogance. We have a right to impose our wishes ... We have a right to the role to lead everybody ... we are the true victors. Some say that the victors are generous' (Pers. ANC MEC Interview 134).

At its most extreme, suitable candidates were those considered leaders by way of their role in the former liberation movements. Hence, representation was determined in terms of recognition through former political position. As one ANC MPP stated,

> 'I have been involved right from my school days ... I could not finish my studies then, we had to fight soldiers and those who tried to oppress us, I worked tirelessly leading my community ... I now have my own house. I drive a Mercedes Benz. Through participation I have benefited. This is my reward' (Pers. ANC Interview 57).

This suggestive of a system of social capital, of networks of trust and reciprocity established through past political action. These values expressed are not underpinned by any substantial substantive programme of action, but on notions of the state as the key arena of privilege or reward. Herewith, among this group of MPPs, Bayart's politics of the belly may hold true, but not for MPPs categorised otherwise. Legislative office, in this context, reflects the

loyalties of the former period as retained in the present along a value system based on status. One particular example supports this. One MPP argued,

> 'This is not about viable government, about development based on representing the disenfranchised ... it is about jobs for pals ... It is a reward, not a public service ... it is about deployment, the maximum salary range, luxury cars ... I don't need the hassle' (Pers. ANC Interview 53).

In the context of the IFP this category of value system has come to mean a portion of "respected leaders". Within this category there are no Amakhosi whose value systems were not found to correlate with this. In the ANC, this translates into "leaders" from the former struggle. An IFP-ANC cross party identification with these beliefs was found, although as table one suggests, a larger proportion of ANC MPPs than IFP MPPs subscribed to them.

• African consciousness (cultural communitarian)

Cultural communitarians were found to subscribe to a substantial belief system of values. This cluster of elites recognized that a varied value system existed among the population, but considered the democratic project as an exercise in transformation. This transformation was to change the basis of coexistence so that citizens may be invited to participate in relations with Africans on terms which do not subordinate Africans to the cultural constraints of "western peoples". In this context, there was room within the democratic project for a style of politics based on African values and discourse. One interviewee articulated her most central values. She said,

> 'I represent African values and my core essence is very African, like the old PAC. We have looked to create room for African involvement on a wider scale with African values being central. If one looks at the role of traditional leadership, it is very African. Traditional leadership is our central core. You cannot be an African and look down to destroy the very institutions that are our Africanness ... If you do, you are working to some other home' (Pers. IFP Interview 116).

This discourse and values are not necessarily sectarian and are very broad based. Interviewees in this category – across the ANC and IFP – indicated knowledge of, and substantial support for, the views of Steve Biko, the former Black Consciousness movement, Anton Lembede, John Dube, Kenneth Kaunda and Kwame Nkrumah, although knowledge was present in diverse and varied strengths.[15] At its most emphatic, these values emphasise the rejection of foreign leadership in Africa, defined as "not of Africa" in anti-colonial terms. The idea of the creation of a new set of African values extends to the state – the state

[15] A small percentage knew of the writings of Franz Fanon, Amilcar Cabral, Stokely Carmichael, Charles Hamilton, Malcom X and Eldridge Cleaver, most notably among those members of the IFP who were former PAC members.

must reflect indigenous values. Interviewees in this category elicited a view of individual man as a part of a wider collective of values, customs and needs. These interviewees were opposed to what they see as South African liberalism, in which they equated liberalism with individualism and a system that means that those who were once oppressed will still be unable to participate on equal terms with the former oppressor. Further, liberalism among these interviewees was likened to a patronising attitude of superiority towards anything not English, and liberal attitudes as manifested in the expectation that the population should assimilate into a system of behaviour, values and codes of conduct favoured by liberals. As the table shows, these beliefs were found among a significant proportion of interviewees from both the IFP and ANC.

• Ethno-linguistically bounded communitarians

Ethno-linguistically bounded communitarians articulated their beliefs as a distinct "Zuluness" as opposed to a wider Africanism. As one MPP articulated,

> 'I am first and foremost a Zulu ... My grandfathers and their fathers were involved in battles, in wars. I will live and die believing in my people, fighting for them …' (Pers. IFP Interview 66).

Interviewees in this category stressed the uniqueness of what they perceived to be the Zulu nation and in some cases talked about separatism based on this perceived Zulu uniqueness. The core value is nationalism, the belief in a distinct nation and programme to protect what is viewed as Zulu. There is negligible IFP-ANC cross party support for these beliefs. As Table 4 suggests, IFP interviewees were found to be the main subscribers to these values.

• Traditionalists

Interviewees categorised as traditionalists did not explicitly support the institutional structures established in 1994, which were viewed as contributing to a breakdown in an already "ordered society" and as undermining parallel structures of authority which have more value. These parallel structures of authority were overwhelmingly referred to as a respect for elders and tribal leadership, the payment of tribute to the system of ubuKhosi as being the most appropriate structures in which people should be governed. The system of ubuKhosi is both an institution and a practice. It is the institution of the kingship and chieftaincy system as well as an adherence and loyalty to its principles.One MPP stated emphatically,

> 'If a man has a higher stature, a higher authority, you cannot say to him "no you are wrong". These youths, they cannot approach me without respect ... African politics is very different to a western political style ... this system has functioned for hundreds of years ... it has lived on through wars, colonisation, even when the last government attempted to impose their own chiefs ... We created the erstwhile Kwa-

> Zulu government to protect it ... and now it will live on through this structure too ... it (new political institutions) is just a hollow shell' (Pers. IFP Interview 65).

These MPPs did not associate parliament with any particular value and did not overwhelmingly support the new institutions. Their participation in them was in recognition that it is necessary to be part of any particular system in order to maintain stature. Participation provides a means through which individuals may access resources that provide status.[16] There is no cross-party support for these belief systems. Although patriarchical beliefs do cut across all political parties, they are not formulated into a belief system. All interviewees that were found to hold these traditionalist value systems were from the IFP.

• Cosmopolitan modernisers

Cosmopolitan modernisers embraced the modernity that the new institutions brought, but sought to encapsulate it in a particular form of social structure. A core aim was to acquaint communities with the opportunities and resources from the wider world, and to maintain but to modernise the institution of the Amakhosi. Interviewees in this category overwhelmingly stressed the importance of traditional leadership and traditional structures, as well as the importance of specific national traits in the political system. However, most importantly, interviewees stressed the importance of "building bridges" between the parallel structures of the tribal authorities and other world values, without sacrificing or undermining the very foundations of those traditional structures. As one MPP said,

> 'ideology cannot change ... our life and blood is the rural communities ... The traditional leaders are pivotal, they are the key to development. You may see me in western clothes, but I Mrs (X) ... I support ubuntu, africanism, traditional leadership ... We simply provided skills ... We can negotiate ... We have technological understanding ... We have built remarkable support in the business community ... As graduates we provide the bridge. We are using the elite to bring to the outside world that which they don't understand …. a black elite who had grown up in the historical tradition of the Zulu …' (Pers. IFP Interview 99).

Whereas this may be supportive of a parallel system of authority within and outside the structures of parliament, it demonstrated a commitment to development. Almost half of the IFP interviewees were placed in this category. In

---

[16] Access to, and allocation of, land was one of the key abilities that sustained and strengthened the system of traditional leadership in KwaZulu-Natal. Since 1994, national government has attempted to legislate on matters to do with land. Through the National Council of Provinces (NCOP), the second legislative house at national level, the provincial legislature may input on this legislation through its permanent delegation to the House.

contrast, only a small proportion of ANC interviewees were found to subscribe to these views.

• Pragmatic political pluralists

Central to the value system of pragmatic political pluralists is the belief that varied value and cultural systems can and should exist within society and each such system has a contribution to make to the form of the state and the practise of politics. As one MPP stated,

> 'We have faced in our party an identification problem. One of our weaknesses is that we didn't make inroads into other communities … We had a knee jerk reaction to oppose others … Now in government it is essential to accommodate everyone … These are signs at how far we have progressed … It's (the legislature's) discerning quality is that it is a broad church and can accommodate and accept everyone …' (Pers. ANC Interview 104).

Consequently, interviewees in this cluster exhibited two different perspectives. Firstly, that the state should reflect the values, codes and systems of behaviour of all who live in it, irrespective of value. Second, that the values, codes and behavioural systems reflected by the state should be in the best interests of all who live in it. A small number of members of both the IFP and ANC were found to hold these values. Significantly, when combined, this constituted the third largest category for both parties.

• Individualists

The final cluster of political elites could be termed individualists. They stressed the individual as being supremely important and maintained that the rights of the individual should not be subordinated to the rights of groups or peoples. The state's role should be one of cultivating and protecting individual rights. Interviewees in this category stressed opposition to traditional structures of authority, which were equated with feudalism, africanisation of the state, which was equated with skills flight and the promotion of an indigenous style of politics as subjugating talented individuals and producing an inefficient state. One MPP described his particular set of values. He said,

> 'I am a liberal, I cannot identify with the amakhosi, I don't believe in affirmative action either, only merit' (Pers Interview 83).

A very small number of MPPs were found to hold these views. Significantly, however, they were found in both the IFP and ANC. Indeed an MPP who expressed these views did so in the extreme. In speaking about his own views, he shared his perception of other views. He said,

> 'the hard line … is made up of two things. Firstly, the communalist … and secondly, the nationalist. In European terms that makes national socialist. In the South African situation that makes up black fascist' (Pers. IFP Interview 128).

This clearly demonstrates distinctions in value systems and, in addition, how MPPs set themselves apart from other MPPs.

Notwithstanding that cross-party clusters were found to exist for all but one category, an examination of elite circulation demonstrates that certain clusters of political ideas were found to be evident in different strengths at different points in time. Most significantly, over the two terms of office, there was an overall decline in the number of traditionalists, ethno-linguistically bound communitarians and individualists. Furthermore, the number of MPPs who could be described as rewardist nationalists, cosmopolitan modernisers or cultural communitarians increased. This correlates with the patterns of political culture discussed in chapter five where the conceptions of leadership, particularly in the ANC is supportive of these discourses.

Clusters that have undergone significant decline include traditionalists in their most overtly anti-institutional form and ethno-linguistically bounded communitarians who supported separatism. This, however, may have occurred through elite circulation and not attitudinal change as in Putnam's study. It may, for example, demonstrate that incumbents who hold particular values, had some control over recruitment and deployment, rather than attitudinal change as a result of the moderating effects of institutional frameworks. The party list system of proportional representation that is employed in KwaZulu-Natal makes this possibility even more likely in this context. The factor of declining numbers who subscribe to these beliefs can be understood as supportive of democratisation as conventionally understood. By contrast, however, the decline of another cluster, that of individualists runs counter to the development of liberal democracy, again as conventionally understood. These clusters – traditionalists, ethno-linguistically bound communitarians and individualists – were most numerous during the first term of government, and have been eclipsed by MPPs subscribing to other belief systems since the coalition. Conversely, increasing numbers of MPPs have come to support their own role within the state without any substantive supporting ideology except to legitimise their positions as leaders in the struggle. This has been accompanied by rapid moves in some departments to transform the civil service. Another cluster that became prominent is that of cultural communitarians, who reject liberalism and seek to impart to the state indigenous value and belief systems. The final cluster that became more pronounced is that of cosmopolitan modernisers, in which one of the core values includes the preservation of a parallel structure of authority.

The new dominant cross-party clusters that developed have formed around questions of leadership. For IFP modernisers, this is directed towards establish-

ing legally and institutionally the position of traditional structures, and of protecting socio-cultural systems within the institutional framework. As such a significant proportion of MPPs aimed to secure institutional approval for the chieftaincy system, which has survived for over a century[17] and ensure that the role played by the system was not eclipsed by the new institutions. This is central to ensuring that parallel structures of authority are retained in the present, but that new institutions may provide certain benefits to that which is traditional. For such members, the provincial institutions of government provide both a recognised infrastructure through which development is ensured in the province, and a framework through which a parallel structure of authority is legitimised. In terms of cultural communitarians, a substantial proportion of MPPs believed that the provincial institutions should more greatly reflect indigenous values. One area in which this was discussed was in terms of "consensus". A criticism leveled at new institutions is that 'they force an adversarial style of politics that is not in keeping with our African style' (Pers. IFP Interview 92). In terms of rewardist nationalists, the question of leadership centres on legitimisation of their positions as leaders, as the African elite who fought in the struggle. This is, perhaps, significantly similar to Barnes' discussion of Lagos in which he found that, 'rivals and factional struggles have been publicly subordinated to the task of gaining a larger place in the world of political rewards' (Barnes 1986: 143).

The significance of this particular trend is that intra-party ideologies, that sustained the form of relationship that existed between the IFP and ANC, were to some extent supplanted. All three perspectives of elites described as – rewardist nationalists, cosmopolitan modernisers and cultural communitarians – can be seen and were accommodated in the coalition where interaction provided repeated opportunities for the exchange of ideas, and a common political outlook was forged along the ideas of Africanism. Coalitions exclude as well as include. In this particular format, a political network consisting of a dominant discourse supplanted the intra-party ideologies and created a new hierarchy within the legislature. To some extent it could be argued that the included MPPs promulgated an ideology in which they saw themselves as owners of the arena. Justifying their rights in this manner provided a basis for solidarity in the coalition and the exclusion of other discourses.

A variety of authors have claimed that African politics is both *disordered* and *uninstitutionalized* (Chabal & Daloz 1999: 162; Diamond 1994: 14; Wil-

[17] This "institution" has been subject to some manipulation under white minority rule. However a significant proportion of chiefs command significant respect and legitimacy. For a discussion and analysis of the transformation and legitimacy of traditional leadership in KwaZulu-Natal, see Williams 2001.

liams 2002: 11). Yet the KwaZulu-Natal case does not demonstrate this. Rather, the range of African political ideologies in which the African political elite expound produces a greater degree of flexibility (cf. Bayart 1993: 230-234). This flexibility is both *ordered* through the politics of etiquette and *institutionalized* as a value within the state. It is rooted in the politics of cooperation and accommodation.

Impact of the coalition on institutions

Evidence from interviews suggests that the institutions of government, during the coalition formed, did not function to process or resolve conflict. Instead, accommodation and compromise prevailed in a manner that sheltered political elites from scrutiny and secured autonomy for elites to function in particular spheres of influence. This is evident in both the executive and legislative branches as well as in their relationships to one another. For example, it is alleged by some interviewees that the development programme of the IFP MEC for Agriculture focused predominantly upon development in the rural areas of Zululand, an area in which the majority of voters support the IFP (Pers. DP MEC Interview 75). It is further claimed that the ANC MEC for Housing chose to spend the annual housing allocation for 2001 by pledging it to the Durban City Council for their distribution in housing projects in the city of Durban, where the ANC's majority of constituents are located (Pers. DP MEC Interview 75 and Pers. IFP MEC Interview 128).

Moreover, the clearest indication of this accommodation is the failure of legislative committees to perform their institutionally designated oversight and watchdog functions. One MPP articulated her perceptions of the problem. She said,

> 'It is unthinkable. It neutralises the IFP, not the ANC. Every time we stand up and say something in support of IFP policy we are told "you are threatening the coalition". It is a liability to the party. The ANC are trying to finish us off ... We have prostituted ourselves … for what?' (Pers. IFP Interview 68).

Although the interviewee couched her impression in terms of an attack on the party, a conscious obstruction by elites of their own oversight role was found to be evident. The construction of the system of oversight was informed by coalition party political balance in the allocation of MECs and committee chairpersons. Where an ANC MEC sat an IFP committee chair was allocated to the corresponding portfolio committee and vice versa. Yet the committee chairs were found to be preventing scrutiny of executive roles. This was clearly apparent in a number of forms. For example, the ANC Minister of Health produced no departmental "reports" to the Portfolio Committee on Health, and when members of the committees raised questions about this, the IFP Committee Chair closed off the subject (Pers. IFP Interview 131). The IFP MEC for

Traditional Affairs provided no accounts of spending to the committee since the coalition was formed in 1999 so the financial affairs of the department were not scrutinised (Pers. NNP Interview 24). Furthermore, committees became a forum in which difficult issues were no longer raised. This is evident by the constant deferral of difficult issues and the failure, in some instances, to even meet as a committee. For example, the Constitutional Affairs Portfolio Committee met on only one occasion since 1999. When questioned about this by a member of the DP, the response of the committee chair was that he was 'waiting for the executive to tell him to call a meeting' (Pers. IFP Interview 138), the very body over which the committee has oversight. Instead, only non-political issues are dealt with by the committees, issues of a technical and organisational nature. In some instances, MPPs travelled to committee meetings simply to sign a register of attendance and confirm the minutes of the former meeting.[18]

A feature of this institutional weakness was the development of the 5-a-side and 10-a-side committees into extra-institutional forums where politics began to take place. Despite circumventing the role of formal institutions, these forums were justified on the basis that development in the province could not take place unless there was peace. Interviews show, however, that these forums went beyond institutionalizing peace and facilitating development. For example, the Chairperson of the Standing Committee on Constitutional Affairs waited for a mandate from the 10-a-side committee before calling a meeting. While the political elite became locked into these extra-institutional forums and proceeded in parliament on the basis of discussions and decisions taken within them, the deliberations of these extra-parliamentary committees were not open to scrutiny, produced no minutes for distribution and they did not report to parliament. Thus, these parallel structures provided a venue for the parties to confine their discussions and deliberations to an inner sanctum. Instead of the institutions of government providing an arena in which elite attitudes become gradually modified in a process that locks them in to a system of competition and negotiation, accommodationist politics produced an extra-institutional forum in KwaZulu-Natal that limited scrutiny in parliament.

Accommodation and compromise, while ensuring elite autonomy by providing opportunities in which they are shielded from the public and enabling governance to occur within autonomous spheres of influence (cf. Dye & Zeigler 1996), tie elites to the process of patronage. If accommodation and compromise is one of the prevailing methods in which elite interaction takes place then this

[18] This was confirmed by numerous interviews of MPPs from across the political spectrum.

would support a clientelist system of relationships. Clientelism[19] enables new alliances to be formed and older contracts to be terminated. According to Bayart, through the state the political elite establishes clients by dispensing favours and rewards. Patronage systems can thus establish vertical integration and factions within the state (Bayart 1989). Its key element is that it organises elites in their relationships with one another. Moreover, elites are able to use the institutions and the institutional roles to enforce a patron-client relationship. The party list system enabled the dominant elites / strongest party faction to manoeuvre problematic elites into positions which did not challenge the coalition. In this context, the dominant elites consisted of those positioned in the extra-institutional forums, all of whom subscribe to one of the three dominant sets of political ideas – rewardist nationalists, cultural communitarians and cosmopolitan modernisers. The insularity of the coalition provided for some elites the identification of their interests with it. These included interests of both a material and ideological nature. Material interests included careerist aspirations as tied to the expansion of the executive and increased legislative positions. The most powerful incentive to remain in the coalition is patronage in the form of provincial government posts. Notwithstanding clauses that state that there may be a maximum of 10 MECs, an agreement to amend the constitution to create room for an additional two ANC MPPs was agreed upon, to take effect once the powers and functions of traditional leaders was resolved. However, other substantial posts were also created in 1999 without the sanction of parliament. These included the position of Deputy-Chairperson for every committee in the legislature, an act that substantially increased the salary of more than 15 (predominantly ANC) MPPs overnight. Ideological interests included political values and policy preferences based upon them, dominated through the control of the agenda.

An analysis of elite circulation based upon value systems shows that "problematic" MPPs were moved out of offices, where they would be in an institutional position to scrutinise actions or challenge positions, and moved into other roles. These include positions in the legislature such as Whips, or in the party such as Chairperson. In these positions elites are *forced to enforce* the position of the dominant faction. In so doing, the role of individuals in party positions became that of blocking dissent[20] to the coalition without engaging substan-

---

[19] A reciprocal but uneven relationship between two or more people. The term is adopted from Roman law that enabled Plebs to become Cliens under the legal and social protection of a Patronus in return for political, financial or other obligation. For a contemporary definition, see Bayart 1989.

[20] Interviews show that dissent stems mainly from MPPs that have not grown up within the tradition of political culture of the parties as they are currently formed. See Chapter 5 for further discussion of this.

tively in any coalition discussions, a factor that is further enforced by the institutionalization of the coalition. In formalising the coalition, the parties tabled it in the legislature to last until the 2004 elections. The only way the deal could be broken was by a vote two thirds of the legislature. This meant that the coalition became anchored across parties and no faction within the party had the power to overthrow another.

Impact of the coalition on parties

Ideological consensus by the coalition partners resulted in partial fragmentation of the party system in KwaZulu-Natal, but not on the same basis for each of the two main ones.

• Disruption of organisational ties

In the first place, specific features of the coalition constituted an informal hierarchy, which disrupted the existing organisational ties of parties. The extent of the impact in each party was dependent on existing party cleavages and informal structures within the party. In the ANC hierarchy a layer emerged that consisted predominantly, of former exile politicians with ties to the national rather than local level. In practice, these MPPs disciplined their party colleagues by using the conception of the potential threat to the interests of the coalition as a means to limit discourse. Consequently, this reinforced party cleavages and widened the divide between party members who fought in exile with strong ties to the national organisation and those with historically strong constituencies at the local level. As a result, the organisational hierarchy in the party was maintained and strengthened in provincial – national relationships, but in provincial ties and provincial – local level relationships the organisational ties were supplanted. The new clients in this arrangement adopted the role of explaining and justifying the course of action taken by the patrons, not reasoning why.

Conversely, the complexity of organisational structures in the IFP meant that a new level on the party ladder impacted less critically on party organisation. Although the extra-institutional forums disrupted former organisational ties through a process of inclusion and exclusion, party cleavages remained cross-cutting as MPPs in the 10-a-side committee continued to follow patterns of party etiquette inside and outside these forums. Hence, if the formal patterns of organisation in the IFP are sacrificed, invisible patterns of etiquette mean that the party continues to organise and canvass through its organisational structures, and through these it locks in all members. The IFP patron-client relationship is reciprocally more equal in that clients can be appeased through relationships at other levels of government. For example, at local government level the IFP was in 2000, able to enter into an agreement of support with another party (the Democratic Party) because the structures of etiquette meant that party leaders

with strong political roots can advise the party to change course mid-stream if the local political climate changes.

• Impact on the relationship between party and constituencies

The coalition had an impact on the relationship parties have with voters, their core constituencies. In the case of the ANC, levels of membership declined and the degree of liaison with the voters diminished. In terms of membership levels, figures for the early 1990's demonstrated a national membership of 521,181 and provincial membership of 79,497 (Report of the Secretary General to the ANC National Conference in 1991, in Rantete 1998: 15). By 2002, national membership stood at a mere 89,000 (African National Congress 2002b) although provincial membership figures remained undisclosed as a result of the closure of branches. The decision making centre of the ANC (the National Executive Committee) consists of a fixed body in which half of the 10-a-side committee were represented as well as those holding provincial ministerial posts. Two opposing trends were evident. The first was continuity in, and entrenchment of, political leadership since the coalition formed. Seniority in local politics was not a guarantee of incorporation into the decision-making bodies in the party and many of the former charismatic leadership elite, that were represented in KwaZulu-Natal, were sidelined from the party (see Chapter 5). Indeed, the conceptions of leadership among the ANC political elite (as discussed in Chapter 5) is supportive of a top-down style and recruitment entrenched Southern Natal exile politicians without mass-based branch support. For example, even Bheki Cele, most preferred ANC MPP on the 1999 parliamentary lists, which were compiled by branch nominations, was neither offered a cabinet position, not a senior substantive committee post in the legislature. His location in the provincial parliament, in the immediate period after the 1999 elections, as Head of Committees was in an administrative capacity, not a substantive one. In explaining this, one MPP said, 'the issue is not about the voters … From the previous provincial government, those who were committee heads are now in cabinet' (Pers. ANC Interview 57). Hence, this progression in already institutionalized leadership is what drives deployment. The second factor is related to the first. That is, changes that have occurred in the balance of power, mean ideas also emanate from those located institutionally, in the national decision-making body – the NEC – and in the extra-institutional bodies in the province. These bodies are not always in agreement with one another, but they organise ideas in a top-down political style to the exclusion of the lower levels.

Interviews revealed that the experience of the IFP is different. Its main decision making body – the National Council – is made up of both a fixed membership of formal office holders who are members of the parliamentary party and formally recognised party posts, and a fluid body of "leadership" drawn

from the local level. These "leaders" comprise of Amakhosi (traditional leaders) and others considered respected and can be invited to participate in decision-making at any point for any period of time. Consequently, the party retains strong links to its core constituents, through a parallel structure of authority, whose voice is heard in the central decision making body. These strong links remain, despite the IFP losing seats in 2009. The party in later elections did not reach out to constituencies that were in contradiction with its core values (as they had in previous elections) which made it internally more cohensive, yet less able to garner wider voter support as in previous elections (cf. Francis 2009a). IFP membership has been less affected than that in the ANC because of local roots, which tie into the chiefly structure. It is through these invisible structures again that the IFP is provided with a method of interaction with its constituents, and is able to lead and enforce decisions made in the coalition, as the formal structures break apart, in a two-way stream of idea flows.

As a consequence of this, the IFP election campaigns in subsequent elections took on the form of local canvassing, often on a door to door basis by local MPs. This is in sharp contrast to the ANC campaigns (which the voters responded to) which were highly visible, sophisticated, expensive affairs that parachuted the ANC leadership into the region and emphasized the national power of the organization. The responsiveness of the voters to these sophisticated national campaigns is demonstrated in KwaZulu-Natal by 55,000 voters who split their tickets in 2009. They voted for the IFP provincially and the ANC nationally (cf. Francis 2009a).

• Subordination of the party to other projects

The third consequence of the coalition was the subordination of the provincial party to other projects. An examination of the circulation of MPPs demonstrated that in the ANC, key policy and strategy specialists increasingly abandoned the province for either the national level or senior managerial posts in the civil service. In some instances, economic managers and advisors were drawn from the ranks of the party and the party caucus MPPs rather than from the civil service[21]. Party members, rather than a technocratic elite, increasingly replaced executive departmental managers. Consequently, 'the party is run down in favour of the burgeoning state machine' (Tordoff 1993: 118) and the requirements of national governance. Tordoff argues that one of the key features that has characterised African states since independence from colonial rule is a loss of key personnel from the party to the state. This, he shows, prevented the political

[21] See the discussion in Chapter 5 where I provide the examples of MPP Mike Sutcliffe, MPP Felix Dlamini and MPP Nhlanhla Ngidi who went into senior managerial roles after serving one term of office as a provincial MPP.

party from playing a regulatory role over government so that the party becomes the public relations arm of the state (Tordoff 1997: 119). In KwaZulu-Natal the impact of this is even more critical than Tordoff suggests for two reasons. First, as circulation is upwards from the provincial to national levels, it strips the provincial party of the abilility to retain a supervisory role and the provincial government of the technical ability required within provincial state structures. This has further consequences as those circulated into power (as shown in Chapter 3) in KwaZulu-Natal, have increasingly less educational and professional skills to manage the necessities of governance. The provinces thus become devoid of policy expertise and the capacity to fulfil their constitutional roles, just as the party becomes devoid of expertise. Secondly, developing Tordoff's claims further about African states in the post-colonial independence era, well qualified manpower become lost not only to the party, but also to the state. As the cycle of upwards circulation and replacement continues, the initial recruitment and selection criteria that brought the political elite into power begin to have an impact through the cycle. Political questions of loyalty and types of party political experience (discussed in chapter four) are replicate and reproduced so that as the party loses expertise to the state, and new recruits do not possess that expertise, the state eventually comes to lose that expertise too. In KwaZulu-Natal, the provincial party became the public relations arm of the state for both the provincial and the national level and, further, at the provincial level an appendage of the coalition.

By comparison, the IFP derived its key strategists and policy advisors from a broad pool which included former executive departmental heads in the civil service, strategists, and policy specialists who became employed either solely within party structures or as MPPs.[22] For example, the key party policy advisor was drawn from the national department of home affairs.[23] Interviews have shown that the IFP utilised, as MPPs in the provincial government, those party members who were deemed to possess the skills necessary to compete in a westernised negotiation setting.[24] Hence the new IFP clients in the coalition were restricted to minimal input on substantive matters but provided a cultural appendage to the party that can justify party policy in the legislature. This has no parallel in the ANC and is not a key feature of other African states.

---

[22] One such example is E.T. Vezi who was employed as a civil servant before becoming an MPP.

[23] MPP Olaf Baloyi. Another example is MPP Mziwamandla Mzobe from the Department of Welfare.

[24] Interviews revealed that this involves two types of "skills". These are firstly, technical expertise such as accounting ability, document drafting and policy analysis skills. Secondly, these are communication skills such as debating abilities, ability to construct an argument and to speak in public.

• Impact on ideological coherence

The final outcome of the coalition was the level of impact on the clarity of political orientation and ideological coherence. All parties in the provincial government aimed to spend the provincial budget by improving the living conditions and life chances of the provincial population. Instead of coming to rest on a firmer ideological base, like other African states, the ANC abandoned the ideological base from the 1980's and party members could be said to support a combination of a form of social democracy and a larger Africanisation project although in varied degrees and formats.[25] This is in contrast to the IFP whose ideological basis consolidated on principles which were evident in its founding, and became more coherent. These principles are based upon communalism explicated by members as a form of African democracy.

The balance sheet: The IFP-ANC coalition

Although in the context of the new institutions more tolerance among the political elite was evident in KwaZulu-Natal, a suggested by Putnam, this may have been through a circulation of elites, and not a change in attitudes as in his study. Whereas competition between elites was still evident, it was manifested in particular sub-groups excluded from the extra-institutional forums in a cross-party manner. Conflict processing through institutions, as suggested by Przeworski, has in this context, given way to accommodation and compromise. This particular elite configuration persisted because through it, elites were able to pursue their interests in relative security. It is on this basis that its principles may be valued (cf. Burton & Ryu 1997). The manifestation of this has been a division of the province into spheres of influence supported by a dominant set of political ideas. As a result, politics was centred outside of the formal institutions of government in extra-institutional forums not open to scrutiny by the public, minority parties or sub-groups of elites that do not subscribe to the dominant clusters of ideas. In using these forums elites were able to lock away each other's secrets to the detriment of open and accountable government in the province.

This process led to an increasingly centralized, yet divided ANC. Specifically, there was a disruption of organizational ties, a diminishing relationship with core constituencies and subordination of the provincial party to national government and a burgeoning state machine. In contrast, because of a parallel structure of authority and a system of political etiquette, the IFP survived through reliance on these very principles that, by all accounts are supposed to

[25] The new mobilizing word became the less threatening and charismatic term "transformation" as opposed to "revolution" which is used for internal ANC constituencies.

give way. Rather than formal institutions leading to changes in informal behaviour, informal behaviour became strengthened within formal political institutions. The reasons for this anomaly may be located in the historical basis of the liberation movements as they existed before 1994. Both the IFP and the ANC were nationalist movements. The democratic modernisation project suggests that people are 'simultaneously pre-social and yet fully made, capable of assessing social options from the outside' (Gellner 1994: 185). Yet in KwaZulu-Natal the cultural penetration of the state by evolving and changing socio-cultural norms was the dominant manifestation. Indeed this may be a key feature of the state in Africa. Bayart, for example, claims that Africans did not simply adopt western political ideologies, but rather combine these with indigenous components and in so doing, 'suggest a real ideological interiority which is capable of inspiring institutional or administrative innovations …' (Bayart 1993: 244). What this resulted in in KwaZulu-Natal is in conceptions of leadership and status that are not necessarily congruent with the new institutions of government. Moreover, the balance that existed between issues and functions was controlled through the way in which the IFP and ANC related to one another in the province, a factor that new political institutions did not diminish. The dominance of three values based elite clusters correlating around similar concepts of status and power, and the decline of other value based clusters was the culmination of this process.

The IFP-DA alliance: Syncretic relationships

In November 2003, the IFP and DA launched a Coalition for Change with which the two parties were to contest the 2004 elections in KwaZulu-Natal. While the IFP remained in a coalition with the ANC at national level and in principle in the province, this was now balanced with an equally important alliance with the DA at provincial and local level.

Breakdown of the IFP-ANC coalition

If the 1999 coalition arrangement was forged as a result of failure by the DP to work within the bounds of customary good manners – as defined by the IFP – then the breakdown of the coalition reflected a similar mistake on the part of the ANC. Three factors contributed to the effective collapse of the coalition. First a failure on the part of the ANC to address the powers and functions of traditional leadership eroded the basis of trust upon which IFP elites were mandated to form and consolidate their alliance with ANC elites. In October 2000, IFP National Council stressed that the party,

> 'praises President T.M. Mbeki for the commitment he made to traditional leadership ... We pray that this time around South Africa may cleanse its image and honour by

> proving that the word of its Head of State and Head of Government can always be relied on' (Inkatha Freedom Party 2000b).

In November 2000 the IFP National Council resolved that,

> 'we are extremely concerned that matters flowing from the clash of powers and functions of traditional authorities and municipalities have not been resolved before the local government elections in spite of promises and assurances that such conflict would be eliminated and the powers of traditional authorities protected and restored' (Inkatha Freedom Party 2000a).

By May 2001, the IFP stressed that despite,

> '... two years of negotiations and ... the many promises made, the issue of the clash of powers and functions of municipalities with those of traditional authorities still remain unresolved ... (and) ... unless the issue ... is resolved, it will be impossible to carry out the function of councils operating in traditional areas ... (and) ... all KwaZulu-Natal municipalities in areas of amaKhosi will have no alternative but to stop all their activities' (Inkatha Freedom Party 2001).

While the ANC in KwaZulu-Natal claimed that the IFP had reneged upon the coalition agreement because a "balance" in executive positions had not been forthcoming, IFP elites argued that a redistribution of executive positions was only warranted once the question of traditional leadership had been addressed. Notwithstanding that both parties felt aggrieved, the IFP beneficiaries of the coalition (whether through the promotion of shared values or occupation of legislative committee posts) could not claim that the coalition assisted peace and development, since both were now at stake.

If trust was undermined by the first factor, then a second factor – that of HIV/AIDS – provided a clash over power and status between the IFP and ANC. It also provided evidence to ANC rewardist nationalists that they should govern alone and anti-coalitionists in the IFP with a basis upon which to claim that the coalition prevented development. While traditional leaders in the IFP National Council urged the provision of anti-retrovirals to the most highly infected provincial population – that of KwaZulu-Natal – national ANC leaders denied that HIV caused AIDS (cf. Good 2002: 130-133). The ANC national cabinet's position on the provision of anti-retroviral drugs created a fracture between provincial coalition partners caught in the crossfire. The application of the Treatment Action Campaign to force national government to provide anti-retroviral drugs was accompanied by the IFP Premier's[26] signature as party to the application. Although essentially a policy division that raised questions about national and provincial competencies (between the national ANC and the provincial IFP), the ANC provincial leader[27] attempted to prevent the Premier

[26] IFP Premier Lionel Mtshali.
[27] Sibusiso Ndebele.

from forcing the provincial minister of health[28] to provide anti-retroviral drugs, by openly and publicly challenging the Premier's authority to intervene in the Health Ministry. Whereas the coalition had prevented legislative committees from performing their institutionally designated watchdog and oversight functions, its confines had not extended to the executive committee and thus not to policy making per se. In fact, shielded from the scrutiny of the legislature, the coalition had provided autonomy for MECs to act within spheres of influence. Now, however, the Premier had exercised his constitutionally designated mandate[29] to override ANC policy that was in direct violation of the directives of their national counterparts.

Sibusiso Ndebele's intervention can be interpreted as a desire for respect from his national ANC counterparts (whose perspective he was defending through his intervention) and in accordance with his own perception of equal status with Mtshali. As ANC provincial leader, Ndebele saw himself as co-convenor of cabinet in the coalition which was a position that demanded consultation by Mtshali and implied parity in functions and authority between the two elites. However, the direct and open intervention by Sibusiso Ndebele on the basis of status was to clash with the perceptions of status held by the IFP. This was, in fact, a triple challenge. Despite the coalition government, the IFP perceived that their right to the premiership was based upon their having won the election. To directly challenge the prerogative of the premier, to then carry out his constitutionally designated functions, was to challenge the legitimacy of the party's position – that it had a public mandate. In effect, the ANC challenged the legitimacy of the election results that conferred status, through office, upon the IFP. As if this lack of respect in terms of legitimacy was not bad enough, Ndebele challenged Mtshali publicly. The inference was that Ndebele expected to be consulted. While the IFP considered this a sign of rudeness by the ANC (in the same manner as the DP during the 1999 coalition negotiations) this act further challenged the basis of internal canvassing within the IFP. With the wishes of traditional leadership vested in Mtshali (as party chairman) through the internal parallel system of canvassing, Ndebele (without ancestral greatness) had challenged the wisdom of great leaders in the IFP, and done so

---

[28] ANC MEC Zweli Mkhize.

[29] Provision for the Premier's executive intervention was provided for in the South African Constitution which states that 'the executive authority of a province is vested in the Premier' (RSA 1996a: Section 125) and 'the Premier of a province appoints the members of the Executive Council, assigns their powers and functions and may dismiss them' (RSA 1996a: Section 132) and 'the Premier … may transfer to a member of the Executive Council (of which he is also a member) the administration of any legislation entrusted to another member; or any power or function entrusted … to another member' (RSA 1996a: Section 137).

publicly. Finally, Ndebele removed from the IFP elite the justification for a continued coalition. If Mtshali could not carry out the wishes of National Council, then the IFP elite could not justify to co-opted elites the benefits of coalition. Instead, the IFP appeared to only be able to serve traditional leaders if the ANC at national level dictated it. Caught up in the discourse of status and power that operated, in the ANC through position holding and in the IFP through etiquette, the coalition was beginning to take serious strain. While the predominant perceptions of status and leadership held among the political elite did not correlate with the new institutions of government they were not conducive to a coalition on this basis either.

The third factor was legislation to allow elected representatives to cross the floor and retain their seats.[30] This was the final act of disrespect that effectively thrust the IFP into an agreement with another party. Although the legislation was put in place primarily to effect change at the municipal level (which had a constituency based electoral system), the interventions of a cluster of ANC elites in KwaZulu-Natal ensured that its impact was felt provincially within the coalition. While the legislation was enacted at national level, ANC provincial leader and MEC Sibusiso Ndebele announced that 'the ANC will take control of the province after the floor-crossing legislation comes into effect' (*Mail and Guardian,* January 2003: 3) and in a political programme adopted by the ANC spoke of 'excitement ... about the possibility of the ANC to lead the KwaZulu-Natal government' (African National Congress 2002a). The legislation came into effect almost immediately after an IFP-ANC 15-a-side committee meeting had produced an agreement in which national ANC members were present. The agreement concluded that the IFP would 'immediately search for avenues (to fulfil the original coalition agreement) through the relocation of functions to ANC Ministers' (Inkatha Freedom Party – African National Congress 2002) and the ANC would 'suspend the implementation of the decision taken on the KwaZulu-Natal legislature (i.e. its relocation to Pietermaritzburg)' (Inkatha Freedom Party – African National Congress 2002). Although an agreement that was intended to address outstanding coalition issues and keep the government on track, a group of provincial ANC members simultaneously approached

[30] The floor-crossing legislation was initially supported by the DP, but only at the local government level where a constituency based ward system of elections is in place. It was then introduced by the ANC at the levels of national and provincial government in a party-list system of proportional representation. This was primarily because of the split of the DA and the desire of political elites in the NNP to join the ANC without losing their parliamentary seats, a move which substantially increased the ANC majority without an election ever being called.

MPPs in three other parties in order to take control of the province.[31] The events that then unfolded demand explication in some detail for the impact they had on the relationship between elites in the IFP and ANC, the IFP and the DA and the national and provincial ANC.

On coming into effect in June 2002, the floor-crossing legislation encouraged five provincial MPPs[32] to cross to the ANC. This effectively shifted the legislative majority to the ANC.[33] The five MPPs were immediately fired and replaced by their respective parties and the Cape High Court ruled in favour of the suspension of the legislation until it had been considered by the Constitutional Court, a ruling that applied equally to KwaZulu Natal.[34] The ruling of the Constitutional Court was that 'the legislation had procedural flaws at provincial and national level' (cf. *The Mercury*, 3 April 2003; 16 December 2002) and they had defected prematurely. Despite this, a faction of the provincial ANC continued with its bid to control the province. This new bid was in the form of a clause providing for retrospective validity that was to be included in the revised legislation tabled to go before the National Assembly in February 2003. It effectively ensured, if implemented, that the five would be reinstated and the ANC could take control of the legislature and executive. Three factors effectively brought national level ANC elites in to override their provincial counterparts (discussed in later detail in this chapter) and averted the complete breakdown of the relationship between the parties. These factors were, firstly, IFP President Buthelezi's offer to resign from cabinet (cf. *Sunday Times*, 8 December 2002) in national government which, had he done so, would have signified the end of the coalition in November 2002. The second factor was the dismissal, by Premier Mtshali, of two of the four ANC MECs[35] in the provincial cabinet to be replaced by two DA MECs[36] in December 2002. The third factor was the announcement by the Premier of a special sitting in January 2003 in

---

31 In three personal interviews of IFP MPPs it was alleged by them that the ANC offered to pay their mortgages if they crossed the floor from the IFP to the ANC. Although it is impossible to check the accuracy of such allegations, or whether such practices occurred in other cases, the allegations are indicative of the atmosphere of parliament and the perceived fragility of allegiance. The MPPs wish to remain anonymous, and one has since crossed the floor to the ANC.

32 These were Mike Tarr and Maurice Mackenzie from the IFP, Belinda Scott and Tim Jeebodh from the DA and Sam Nxumalo from the UDM.

33 The ANC legislative majority depended upon the two-seat alliance with the MF and a new alliance with the NNP after their breakaway from the DA, which consisted of a further three seats.

34 The DA also applied for and was granted an interdict to suspend the two MPPs that crossed the floor to the ANC.

35 These were MECs Makhaye and Mabuyakhulu.

36 These were MECs Burrows and Ngcobo.

which he intended to dissolve the legislature and hold an election (KwaZulu-Natal Legislature 2003). Although in principle the coalition continued to exist, it did so from this point onwards only alongside an additional alliance that the IFP made with the DA.

In excluding fractions of elites from the coalition by making their positions futile, the coalition had increased the circulation of MPPs. Although citing individual reasons of conscience, the two IFP MPPs[37] had been sidelined by the way in which the coalition was manifested. Neither had supported it, yet had directly felt its effects having been removed from their chairperson positions to be replaced by "Africanists". In crossing the floor, three[38] of the five had traded upon the social capital that they shared with the ANC Chief Whip[39] and the Chief Whip had in turn traded upon that same capital to assure them of their future in the ANC. In terms of the other two that crossed, one[40] had grown up in the ANC civic tradition but was not senior enough to be on the ANC provincial list, although an attractive non-white candidate for the former DP. The floor-crossing window provided him with a means of jumping the queue. The other[41] faced suspension from his party and the opportunity to cross was his only means by which to stay in the legislature. The very basis upon which the IFP and ANC secured the coalition had served to undermine it. Rewardist nationalists thrust into a position of dominance through a coalition based upon Africanism desired a greater number of executive positions. While the coalition coalesced around questions of leadership and status, there were not enough executive positions to satisfy the ambitions of this cluster without taking control of government itself. Although those ambitions were thwarted by the national intervention, the animosity that this created strengthened the position of anti-coalitionists in the IFP.

Building an alliance with the DA

The exclusion of the DP from any meaningful role in provincial politics, and the loss of a potentially significant role in government through a coalition with the IFP, had forced the party in 1999 to re-examine the way in which its strategic position correlated with its aims and objectives. In addition to the weakening of the IFP – ANC coalition which persuaded the IFP to seek an alternative combination of partners, two factors provided the opportunity for the party to gain a stronger position in the provincial government.

The first was provided by a cluster of IFP elites that had been either excluded from a meaningful role in the legislature because of the basis of the

[37] MPPs Mike Tarr and Maurice Mackenzie.
[38] MPPs Mike Tarr, Maurice Mackenzie and Belinda Scott.
[39] MPP Ina Cronje.
[40] MPP Tim Jeebodh.
[41] MPP Sam Nxumalo.

coalition or had been disillusioned by the failure of ANC etiquette. They requested that the DA 'tone it down' (Pers. IFP Interview 68) and begin to realise 'that it is not what they say, but rather how they say it' (Pers. IFP MEC Interview 128). In adopting the etiquette of their party but in sharing the social background of their formerly DP and now DA counterparts, these IFP MPPs served as brokers in the same way that the ANC Chief Whip had persuaded MPPs to cross the floor. As the DA began to take a softer tone with the IFP, Buthelezi's 2002 speech to the National Assembly sent a firm message to both the ANC and IFP. Whilst criticising the ANC over HIV-AIDS policy, Buthelezi suggested to the IFP that the party should try to listen to the content of the DA criticisms even if their style of delivery was abrasive (Buthelezi 2002). As the DA tried to please their potential allies, they began to set aside some of the decisions that had offended the IFP earlier. These included the issue of the provincial capital in which they now no longer demanded should be in Pietermaritzburg and a recognition that the 'Premier Mtshali is incredibly honest and actually wishes to do the right thing for the province. He probably does have the best interests of the province at heart' (Pers. DP Interview 75). In acting as brokers, IFP elites precipitated a new style of interaction between the IFP and DA.

The second factor that paved the way for a stronger position in the provincial government was a change in the composition of the former DP. In 2000, after the IFP-ANC provincial coalition was established, a merger was established between the DP and the Federal Alliance[42]. Following this, an agreement was reached between the NNP and DP at the national level. This established the Democratic Alliance. In essence, the DP and NNP did not officially merge at the provincial and national levels because the electoral system in 2000 precluded them from forming a new party and retaining their parliamentary seats. However, all decisions were made as if they were one party and in December 2000 they contested the local government elections, under a constituency based electoral system, as the new party. In October 2001 this unity agreement collapsed and Marthinus van Schalkwyk[43] took the NNP (which was still officially a political party at provincial and national level) into an alliance with the ANC. In 2003, after the floor-crossing was legalised van Schalkwyk merged the NNP into the ANC.

The outcome in KwaZulu-Natal was different from the fallout at national level, where the majority of NNP members had walked across to join the ANC. In contrast, in KwaZulu-Natal, in 2003 when the floor crossing was legalised, all NNP MPPs remained with the DA and the only person to merge with the

---

[42] This was a political party on the right of the political spectrum under the leadership of Dr. Louis Luyt.

[43] Leader of the NNP.

ANC had originally come from the DP.[44] In KwaZulu-Natal, elites in the DA consisted of some from the former NNP who had been representatives at the local government level. As consequence, the DA position on certain issues from 2000 onwards came to identify more closely with those of the IFP. In terms of the powers and status of traditional leadership the DP moved from a position in which they 'could not identify with the Amakhosi' (Pers. DP MEC Interview 75) to one in which the DA came to 'acknowledge the status of cultural leadership' (Pers. DP Interview 9). Shifts on both etiquette and issues by the new DA were to provide the IFP with a tempting alternative, which indeed they seized.

The basis of the IFP – DA agreement to establish the Coalition for Change

In January 2003, IFP Premier Lionel Mtshali convened a special sitting of parliament with the explicit intention of dissolving parliament and holding a general election. This was as a direct consequence of an attempt by the provincial ANC to make the floor-crossing legislation retrospective in order to keep the seats of the five MPPs that had crossed early, and to snatch power in the province without an election. This special sitting of parliament provided the first real indicator of the basis of a newfound provincial alliance between the IFP and the DA. Rather than focusing upon issues, as in the 1999 elections, the two parties focused upon principles. The key principle upon which the IFP and DA coalesced was that of the restoration of democracy and a key precondition for the DA of an alliance with the IFP. This was to be in the form of the dissolving of parliament and holding of an election to test voter's support for each party in the wake of the ANC attempts to make floor crossing retrospective. In Mtshali's speech to the special session he said,

> The calling of an early election became necessary to protect democracy ... The national government is considering legislation which will have the obvious and automatic implication of establishing in this Province a new parliamentary majority and a new government which will rest not on the will of the people, but on a legislative edict ... there is provision in the Constitutional amendment being considered by the Portfolio Committee of Justice ... (which is an) ... immoral and effectively retrospecttive constitutional provision which operates in respect of five pre-identified individuals ... Were it not for the political dynamics playing out in this parliament, at the institutional level South Africa would be much closer to the consolidation of a one-party state ... (The ANC) sought to prevent our democratic right to hold an election by resorting to pressures, erroneous readings of the Constitution and by raising the spectre of violence...Drawing the equation that any expression of dissent leads to violence carries the implication that in order to curtail violence, one must silence dissent. It is our duty to continue to preserve the capacity of this parliament ... to dissent whenever it is necessary ... to ensure ... the promise of democracy' (Mtshali 2003a).

---

[44] MPP Omie Singh.

This crisis in democracy, brought about by the provincial ANC's desire to take power through illegitimate means was the final straw that ended the IFP-ANC coalition. Not only did ANC MPPs attempt to introduce a retrospective constitutional clause, but they also attempted to prevent Mtshali from dissolving parliament as was his constitutionally designated mandate. This is referred to in Mtshali's statement above and was through two means. The first was by misinterpretations of the constitution. The second was by suggesting that to do so, and to end the IFP-ANC coalition, would lead to violence in the province. The inference by the ANC was that only by ignoring the crisis of democracy and allowing the ANC to snatch power could violence be averted. Although unlikely that violence would occur to anything approaching the extent of the early 1990s, the fact that this was used as a bargaining tool with the IFP indicates how important peace was to the original coalition.

In choosing democracy as the first principle upon which to base the new alliance, Mtshali sent a message to both the provincial ANC and pro-coalitionists in the IFP that the ANC's quest for power through illegitimate means was not to be tolerated. If the principle of democracy was to be protected, so was good governance, the rule of law and a strong opposition, key themes in later speeches and statements to the legislature in 2003 (cf. Mtshali 2003b; Inkatha Freedom Party – Democratic Alliance 2003). This new set of principles came to dominate provincial speeches and debates up until the election in 2004.

The principle of democracy was not the only theme however. The DA and IFP shared certain organising principles such as federalism, and specific policy preferences in the areas of HIV/AIDS, education, crime, unemployment and poverty reduction strategies. If the IFP-ANC coalition integrated shared values on the nature of leadership and status in a unity project the IFP-DA alliance reconciled principles of self-help in a project that was based upon opposition to domination. The IFP-DA coalition that came into effect in 2003 existed in both the legislative and executive branches. In the executive, the IFP Premier Lionel Mtshali fired two ANC MECs and awarded those positions to two DA MPPs. In the legislature, the emphasis upon democratic principles and the rule of law began to produce some healthy debate for the first time in almost four years.

The response of the ANC to the IFP-DA coalition

In the few days prior to the special session of parliament the IFP-ANC coalition crisis had grown in momentum. The ANC provincial leader was publicly preparing himself to be premier and MPPs were openly discussing the cabinet positions that they would hold. This culminated in the offer of a withdrawal from cabinet at the national level by Buthelezi, the dismissal of two ANC MECs by Mtshali and finally the prospect of a provincial election called for in the special sitting. The actions of provincial elites – in their insistence of the

inclusion of a retrospectivity clause in the floor-crossing legislation, in order to snatch power, was reminiscent of the early part of the decade (see chapter two) and the late 1980s early 1990s in which provincial ANC elites dictated the relationship between the two parties and national strategy within the province. These events brought forth a national intervention by the ANC. By 2003 the concerns of the ANC at national level had changed. Their concerns were not to crush the IFP, but to pacify them so that provincial concerns were not central to national strategies. Furthermore, the national ANC were alert to the danger of the DA reaching an understanding with a credible black-based political party. In order to pacify the IFP, the ANC in the province had to be "provincialised", which meant putting the elite it in its place by overriding its actions and publicly restoring the respect towards the IFP that had been broken. To do this, the ANC sent Jacob Zuma, by now Deputy-President of South Africa, back to the province, the diplomatic emissary of respected Zulu descent who understood the bigger picture and who could relate to the IFP's most central concerns.

In the negotiations that followed, the provincial ANC was excluded by its national counterparts and Zuma negotiated directly with IFP MEC Celani Mtetwa, an advocate of the IFP-ANC coalition and respected leader of traditional descent (Pers. ANC MEC Interview 56; Pers. ANC MPP 87; Pers. IFP MEC Interview 74). In so doing, the ANC tried to bestow a sense of restored status and respect upon the IFP by showing that Zuma recognised the importance of the place of traditional leadership in the IFP (through Mtetwa) and that the concerns of the IFP were of national importance (through Zuma's own role). In excluding the provincial ANC from any decision-making in the negotiations, Zuma simultaneously indicated that the "disrespectful" ANC provincial leadership would not dictate the IFP-ANC relationship and went some way to overcoming residual sentiments among the IFP leadership that the ANC had not treated them with respect in the past. The open and public letter that followed from Zuma to Buthelezi reinforced the mission. It said,

> 'Shenge,
>
> Following my meeting with the Honourable CJ Mtetwa, Minister of Public Works in KwaZulu-Natal, I have been instructed by the President to write to *Ndabezitha uMntwana waKwaPhindangene*[45] with regard to the specific part of the crossing of the floor bill ... President Mbeki ... agreed ... that the retrospective part will no longer form part of the Bill ...
>
> Yours sincerely,
>
> Jacob G Zuma
> Deputy President' (Zuma 2003).

[45] A term of utmost respect, referring to the royal status of Mangosuthu Buthelezi, President of the IFP to whom, of course, the letter is addressed (emphasis added).

The national intervention managed to avert an election, by removing the retrospectivity clause, thus restoring the principles of democracy that were to guide the province. The two ANC MECs that had been fired by Mtshali were awarded, by the IFP, two of their own cabinet posts to accommodate them back into the executive. Despite this, the intervention that was intended to show respect towards the IFP came too late to avert the new alliance between the IFP and the DA. The response of the IFP to Jacob Zuma's letter is indicative of this. It said that the IFP has,

> 'experienced many instances in which undertakings made by ANC leaders at the highest level were then overturned by ANC structures ... (These include) ... the undertaking by former President Mandela to hold joint meetings with me in violence torn areas ... frustrated by the Midlands ANC leadership ... the undertaking made by President Mbeki to appoint me as Deputy-President ... vetoed by the ANC Kwa-Zulu-Natal provincial leadership which requested the Premiership ... your undertaking to traditional leaders ... was never implemented ... I would therefore appreciate it if you could enable me to reassure our National Council that this time around the IFP ... can rely on the ANC's undertaking' (Buthelezi 2003).

The recurrent theme of the letter is that of the ANC undermining the status of IFP elites despite repeated undertakings that, if followed through, would have acknowledged and recognised the IFP as equals and therein conferred respect upon them. In this way, the collapse of trust is directly linked to the failure to bestow status on the IFP.

The impact of the IFP-DA Coalition for Change

Effectively quietened by the intervention of the national ANC structures, rewardist nationalists in the ANC were forced to satisfy themselves for now with the existing party political balance of positions in the province and to work to re-establish trust through the 5-a-side committee. Even when the technicalities of the floor crossing legislation were resolved and other MPPs crossed to the ANC.[46] the Premiership remained in IFP hands. Within the provincial ANC, a trickle of MPPs exited parliament as a consequence of the actions of their ANC colleagues in attempting to snatch power, removing from parliament some of the pro-coalitionist MPPs[47] disillusioned with the realities of institutional democracy.

In the IFP, the two coalitions, in which the party was now a central part, spoke to different clusters of elites within the party. These syncretic alliances –

---

[46] Two further MPPs crossed to the ANC on 24 March 2003. They were DA MPP Omie Singh and IFP MEC Gabriel Ndabandaba.

[47] One such example is ANC MPP Nhanhla Ngidi, a former exile comrade who left parliament and took up a position as a Commissioner in the South African Police Services.

one based upon values and conceptions of leadership and the other based on organisational and policy principles – were mirrored by syncretic committees. While the IFP 5-a-side committee was reformulated to include a stronger African Consciousness flavour, the permanent standing committee with the DA included MPPs that had formerly been excluded from the committees that supported the IFP-ANC coalition. Predominantly pragmatic political pluralists, who had been placed to enforce the position of the dominant faction, now discussed policy preferences and democratic principles.

If the hegemony of the dominant faction had waned, it now faced usurpation. Anchored across the legislature, through its tabling in parliament, the IFP-ANC coalition existed in little more than name only and through the efforts of the IFP 5-a-side committee which hung on to the possibility of resurrecting the unity project. Less than 6 months after the Special Sitting of Parliament, IFP strategy indicated a change in the impact of the 5-a-side committees in parliament which demonstrated the influence of the new elite cluster. In March 2003, IFP strategy dictated,

> '...our committees on transport and health need to be hard-hitting generally. They must leave no stone unturned to weaken the image of Ndebele and Mkhize ... the role of the Chairperson in particular, is pivotal in illuminating and exploiting the many weaknesses and deficiencies of Minister's Ndebele and Mkhize …' (Inkatha Freedom Party 2003b: 5).

While the IFP cluster that coalesced with clusters of ANC elites sought to cloak the inadequacies in governance, the clusters of elites that coalesced in the IFP-DA alliance sought to expose them. In May 2003, the provincial organising committee of the IFP produced an exit strategy (Inkatha Freedom Party 2003a) to prepare the party for negative publicity they were certain to receive on withdrawing from the IFP-ANC Coalition to fight the elections in an IFP-DA alliance. If elites in the IFP-ANC committees had coalesced around unity and accommodation, they now harmonised around competition.

Conclusion

In working within a new institutional space, the political elite gradually came to abandon a duality of political practice and focus their energies within the new framework of legislative politics. However, the second election became a catalyst for the interaction of elites based upon their shared value systems and the hegemony of elite clusters that coalesced around africanism. As the collapse of the IFP – ANC coalition demonstrated, however, the relative dominance of elite clusters was in turn bounded by the discourse of political etiquette that parties adopted. While "respect" in the ANC camp led to more direct attempts to control the legislature, this clashed with the IFP's discourse which ultimately

led to their withdrawal. What is most certainly apparent is that the clash over "respect", sometimes manifested through positions and wealth, but mostly through status and etiquette, came to define the delicate balance between different forms of alliance and the place of elite sub-groups within them.

7

The development of institutional capacity

> 'Public policy does not reflect demands of the people so much as it reflects the interests and values of elites. Changes and innovations in public policies come about when elites redefine their own values' (Dye & Zeigler 1997: 156).
>
> 'So we live in a traffic jam, … characterized by low governing capability, to wit, by low resistance to demands and low capability to take and carry through decisions' (Sartori 1997: 172).
>
> 'The first condition (of democracy) is that the human material of politics – the people who man the party machines, are elected to serve in parliament, rise to cabinet office – should be of sufficiently high quality' (Schumpeter 1997: 82).

Political power in parliament is exercised fundamentally in the formulation of public policy, framed by the mandates that define executive and legislative authority and limited by the relative strengths of political parties. Any particular outcome in which the exercise of political power is manifest is ultimately dependent upon the institutional capacity of political elites. Classical elite theorists concerned with the capacity of political elites take one of two approaches. Firstly, Mosca posits that the primary concern of any ruling elite is to perpetuate itself in power. In this framework elites are able to exploit the system to maintain their positions of privilege. Within this paradigm, elites do not need to be extraordinary people because the bureaucratization of the system of government provides the means by which elites carry out their roles (Mosca 1939: chapters 2, 12 and 15). In contrast, Pareto distinguishes between a nominal elite group and an upper stratum of that elite group which possesses particular

qualities that best allow for effective rule. It is members of this grouping that have made the best use of their attributes and capacity to be where they are. While agreeing with Mosca that the elite often rule in their own best interests, Pareto contends that the elite strata use a variety of methods to perpetuate that power, from coercion or force to negotiations and agreements (Pareto 1997).

In this study, the definitions of institutional capacity that have been employed draw upon classical elite theory. Institutional capacity is defined here as a twofold concept.[1] In the first place it refers to the ability of political elites to comprehend the political and parliamentary environment in which they are located – including their own role within it – so that the possibility for them to exercise power to the benefit of the provincial population is present. In this case, the institutional capacity of political elites is influenced by their previous political experience, educational levels, occupational types and other forms of institutional abilities. However, the possibility of exercising political power further depends on the support systems provided within parliament and the availability of appropriate institutional and policy training to enable MPPs to choose to participate effectively. Hence, institutional capacity is also defined as the *active* power of political elites to use their knowledge of these environments and the political position that they possess in order to influence the policy agenda and its outcomes. As such, the level of active participation of elites, types of issues that elites prioritise and their ability to carry through a policy agenda is further bounded by their ability to navigate the political environment. This environment includes the political context in which parties operate and the policy agendas that prevail.

In developing countries 'legislatures have yet to prove themselves as important institutions' (Hyden *et al*. 2004: 82). With the exception of former communist states, democratising states have opted for a reformed presidential system which 'in Latin America … has allowed for a considerable shift of power in favour of the president at the expense of the legislature' (*ibid*.: 81). In comparison, in Africa, 'African legislatures remain weak in relation to the executive' (Barkan *et al*. 2004: 211).[2]

In this chapter the developing institutional capacity of political elites is interrogated for its relevance to political elite formation. Firstly, the institutional factors that limit the capacity of the political elite are explored. Secondly, the level of understanding of the roles that MPPs undertake are evaluated and their levels of participation within these roles are investigated. Finally, the types of

---

1 For heuristic purposes both frameworks have been employed simultaneously.

2 Barkan *et al.* claim that literature on emerging legislatures in developing countries is surprisingly thin. They provide the example of Legislative Studies Quarterly in the years 1995-2002 in which none of the articles examined African legislatures (cf. Barkan *et al*. 2004: 212, footnote 1).

issues that are prioritized within the legislature are explored as a consequence of the institutional capacity of political elites.

The purpose of this chapter is to draw attention to a number of factors which contribute to the dynamics of provincial politics. Firstly, there has been the development of a small cross-party technocratic sub-group in the legislature whose longevity is guaranteed as a consequence of its relative dominance in capacity. Moreover, as parliamentary business and policy-making is dominated by this sub-group, its members are offered an additional guarantee in the legislature across party lines, a factor that has the potential to increase fluidity of policy-making not only across parties but also within them. Secondly, the relative incapacity of a larger sub-group of legislature members has resulted in particular issues dominating the provincial agenda. As the elite fail to adequately address public policy concerns, their own attention has turned to political issues rather than public policy issues – matters that are not the crucial business of the parliament. The result of this is twofold. Firstly, there is security for political elites that lack capacity as the provincial agenda comes to mirror their own incapacity. Secondly, those with capacity are in demand by all parties and can virtually choose their political home. The longevity in the legislature of different groupings of the political elite is thus in part a product of their different levels of institutional capacity.

Institutional factors that define the institutional capacity of political elites

The institutional capacity of political elites is defined by three institutional factors. They are institutional powers and functions, operational style and institutional provisions.

Institutional powers and functions

The legislative authority of the province is vested in its provincial legislature, limited by the national Constitution. The Provincial Legislature of KwaZulu-Natal has the power to pass legislation on any policy areas listed as Schedule 4 or Schedule 5 in the constitution and to pass its own constitution for the province. Under the constitution, the key role of a provincial legislature is to maintain accountability and oversight of the provincial executive (Republic of South Africa 1996a: chaper 6, point 11). In addition, a provincial legislature has the power to make rules to order its own business, procedures and proceedings (republic of South Africa 1996a: chapter 6, point 11). The executive authority of the province is vested in the Premier and the MECs to prepare, initiate and to implement legislation and to develop and implement policy (Republic of South

Africa 1996a: chapter 6, point 125). The provincial executive is responsible and accountable to the provincial legislature.

Operational style

For all MPPs the provincial legislature was a new political arena. However some had previous experience of a formal legislative assembly while many – especially in the ANC – had not. Sat facing their previous political (and in some cases personal) enemies – now transformed in theory at least into collegial opponents – their role had changed from political mobilization, extra-legal action, and the construction of broad ideological and policy statements into real, substantive legislative agendas with tangible developmental outcomes. Although interviews had shown that at least 23 IFP MPPs had experienced the KLA, this new institutional arena was very different to it. For the first time there was an opposition with a very different political culture. The style of meetings differed and there were formal legislative systems – such as the committee system – through which politics operated. The parliamentary chamber in Pietermaritzburg, designed along Westminster lines was far removed from the circular chamber in Ulundi that had encouraged consensus, in what was in any case a one-party mini-state, rather than adversarial politics.

The system through which a parliament operates was also far removed from the practice of politics within political parties. The methods of mobilizing supporters, political recruitment and issue identification differ greatly from the work of a legislature. In parliament the translation of policy agendas into practice within a structured setting of rules and procedures involves grappling with many new skills. Firstly, MPPs must read and understand voluminous technical documents, committee agendas and specialized reports and assessments. Most documentation of this type is written in English which is the second language of the majority of MPPs. In their study of Senegal, Benin, Ghana and Kenya, Barkan etc al found that the capacity of these legislatures was limited by MPPs who were not fluent in the language used. Such MPPs are effectively 'second-class members. Their presence limits the capacity of the legislature to perform its policymaking and oversight functions' (Barkan *et al*. 2004: 240).Once parliamentary reports have been read and understood, MPPs have to assess them in relation to their party political position and address them in a competitive setting. Secondly, MPPs interact frequently with members of the public service – from civil servants called before committees to deliver executive and technical reports to police commissioners explaining progress on particular investigations to minute takers recording their meetings. In order to carry out their responsibilities, MPPs must interact effectively with a whole range of such individuals that possess technical and specialized knowledge on a wide range of public policy matters. They must digest and evaluate reports quickly in order to

be able to ask questions and fulfil their oversight role as full participants within the committee system (Pers. IFP Interview 123). Moreover, many public servants have wide experience as governmental officials and MPPs must be knowledgeable to ensure that the intent and purpose of what they enact is carried through (Pers. IFP Interview 51). Thus MPPs must be sufficiently confident to take control of the public policy decisions within the political environment. Thirdly, MPPs must be able to manage a style of debate and discussion that differs from street politics, that is governed by time limits, discipline and policy agendas. All of these factors take place within a framework that is structured by rules and procedures that MPPs did not themselves define.

Institutional provisions

MPPs have only limited support in equipping themselves to carry out this formidable array of tasks. In terms of administrative resources, each centre – Pietermaritzburg and Ulundi – has a small library for use by parliamentarians which houses a small range of parliamentary documents and press clippings. Documentation from the committees, including the minutes of the portfolio and standing committees, is not housed in any systematic system of records. MPPs must keep their own records and no provision exists for an MP to look at records from a committee of which he or she is not currently a member. Although each committee is allocated a secretary to type up agendas and minutes, in 2003 (almost 10 years after the first election) not all secretaries had computers, office furniture was limited and many administrative support staff did not have a desk or chair at which to sit. Computers and computer training were promised through European Union funding, but the computers themselves have not materialised.

At the Pietermaritzburg centre there are too few offices for MPPs. Consequently, some MPPs are housed in rented offices outside the parliamentary complex and others make use of a communal area in the party offices. In 2001, many MPPs did not have a computer (approximately 30% did not know how to use one) and none were provided with secretarial assistance by parliament. In 1994, a typing pool was housed in the administrative building in the parliamentary complex. By 2001, this was phased out, for no justifiable reason, and MPPs without executive functions were forced to employ their own assistants. Those MPPs who do have administrative or secretarial assistance fund it themselves or have it provided for them by their party. Although MECs are provided with a range of technical and legal experts in their departments and Heads of Committees are provided with policy technical expertise upon request, little is provided to MPPs by way of such support. Instead, they often rely on librarians to locate substantive information. In addition, resources are also in short supply for the inspection of developmental programmes over which they have an over-

sight role. For example, in order to properly evaluate some of these projects in the rural areas, MPPs need to visit the location where the project is being carried out. Yet according to one interviewee, MPPs have access to 'sedans, chicos and corollas, but they can only access local areas. There are no 4 x 4s for the project visits' (Pers. Interview 140). During the ten year period of this study, there were no plans to upgrade the vehicles to accommodate the needs of the legislative committees (Pers. Interview 140).

Parliamentary training in terms of addressing the needs of MPPs and administrative staff has been limited. Administrative staff receive training in broad areas – such as human resources, labour relations and staff supervision but not in specialised areas and roles related to the purposes of the legislature. As for MPPs there is scant training in the formal institutional procedures and the roles of the specific positions that they hold. As one interviewee put it,

> 'there are too few service providers for this kind of training. Individuals are not provided with training on the workings of parliament … Where do you send someone to understand the rules and the role of the Speaker? What about the parliamentary rules?' (Pers. Interview 140).

This type of procedural training is essentially on an ad hoc basis with individual MPPs showing newer members the ropes. As for substantive training in policy areas, workshops do sometimes take place. Interviews, however, revealed that these often follow one of three formats. Firstly, they are sessions on national agendas whereby national level representatives simply report the party position on a particular policy area, the expectation being that provincial MPPs will follow this line. Secondly, there are meetings of the Intergovernmental Relations Committee of Ministers and Members of Provincial Councils (MINMEC) in which provincial MPPs meet their national counterparts and matters of concurrent national and provincial policy are discussed. The Intergovernmental Relations Committee of Ministers and Members of Provincial Councils (MINMEC) gives effect to the principles of cooperative government and the intergovernmental nature of the South African policy environment. The national minister for a policy sector and the nine corresponding provincial MECs meet on a regular basis in this sectoral forum to discuss policy and legislation within that particular policy sector. Thirdly, there are sessions organized by a particular provincial ministry in which departmental officials simply explain policy to members of the relevant portfolio committee. In all three cases, the workshops tend to provide information only, rather than be sessions where substantive policy is discussed and engaged upon.

The lack of resources for parliamentarians in KwaZulu-Natal is a common feature in other post-colonial, democratising and developing states. Legislatures,

> 'lack resources for in-house work on policies. Archives are poorly organised, if they exist at all. Elected representatives lack their own staff. Research capacity is most likely non-existent. This limits the role that the legislature can play in shaping policy' (Hyden *et al*. 2004: 92).

Resources do matter – at the provincial and local levels as well as at the national level. The South African national parliament is resourced much more extensively than many other African states and South African provincial parliaments. The national parliament, for example, 'has an extensive and qualified staff to facilitate the operations' (Barkan 2009: 221). Legislative members 'are provided with a personal assistant, as well as a private office with internet access' (*ibid*.: 220). This is in striking contrast to resources provided to the KwaZulu-Natal provincial legislature. The reasons for this can be found in the preference by the governing party for a centralised rather than federal system of government (where there are no challenges to the hegemony of the ANC at the national level) and the belief in some quarters that provinces should not exist.

Given the operational style of the provincial parliament and the limitations of institutional resources and training provided to MPPs there are only two resources which MPPs can fall back on to enable them to carry out their tasks. Firstly, the party rather than the legislature is the arena through which parliamentary support is provided to MPPs. In KwaZulu-Natal this is either through the party caucus meetings before each legislative sitting whereby the party position on substantive matters is deliberated or by one-on-one training by one caucus member to another on an ad hoc basis. Secondly, for the majority of MPPs their prior skills and experiences are what they use to define their own capacity within parliament. These either serve as enabling or disabling factors in the parliamentary setting.

The provincial legislature and the committee system

The Provincial Legislature of KwaZulu-Natal functions through the Parliamentary Committee System, with the relative strength of party representation on each committee determined by the number of seats each party holds in the legislature. Legislative sessions occur less than twelve times per year and sometimes as few as three times per year. Each session lasts for a few days in duration with the actual work of the legislature taking place in portfolio and standing committees. The relative balance of seats held by the IFP and ANC in the legislature over the period covered by this study meant that, unlike the committee system in other provincial legislatures, the committee system in KwaZulu-Natal has had the potential to be a true watchdog of the executive branch of government as no single party dominated a committee. That potential

however required that MPPs to fully understand their roles and functions in committees and to participate effectively in them.

Comprehension of roles and functions

There is a clear correlation between the perceptions of the impact that political elites have in their committee functions and whether or not they serve in a majority or minority party. The majority of IFP and ANC MPPs see themselves and the system as performing well. Conversely, most DA and other minority party members see the committee system in parliament as ineffective. For example, as one minority MPP stated, 'decisions are ministerial decisions and power is through the party structure to the cabinet. There is no monitoring role in committee. Those skills are basically non-existent' (Pers. DA Interview 09).

Indeed, interviews have revealed that part of the problem lies in the way in which MPPs define their powers and functions within the parliamentary committee system. According to the national constitution a provincial legislature may 'consider, pass, amend or reject any Bill before the legislature … ensure that all provincial executive organs within the state are accountable to it … (and) … maintain oversight of the exercise of provincial executive authority in the province, including the implementation of legislation …' (Republic of South Africa 1996a: chapter 6, point 114). In addition to these powers and functions, the portfolio committees of a provincial legislature may 'summon any person to appear before it to give evidence … or to produce documents … compel any person to comply with a summons … receive petitions, representations or submissions from any … persons or institutions' (Republic of South Africa 1996a: chapter 6, point 115). Clearly the mandate of the portfolio committees is sufficiently wide to enable them to act with real power.

According to Barkan capacitated committees comprise the following attributes. They are chaired by a knowledgable and motivated MP, there is a critical mass of members who share an interest in the committee's work, the committee has a small knowledgeable staff to facilitate it's work, possesses a budget, has an assigned meeting place and is respected by other legislators (Barkan 2009: 217). However, despite the committees in KwaZulu-Natal possessing some of these attributes and clear constitutional provisions providing extensive powers and functions, there is a general lack of understanding among MPPs of the roles that they are to fulfil in committee. Approximately half of MPPs do not define their roles as committee members as laid down in their constitutional mandate. There is however, a much higher proportion of minority party MPPs who see their role as one of monitoring, scrutiny and oversight than MPPs in the IFP and ANC. The following quotation by an IFP Chairperson of a committee is a typical example, which demonstrates a lack of understanding of the role and function of the committee. He said,

> 'I feel that if the Minister is ANC then the Chairman should be ANC and vice versa. This would enable us to do something good' (Pers. IFP Interview 60).

In this case, the Chairperson demonstrated no understanding of the need for any separation of power, scrutiny and oversight of departmental work. Instead, he understood his role as to foster consensus between the committee and the department. Effectively he saw provincial institutions in terms of power sharing. Parties should have their own portfolios and could expect cooperation and even deference in committee in "their own" given policy area. In many ways this is reflective of the way in which the ANC and IFP carved up the province in the 1980s and 1990s seeking spheres of influence in which there was recognised supremacy. It would appear that these sentiments have carried over into the new political institutions.

Other MPPs have also defined their roles as primarily maintaining cordial relationships with the respective department. For example, an ANC Chairperson of a committee said,

> 'I am fortunate … the committee and the department have good relations including with the Minister[3]. He comes to the committee and briefs us on all that they are doing' (Pers. ANC Interview 133).

In this case, the role was understood to be that of being informed of policy, in this case by an IFP MEC, rather than actively informing policy through scrutiny and oversight. In both cited cases, a passive role that maintained good relationships was valued over any more robust conception of the committee system.

Indeed, most MPPs were primarily concerned with consensus-building in committee. The key reason for this was the way in which political etiquette had become a key priority in their practical responsibilities. MPPs described their successes as committee members in terms of 'ensuring warm cooperation' (Pers. IFP Interview 106), 'good relations with the Minister' (Pers. ANC Interview 113), 'dignified meetings' (Pers. IFP Interview 100), 'decision-making by consensus' (Pers. DP Interview 79) and 'where we come together as one'(Pers. ANC Interview 71). As such MPPs did not see themselves as initiators of change and did not focus on political action.

MPPs further indicated that they themselves did not feel that they had the capacity to effectively carry out their committee roles. Frequently, in interviews that took place during the second parliamentary term, MPPs referred to workshops that they were participating in to gain clarity on their roles and responsibilities. The following quotation is typical:

---

[3] Heads of provincial departments are habitually referred to as Ministers although this is incorrect. Their correct title is MEC as in Member of the Executive Council.

> 'We are having a workshop … together with the Department of Transport to get a better understanding, to eliminate misunderstandings and altercations … Some members did not understand their different roles … There is not conflict over policy. The department and the committee agree on the needs to be met. The conflict is over role' (Pers. ANC Interview 106).

In this case, the Department of Transport had organized a workshop to assist the very committee that was supposed to perform oversight and scrutiny of transport policy produced by it. And in the words of an MEC,

> 'I just need to show the committee respect without diversion from my main work. The committee has no technical skills … In monitoring, the question is not just a matter of numbers, it is whether good service was provided with the money. They don't look at these things. I am too honest. I have held two workshops to empower them. I point out things to them. They should discover those things on their own' (Pers. ANC MEC Interview 134).

Lack of understanding by MPPs of the roles and functions that they are supposed to perform in committee is not the only problem that MPPs face, although it does somewhat compound other capacity problems, such as effective participation.

Participation in the committee system

The level of participation in parliamentary committees is poor. Less than 50% of MPPs effectively and actively participate in the work of the parliamentary committees to which they have been assigned. In many committees, MPPs arrive carrying the documents that they were to scrutinize for the meeting in unopened envelopes, less than 50% speak during a meeting, agendas are vague and general and the level of debate and discussion that ensues is lacking. In the first parliamentary term there were problems with attendance at committee meetings. Although attendance improved in the second parliamentary term there is a limited grasp of key issues among MPPs. As one MPP argued, 'there is a tendency to debate from a position of ignorance' (Pers. DP Interview 79) and according to the Head of Committees,

> 'Many are coming into the committee not knowing much and when they go out they are still blank' (Pers. Interview 140).

Limited participation in committee can be explained by a number of factors. Firstly, for many MPPs parliament is an intimidating environment that, in itself, contributes to a general malaise. In this environment MPPs are limited by what they, as individuals, can do and the debates and discussions are in turn framed by their capacity. According to one interviewee, 'it is a brave MP to say "I need training" … They are lacking information and they do not ask questions. They are afraid to ask' (Pers. Interview 140). In this environment the channels of communication are now written, and for many the official language is not their

first language of communication. In committee, the majority of MPPs are still digesting and then converting to the language of debate before they can respond. As well as new rules, procedures and politicking, the pressure upon MPPs to perform is immense. Reporters may be present at committee meetings as are scholars wishing to analyse debates and discussions (Pers. Obs). In addition, MPPs face pressure from their respective political parties to compete with opposition MPPs, to defend the position of their own party while simultaneously promoting development in the province for the poorest of the poor.

These factors are also compounded by the nature of committee work. The majority of MPPs attend at least three different committees, some of which have sub-committees, and manage a workload for each. According to one MPP, 'it takes time to get to grips with the work. It takes three years to learn about all the people in the parliament, who is doing what and who to contact. I often travel 800 kilometres to find out that a committee meeting has been cancelled. Sometimes not working well is a result of sheer overload' (Pers. IFP Interview 123). For each portfolio committee, MPPs should read a wealth of voluminous technical documentation. For MPPs struggling with expression this is particularly difficult. Moreover, the nature of the policy environment means that without the ability to develop technical policy skills many MPPs simply cannot perform their duties effectively. According to one interviewee,

> '… Conservation is specialized. You have to be exposed to the issues. They are talking about technical issues like the way you cut trees and why. Many MPs cannot manage … Then there is finance. Most MPs are not exposed to accountancy and cannot participate without such abilities … In health there is medical language and medical issues' (Pers. IFP Interview 43).

Thus, not only do most MPPs struggle without technical capacity but, in this context, deal with too many diverse policy areas to ever really master one, which further compounds the development of institutional capacity in the legislature over time.

Linked to this is the factor that recruitment and selection on to parliamentary committees often fails to take into account the nature of the work of that committee. In all parties MPPs have the ability to submit their preference of the policy areas in which they are to specialize. However, frequently MPPs are placed on a committee because of their perceived proximity to a policy area rather than because of their ability to perform effectively. For example, one MPP cast his membership of one committee in terms of his lineage. He is the grandson of King Solomon. He said,

> 'I am a member of the Household Committee which deals with the budget of the king. I am a member because of my background with the royal family (Pers. NNP Interview 24).

And as the chairperson of committees stated,

> 'If we look at the health committee the defining feature for selection is whether the member has been a nurse. This is seen as the most important factor by the parties' (Pers. Interview 140).

Instead of the committees consisting of individuals with a variety of perspectives who can monitor effectively, there is the tendency for committees to consist of groups of the same types of people. For example, all the accountants serve on the Portfolio Committee on Public Accounts, all the nurses serve on the Portfolio Committee for Health, all the strong-arm men in parliament serve on the Portfolio Committee for Safety and Security. Hence, the level of active participation and effective monitoring on these committees by MPPs are bounded by their experiences and particular experiential capacity of these policy areas.

Another factor that limits active participation is the way in which the role of the Chairperson is perceived by the political elite. Frequently, MPPs discussed the success or failure of the committee as a direct result of the Chairperson's efficiency, strength and personality. For example, according to one MPP, 'some chairpersons are totally lost and on some committees you get nowhere very fast … where what should be a one hour discussion becomes three hours and people are talking over each other and returning to items that have already been discussed and decided on' (Pers. NNP Interview 37). As another contended, 'so much depends upon the chairperson … if he knows what he is doing … if he has prepared himself. One used to come to a committee I was on without even an agenda' (Pers. NNP Interview 25). Finally, 'the committees function according to the chairperson. They operate within a certain framework but so much depends on the chairperson … whether they get information … The health committee has a really super person who is head, but is not strong enough because nothing ever gets uncovered in health' (Pers. Interview 31). Hence, rather than taking a proactive role as individuals, many MPPs see their role as essentially reactive in a process whereby the chairperson sets an agenda, raises issues and provides information. In some cases, rather than contributing to a better functioning committee, committee members have by-passed the chairperson altogether. For example, one MPP claimed,

> 'I conducted a naughty but essential act. I presented a paper to the committee and I moved into a higher mode. I talked about integrated rural development and it simply went right over their heads. Now I talk only to Minister (X) and the Department and I say to him, "will you emphasise this area etc when you come to the committee?"' (Pers. IFP Interview 43).

In this case, the committee was almost a vacant space. The MPP concerned had established a chain of communication between himself and the MEC for

Agriculture where they worked in tandem and undermined any potential monitoring role that the committee may have developed.

Research that focuses upon the perceptions of the effectiveness of the committee systems in Kenya, Malawi, Namibia and Mozambique reports that parliamentarians perceive that they are improving as a consequence of the educational and institutional capacity of committee chairs and members (Barkan *et al*. 2010: 21) This is in contrast to my findings KwaZulu-Natal where capacity has declined in the ANC and increased in the IFP. This also paints a bleak picture of the South African national parliament which is overwhelmingly dominated by the ANC and as such, 'the overall membership of most committees is mediocre given the presence of many MPs of the ruling party whose educational backgrounds are significantly lower than the chairs of the committees to which they belong' (*ibid*.). Hence, the one-party national dominance limits institutional capacity in the national parliament even more than in the two provinces (KwaZulu-Natal and the Western Cape) where there is competition from other parties (the IFP and DP) who have recruited well educated MPPs. Yet, where some capacity as demonstrated in educational levels does exist alongside competition with the ANC, these provincial parliaments remain less resourced than the national parliament.

A further factor that limited effective participation was the elite coalition between the IFP and the ANC (see Chapter 6). The coalition manifested in the active prevention of scrutiny of the executive branch of government. As one MPP said, describing her interaction through the Portfolio Committee on Health with the MEC for Health,

> 'If I asked Zweli anything, such as on abortion – "How many? Did they get counselling? How was it funded?"etc etc, the chairperson would cut me down and it would not go forward. There was that incident of rodents in King Edward Hospital. He said I was sensationalizing. He would say, "you will see when you get the report" but a report would never materialise. There was that time during the cholera outbreak when the chairperson began, "we need to compliment the Minister on containing the cholera outbreak …" It was ridiculous. We would begin a line of questioning and then they would just shut us up' (Pers. IFP Interview 131).

In this case the ANC MEC was protected by the IFP chairperson who closed down questioning by the IFP MPP. In terms of institutional capacity, the conesquences of this were threefold. Firstly, MPPs were already failing to fulfil their oversight and monitoring roles effectively but the way in which the coalition manifested itself in committees further silenced committee members who were already struggling with their role. As one MPP stated, 'the fish that doesn't open its mouth doesn't get caught' (Pers. ANC Interview 71). Intrinsically linked to this was the second consequence. That is, MPPs were even more confused about their parliamentary role as the party hierarchy to maintain the

coalition was translated into the legislature. Within parliamentary committees, MPPs that had operated on a level playing field with one another now responded to party seniority to frame their discourse. Chairpersons took their cue, not from the committee members but from the party hierarchy. Committee members responded not to the chairpersons, but to their senior party members so that a system of leaders and followers developed within committees to compound further the problems of their understanding and participation. The third consequence for institutional capacity of the manifestation of the coalition was that it increased the potential for fluidity of the elite. This was for two reasons. Firstly, MPPs from the two main parties now actively worked together to maintain the coalition by preventing their own oversight of the executive. In so doing, they became tied together in new relationships with a common goal, in some cases making the opposition seem less threatening than before. Secondly, for those with technical and policy skills the coalition provided a way in which they could showcase these skills. Most continued with their scrutiny and oversight functions in a non-political manner, framed in developmental terms, which made them a good catch for parties looking for new members to cross the floor. Although the collapse of the IFP-ANC coalition substantially reversed some of the consequences of the coalition, it took time in order for the effects of that to be felt in committee as MPPs had become familiar with the new methods in which they were now to operate. It did not, however, reverse the fluidity of the political elite who possessed technical policy skills.

The active and effective participation of MPPs is further compromised by a sense that the overwhelming majority of MPPs are intimidated by the confidence and superior expertise of a technocratic group of political elites – those that can understand the documents, those that have technical and policy skills, those that can debate and promote and defend an argument, and those that do so confidently. One is reminded of Weber's warning that 'the growing complexity of the administrative tasks and the sheer expansion of scope increasingly result in the technical superiority of those who have had training and experience' (Weber 1986: 951). Indeed, in the provincial legislature a small but influential segment of the political elite dominates the core work of the legislative committees. According to the one interviewee,

> 'Because some MPs are advantaged they get to be a Mr. Know it All. They get allocated to too many committees. For example, look at Scott, Tarr and Cronje. They are almost everywhere. They are on the executive board, rules, finance, budget, public accounts, constitutional affairs … These people become too big. If they move on, the party has a problem. They will grind to a halt. It is the same for the other parties' (Pers. Interview 140).

In essence, two groups of political elites have developed. They consist of those who have parliamentary capacity and those that do not. Those with skills

dominate the legislative business and can choose any political home that they desire, substantially increasing the potential fluidity in the legislature. Those that do not have such capacity rarely speak and focus upon issues that are not central to the current parliamentary policy and developmental debates, such as the question over where the provincial capital should be located (see later discussion).

Part of the problem that the second category of the political elite face is that their past social and political experiences have not adequately prepared them for life as a parliamentarian. According to one interviewee,

> 'Most members are in parliament because of their involvement in parties … Some members lack qualifications. Even reports analysis takes a level of qualification. Even those that are educated have difficulty … Many are street kids … just community leaders … There is the non-existence of relevant training' (Pers. Interview 140).

While there is not an educational pre-requisite for parliamentary work it is apparent that the ability to read and comprehend documentation of a technical and policy nature and to be able to debate, present and defend a logical policy based argument is necessary. Of the MPPs classified by educational level in chapter three, almost 20% did not complete high school. Only 30% completed a degree or a professional qualification. This suggests that up to 70% of MPPs would probably find it difficult to excel in the parliamentary environment without assistance from elsewhere. In comparison to legislators in less economically resourced African states, these figures are shocking. In Benin, Ghana and Kenya, for example, more than 60% of parliamentarians have a university degree and in Ghana and Kenya virtually none have only primary education (Barkan *et al*. 2004: 239).

In addition, the professional experience of MPPs does not make up for the lack of educational qualifications that they possess. For example, of the 22% of MPPs that are small business owners, 90% of them were not formerly exposed to any of the skills that are necessary in parliament. This is in contrast to the claims of Barkan et al that in Senegal, Benin, Ghana and Kenya those who have run businesses are more likely to be reformers committed to democratisation and the strengthening of a legislature (Barkan *et al*. 2004: 235). Why this should be so is not clear. Apart from some expectations of efficiency it is difficult to see how the skills set required for public sector committee work is congruent with private sector business ownership. The implications for parliamentary capacity are even more serious if one considers the nature of experience held by those who have only had a political occupation. Of all the ANC MPPs, the overwhelming majority had no experience of government before coming to power and their skills base has been predominantly in political mobilization work. Of the IFP MPPs, although a significant proportion were formerly in the

KLA (see chapter four), they were the only party in this former legislature and it was without a committee system. The nature of monitoring and oversight was clearly not of the same nature. Where some practical experience of legislative work does exist is primarily among the MPPs of the minority parties who were former members of the NPA, local government or the chambers of the Tricameral Parliament.

The significance of these factors in KwaZulu-Natal is an increasing incapacity in policy and developmental monitoring among the majority of MPPs. If as Mosca claims increasing bureaucratisation makes the attributes that the elite possess less relevant, what happens in a system where there is limited parliamentary support for parliamentarians? In this case, there is neither well-capacitated parliamentary elite nor a parliamentary support and training system for them to fall back on. The implication of this in KwaZulu-Natal is that each party provincial caucus acts as a back up for those lacking capacity. It is from the party caucus that MPPs receive direction and instruction that is followed through in the legislature. As a consequence, MPPs frequently revert to party political concerns over political power, loyalty and influence rather than over questions of governance, monitoring and scrutiny. Parliamentary debates become bogged down by debates of a party nature rather than a provincial one by the majority of MPPs. Such questions as to where the provincial capital should be located are clear indications of this.

Case study – The National Council of Provinces Standing Committee in the KwaZulu-Natal provincial legislature

A more detailed examination of the work of a single committee – the National Council of Provinces[4] Standing Committee (NCOPSC) – illustrates three main

[4] The South African parliament consists of two houses – The National Assembly (NA) and the National Council of Provinces (NCOP), which is comprised of a ten member delegation from each of South Africa's nine provinces. The purpose of the NCOP is to 'ensure that provincial interests are taken into account in the national sphere of government' (RSA 1996a*:* section 42, chapter 4). The NCOP has the power to 'consider, pass, amend, propose amendments to or reject any legislation before (it) … (and) initiate or prepare legislation falling within a functional area listed in Schedule 4 … or referred to in Section 76 …' (RSA 1996a: section 68, chapter 4). Schedule 4 provides a list of concurrent functional areas for national and provincial legislatures. Section 76 provides for legislation affecting the provinces. However, neither the NA nor NCOP can legislate in terms of the functional areas listed in Schedule 5 which are those of exclusive provincial competence. In the exercise of NCOP powers, legislation passed, amended or rejected by the house must also be ratified by the NA and visa versa. If it is not ratified, it is referred to a Mediation Committee, the decision of which must be ratified by the House that

features of the impact of institutional capacity upon political elite formation. Firstly, it demonstrates how the institutional capacity of the political elite is shaped by the characteristics that they possess. Secondly, it shows how the legislature is dominated by a few members. Thirdly, it illustrates how party competition has become an arena through which elites may guarantee their longevity.

The NCOPSC in KwaZulu-Natal is the only portfolio committee in which decisions are regularly taken by a vote. It is the key mechanism in the legislature through which provincial political elites are able to influence, scrutinize and also initiate national policy that affects the provinces of South Africa. This committee coordinates provincial voting mandates. It receives portfolio committee reports and breakdowns on bills pertaining to its policy area that are before the NCOP and approves the negotiating and final voting mandates to be delivered by the provincial delegation[5] to the NCOP. In addition through the NCOPSC the political elite, in the portfolio committees of the provincial legislature, may also initiate legislation that is within the competencies of the NCOP and send it upwards to the national legislative institutions to be considered as a Bill on a national basis.

Scrutiny and oversight of national legislation

The NCOPSC has a mixed record of successes and failures in its role of scrutiny and oversight of national level legislation. Institutional capacity has, however, been clearly demonstrated in two main ways by the political elite who sit on the NCOPSC. Firstly, political elites have demonstrated a comprehension of their role in scrutinizing national policy – which differs from other committees – and have used their ability to influence legislation. This is clearly shown when, on occasion, provincial MPPs have proposed significant amendments to national Bills that have come before them. For example in September 1997, the report of the Premier's Portfolio Committee to the NCOPSC on the Public Service Commission Bill (BB31-97) detailed proposed amendments

---

rejected it. If it is not ratified by the NCOP, the bill may still pass providing that the NA supports the bill by a 2/3 majority. If it is not ratified by the NA then the bill lapses. Procedures relating to constitutional amendments differ.

5 The NCOP consists of one delegation from each province. Each delegation is comprised of six permanent delegates and four special delegates, one of which is the Premier of the province or his/her representative. The six permanent delegates must be eligible to be provincial MPPs, but if they are MPPs then they cease to be so when they become a delegate to the NCOP. The four special delegates are drawn from the provincial legislature and, with the exception of the Premier, rotate according to the needs of the province and the policy areas under discussion (cf. RSA 1996a: chapter 4, section 60-62).

aimed at strengthening the independence of the Public Service Commission (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1997a: negotiating mandates item 5). In September 1998, the Local Government Portfolio Committee rejected Clause 1(a) of the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa Second Amendment Bill (B85-98) (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1998b: item 7.2). In November 1999 the Portfolio Committee on Housing was commended by the NCOPSC on amendments that they had made to the Rental Housing Bill (B92D-99) (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1999b: final mandate item 6). Clearly in all these cases MPPs understood enough about their responsibilities, the process of institutionalizing legislative change and the impact of the proposed legislation in order to scrutinize these Bills.

Secondly, the voting divisions in the first parliamentary term reflect an understanding by political elites of their party political position on key policy issues. For example a split vote on the Tobacco Products Amendment Bill (B117B-98) in October 1998, prior to the formation of the IFP-ANC coalition, illustrated the policy divisions among parties. Despite the fact that the Department of Health fell under the jurisdiction of an ANC MEC, the voting mandate of the Portfolio Committee on Health reflected the relative strength of parties in the legislature. In effect, the Portfolio Committee on Health rejected the Bill by five votes to two after IFP MPPs changed their position and voted against the Bill with the minority parties. The only party left supporting the bill was the ANC (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1998a: item 7.5). During the second parliamentary term however, party divisions in the voting record reflect provincial coalitions and alliances. For example, in November 1999, the NCOPSC vote on a negotiating mandate for the Pharmacy Amendment Bill (B51-99) resulted in the IFP, ANC and MF supporting the Bill in accordance with the national level ANC's position and the DP opposing it (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1999b: item 5.1) . In the same month the same voting divisions were evident on the final voting mandate on The World Heritage Convention Bill (B42-D-99) (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1999b: item 6.3). The same voting divisions are evident throughout the coalition period. So although MPPs demonstrated a commitment to the role that they had been designated within the institutions of parliament in the first term, they showed an equal understanding in the second term that their performance and position was now mandated by the coalition.

Initiation of legislation

The NCOPSC has demonstrated a poor record in the second of its key roles – that of the initiation of legislation. In the years since the NCOP was formed,[6] the NCOPSC has managed to send only one prospective piece of legislation – The Children's Commissioner Bill – through to the NCOP. The Children's Commissioner Bill was initiated and framed by the ACDP, a minority party, and only received provincial support when it was agreed that the credit for the Bill would be shared by all parties in the legislature (Pers. Interview 31). No prospective legislation has been initiated by any other party in KwaZulu-Natal.

The role of the NCOPSC in forwarding this Bill to the NCOP also illustrates a key lack of capacity in carrying out the functions of the committee and is deserving of further attention. In September 1997 the NCOPSC was briefed by a government official, Advocate E. M. Khoza, on the mandate of the committee to initiate legislation and the procedures to be followed in so doing (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1997a: item 6.4). Despite this, when the Children's Commissioner Bill became an item on the NCOPSC agenda in January 1998, more than one year since the committee was formed and three months after the committee was briefed on its mandate, the committee needed to be re-briefed on the procedures to initiate legislation for the NCOP. Moreover, despite the briefing MPPs were still unsure whether or not "welfare", under which the Children's Commissioner Bill fell, was a section 76 competency or not. As a result of this much time was spent deliberating this factor before resolving to proceed with an informal discussion with the Chairperson of the NCOP and an informal discussion with the legal advisors in the national legislature in an attempt to clarify whether the Bill fell within the NCOP competency or not (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1998e: item 10). By August 1998, seven months later, a minority party MPP, 'expressed concern' (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1998c: item 10.3) that the Bill had still not been tabled in the NCOP. In October 1998 the Bill was finally referred for legal opinion at the national level to clarify amongst other factors whether it was indeed a provincial competence. It was further noted that it was unlikely that the Bill would be addressed in the NCOP that parliamentary session (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 1998a: item 5.4).

In the second term, in an attempt to clear the way for this Bill, a new NCOPSC Chairperson[7] in 2000 attempted to find a way to address the difficulties of sending legislation upwards to the national level. In January 2000, the

---

[6] The NCOP was formed following the adoption of the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa at the end of 1996. Prior to this, the second legislative house at the national level was the Senate.

[7] IFP MPP Lauretta Ngcobo replaced another IFP MPP Phillip Powell as Chairperson.

NCOPSC requested a meeting with the Deputy-Chairperson[8] of the NCOP (cf. Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 2000b: item 4.1). Although the merits of a meeting were agreed to in principle, the date for a meeting was not quickly established. By 2001, the necessity of a meeting and workshop were explained by an IFP MPP as follows,

> 'There is that side of the constitution where Bills come from the departments to the National assembly and then to the NCOP. Then under Section 76 they come to province … that was working okay. Then there is the other side of the constitution where Bills go from the province to the NCOP and to the National Assembly. This is not working. We don't find a way to take provincial issues through the NCOP and into the heart of parliament …' (Pers. IFP Interview 116).

Thus more than four years since the committee was first briefed on its role and functions, it was still struggling to fulfil this key aspect of its responsibility. However, the inability to fulfil this core function was found to be as much a result of national level dynamics as it was provincial incapacity. As an IFP MPP argued,

> '… Even the provinces with ANC leaders are still not sending legislation upwards. The structure is not working. That part of the constitution to send legislation up through the NCOP does not work. The ANC wants to control the upward thrust' (Pers. IFP Interview 116).

Certainly, national level dynamics were found to impact significantly on the ability of provincial political elites to carry out their functions.

Restrictions on the developing institutional capacity of provincial MPPs by national NCOP dynamics

In some cases, the difficulty that provincial political elites face in developing their institutional capacity is compounded by three national level factors. The first of these factors is national level institutional incapacity. The second is the national provincial chain of command among ANC political elites. The third factor is a general malaise in regard to provincial input. This is a product of some provincial political elites circumventing rules and processes and appealing directly to their national counterparts. Each of these will be discussed in turn in the committee where this is most evident, the NCOPSC.

- National level institutional incapacity

Frequent administrative deficiencies at the national level impact negatively on the ability of provincial political elites to carry out their duties. These include such factors as the late advancement of NCOP funding to the legislature (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1998f: item 11.1), the late distribution

[8] Ms Pandor.

to the provinces of minutes and provisional agendas for NCOP meetings (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1998c: item 10.2), little thought for provincial responsibilities in NCOP scheduling (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1998c: item 5.2), failure by the NCOP to ensure delivery of green and white papers to the NCOPSC (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1997b: item 9.2), and insufficient provision of details on the scheduling of meetings by the NCOP (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1997b: item 9.3). Such inefficiencies resulted in delays and the inability of the NCOPSC to be properly prepared in the preparation of their voting mandates and for meetings. Such occurrences were found in this study to be rife during the first parliamentary term but gradually began to diminish in the second parliamentary term.

A more serious problem and a key institutional weakness that impacts acutely upon the legislative capacity of provincial MPPs in KwaZulu-Natal is the reliance upon delegates to the NCOP to act as provincial representatives in tabling voting mandates and in reporting back to the province. As early as 1997, the NCOPSC approached the Rules Committee in an attempt to formally structure the relationship between delegates and the legislature. This was a consequence of concerns in the province that delegates were failing to provide information to the legislature (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1997c: item 5.4). Just one month later the NCOPSC debated whether the capacity of the delegates in the NCOP extended to understanding the merits of the Bills and the amendments proposed which they were to deliver (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1997b: item 5.1.2). Such weaknesses extended in to the second parliamentary term becoming more and more acute in their impact on the work of the NCOPSC. In November 1999, for example, a special workshop was arranged after it was revealed by special delegates to the NCOP (who remain provincial MPPs) that permanent delegates to the NCOP were not even attending NCOP meetings (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1999b: item 7.1). The impact of this meeting was however short lived as in March 2000 the NCOPSC was forced to abstain on producing a voting mandate on joint committee rules as a direct consequence of the failure of delegates to produce a briefing report to them. In the same month amendments that were proposed by the NCOPSC to the Tourism Amendment Bill were not tabled in the NCOP due to absences by delegates in the Parliamentary Select Committee on Land and Environmental Affairs (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 2000a: items 5 and 6).

A third limitation for provincial MPPs seeking to carry out their mandate is a general malaise at the national level regarding provincial policy input. Provincial elites are limited by the composition of the very institutions that are supposed to regulate national and provincial competencies. The Joint Tagging

Mechanism (JTM) was vested with the mandate of establishing whether a Bill introduced at the national level required provincial input. The Bill is then tagged as a Section 75 or Section 76 Bill, the latter requiring provincial input. There are clear examples of incorrectly tagged Bills (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1997c and 1997a). One such example is the Higher Education Bill that was tagged as a Section 75 Bill, despite it affecting the Provincial Tertiary Education Act. However, the JTM is not composed of any provincial representatives and there is no procedure for appealing against the tagging decisions of the JTM. In effect the composition of the JTM and procedure of Bill tagging removed from KwaZulu-Natal political elites the ability to make their input if the Bill was tagged incorrectly.

• National-provincial political dynamics impeding provincial capacity

Unilateral changes by national political elites have frequently prevented provincial elites from inputting on policy in the NCOP. The most serious cases include amendments made in KwaZulu-Natal that were not processed or tabled and the fast-tracking of legislation at the national level to exclude provincial input. For example, as a consequence of a scheduled meeting being changed unilaterally at the national level, KwaZulu-Natal's amendments to the World Heritage Bill were never processed (Pers. IFP Interview 43 and cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1999b). Many other Bills have been fast-tracked with disastrous consequences for provincial input. For example, a series of Transport Bills and the Adjustments Appropriation Bill were pushed forward without the proper delivery of notification to select committees (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1998d: items 6d, 6e, 9a and 9b). In a further case, the late tabling at the national level of the Road Transport Appeal Matters Amendment Bill and then a failure to clarify whether the Bill was a Section 75 or Section 76 competency resulted in an impossible deadline for provincial voting mandates (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1998b: item 7.4). In another example, provisional provincial voting mandates were excluded from the agenda of the Select Committee on Land, Agriculture and Environmental Affairs. In this case, the committee meeting was then delayed and provinces were provided with an impossible turnaround period in which to produce a final voting mandate (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1997b: item 5.2). In all cases, unilateral action at the national level effectively removed from the provincial parliament their powers of oversight and undermined their powers of scrutiny.

Party competition in KwaZulu-Natal is influenced by national level party strengths and the way in which the national political elite intersects with the provincial. An examination of the periods in which legislation was fast-tracked at the national level shows that it was non-ANC MPPs who chaired the corresponding provincial portfolio committees and were tasked with oversight of that

legislation. ANC provincial MPPs fell into line with their national counterparts and enabled legislation to pass through the process without scrutiny. It would appear that MPPs worked in tandem at the national and provincial levels to ensure this. In effect, the fast-tracking secured autonomy for the ANC at the national level. They were able to act independently of the institutions of oversight in the province. Simultaneously, the policy programmes of the ANC in the provincial executive were protected and the powers of scrutiny and oversight of the committees headed by non-ANC MPPs were undermined.

Indeed a key aspect of the continued longevity of provincial ANC elites has been their adherence to national ANC directives. This is in stark contrast to the pre-1994 period whereby provincial elites and their ideological and political objectives dominated the national agenda (see Chapter 2). In part, this may be explained by the view held among certain circles of the ANC that,

> 'a lot of people at national think that provincial parliament should not exist. But if it did not exist, many issues would not be raised because national parliament doesn't ever focus on the performance of departments … If they know that there is a portfolio committee that is really on the ball and is going to investigate … then it puts them on their toes and makes them do their job better' (Pers. Interview 31).

Although seemingly a contradiction in terms, that ANC MPPs would undermine their own powers of scrutiny and the institutions of provincial government in which they have power, they have frequently done so. A clear example of this is the manoeuvring that occurred on the Tobacco Products Amendment Bill (B117B-98). Introduced into the National Assembly by an ANC Minister, the party indicated that they would prefer the Bill to be passed in its original format, without amendments. As a Section 76 Bill, it was referred to the provincial legislatures for their voting mandate in the NCOP. On its initial reading in KwaZulu-Natal both the ANC and IFP supported the Bill. However, the IFP subsequently shifted their position and the Portfolio Committee on Health rejected the Bill (Pers. IFP Interview 131). When the NCOPSC voted on the Bill in KwaZulu-Natal, the Bill was rejected by five members to two. The Bill was subsequently referred back to the legislature for a final vote in order to enable the NCOPSC to prepare a final voting mandate for the NCOP. At this point, and facing a rejection of the Bill by all provincial institutions, the ANC NCOPSC members argued that the Bill should not be referred back to the legislature for the final mandate (cf. Provincial Legslature of KwaZulu-Natal 1998a). When this strategy to prevent the rejection of the Bill failed, the ANC attempted to disrupt the second reading (Pers. Interview 67). As the Bill was read in the parliamentary chamber the ANC Caucus got up from their seats, left the chamber and tried to persuade the minority parties to do the same (Pers. Interview 03, 37 and 67). This was clearly an attempt to force no quorum and prevent the

initial position of the parties from being overturned. Having received a directive from the national ANC Minister, the provincial ANC did all that they could to prevent the position of the provincial legislature of Kwa-Zulu Natal from being officially recorded. This demonstrates that the rewards of adhering to the decisions of national political elites in the ANC are a greater motivator for some elites than ensuring the sanctity of the democratic provincial institutions.

The NCOPSC and the longevity of the political elite

Primarily, the social composition of the NCOPSC consists of political elites who have attained high educational levels and professional qualifications. For example, during the second parliamentary term 75% of the NCOPSC were qualified to bachelor's degree level or higher. Of these, four had trained in the field of law, one was a chartered accountant and another was undertaking post-graduate study in finance. Despite this unusual concentration of highly educated and professional political elites within one committee, the minutes and interviews reveal that it is still dominated by a few members. The political elite that initiates, drives and contributes to the discussions and deliberations are consistently the same group of people, while the majority of committee members remain silent. Even on this committee, tension between capacity and democracy is evident. It would appear that in terms of participation a technocratic dominance prevails within the committee. According to one interviewee,

> 'You have to be specialized. They are talking about technical issues. There is no formal training for MPPs that give them the needed skills. If you don't know what you are doing, you are never going to catch up' (Pers. Interview 140).

As the legislature becomes the established arena for competition between political parties, the capacity that MPPs possess and the functions that they carry out, begin to matter more to those parties. Both the seniority and skills of the MPPs on the NCOPSC would appear to indicate that all parties consider the NCOPSC to be one of the most important committees for their attention. It provides, for the ANC, hostile terrain that can be circumvented through national-provincial elite alliances. For the IFP, it is a terrain through which the party can potentially influence national policy debates and from which to defend against the national government (and by implication the ANC) imposing its political will on the province. Not surprisingly, the background and skills of the MPPs on the NCOPSC correlates with the broader expectations that the parties have of the role of the committee.

The NCOPSC is also an example of an arena of party competition for political elites on a careerist path. According to one interviewee, 'some MPPs are advantaged and their parties have come to rely on them … if they don't make it back, their parties have a problem' (Pers. Interview 140). MPPs with skills that

enable them to read, understand and challenge legislation have an additional political party and institutional guarantee. In the highly contested political terrain of KwaZulu-Natal politics, their party and institutional longevity is guaranteed by way of their technocratic abilities. The very reason that some MPPs make it on to party lists and into parliament is because of their institutional capabilities. In many cases, these individuals are those that have no natural constituency base and a limited historical experience of turf politics between the ANC and IFP. Instead their longevity is dependent upon the fact that they possess skills that make them useful in the competition between parties in this institutional setting. These skills include the way in which they are able to perform in committee and outmanoeuvre the competition.

For example, as a consequence of the NCOPSC struggling with its ability to send legislation to the national level an IFP MPP attempted to arrange a workshop for delegates and committee members. Her description of the process illuminates the way in which provincial ANC elites serve national interests and the ensured advancement and continued longevity of technocratic elites who outmanoeuvre the competition. She said,

> 'I called all delegates and I requested a workshop. While preparing I discussed this with (ANC MPP X) and she supported my proposal. I wanted a workshop in the break but I was told that I wasn't allowed to hold it in the holidays. Then suddenly I received a letter from the national ANC saying that we will be having a workshop in the Cape … and (ANC MPP X), like it or not, would be delivering two papers. She saw that something important was happening and wouldn't let it happen from me in the province so she conferred with the national ANC and they made it a national stamp' (Pers. IFP Interview 116).

And,

> 'After my invite to the USA Council of Legislatures where all states come together to discuss common approaches, I suggested something similar in South Africa. I said, "how about working together? We could form a forum like MINMEC where provincial legislatures could discuss their common interests". I was told that there would be no such forum' (Pers. IFP Interview 116).

In this case, the technocratic abilities of the ANC MPP to outmanoeuvre the competition and to organise and plan a workshop were pivotal. As a consequence of this MPP's actions the mandate of the workshop was restricted to those discussion areas that the national ANC would tolerate. In using her technocratic skills to secure a pivotal role within the workshop, ensure that the ANC would direct the deliberations of it and set boundaries around any further development of provincial cooperation, this provincial ANC MPP was awarded a prestigious position in the executive following the 2004 elections, the first woman ANC MPP to be awarded such in KwaZulu-Natal.

The case study of the NCOPSC demonstrates that legislative scrutiny and oversight is the domain of a few elites, and through this domain, party competition has found a new arena.

Streams of political elites: Policy, politics and institutional capacity

The institutional capacity and incapacity of political elites has a direct bearing upon the types of sub-groupings of political elites, their longevity in the legislature and the dominance of the provincial agenda by political rather than policy matters. Two sub-groupings of elites have been identified. They are, firstly, those with extensive capacity in policy matters who are provided with an additional guarantee of longevity in the legislature. Secondly, there is a sub-group who are unable to grasp policy skills and have re-orientated their roles as politically orientated rather than policy orientated, forcing a political agenda rather than a policy orientated one. The following two case studies on provincial finances and the provincial capital issue demonstrate these sub-group types.

Case study: The provincial finances and institutional capacity

The clearest example of the continued longevity of a technocratic sub-group of elites is provided in the case study of an acute provincial financial crisis and the management of it by the MEC Peter Miller. Finance is the key provincial portfolio and the department became managed by a member of the legislature whose very characteristics and etiquette were the anathema of all that the dominant political party the IFP – of which he was nonetheless a member – represented. Despite this, in his role as the MEC for finance, Miller was provided with complete and unfettered party support as well as support from across the political spectrum.

In March 1998 the national government exercised its constitutional mandate to impose financial restrictions on the Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal under Section 100(a) of the Constitution as a result of the province being in debt to the amount of R2.3 billion. The debt was a consequence of two factors. The first was irresponsible government spending by provincial government departments (primarily education, health and social welfare) in the 1996-1997 and 1997-1998 financial years. For example, R400 million was spent between 1996-1997 on providing voluntary severance packages to teachers who then had to be re-hired because of a teacher shortage. The second factor was the collapse of financial controls in the provincial Ministry of Finance and the provincial Treasury. This collapse was so critical that it was not known in the provincial Ministry of Finance that the province had overspent in 1997 until three-quarters of the way through 1998. So dire was the financial position of the province that the provincial bankers had refused to honour any more cheques.

The result of this financial catastrophe was that the national government contributed R1 billion towards paying off the debt in exchange for the IFP Premier signing an agreement that, should the province not rectify its financial position, Section 100(b) of the constitution would be enforced and national government would exercise its constitutional right to take over the provincial finances.

In April 1998, IFP MPP Peter Miller[9] was appointed MEC for Finance by the IFP, replacing MEC Senezele Mhlungu, and by March 2001 the province was debt free. In 1999, the Public Finance Management Act and the Public Finance Amendment Act were passed[10] to regulate financial management. These Acts provided for internal financial controls and responsible financial management by all persons in the provincial government and set out serious consequences for those failing to adhere to the provisions in the Acts. In addition, as MEC for Finance, the Acts provided Miller with wide powers to 'confirm, vary or revoke any decision taken by the head of a department … or a provincial treasury' (Republic of South Africa 1999b: chapter 2, section 10.3). Miller's debt reduction strategy consisted of massive spending that cuts across all provincial departments to generate funds for debt reduction. This resulted in hostility towards him from within those departments. In addition, Miller implemented a Strategic Review of the Ministry of Finance and reduced the staff complement from 750 mainly clerical and administrative staff to 300 highly qualified numerate chartered accountants and economists. He put in place a system whereby the Chief Accountant from each department was required to check everything that was spent against their allocated budget and Miller provided weekly financial reports to the provincial cabinet on the progress of debt reduction. Prior to this, no MEC had ever received a financial report from the MEC for Finance.

The intervention by the national sphere of government and the Acts that were passed to regulate financial management threatened the position of political elites in the province. Overspending had occurred across the political spectrum in Departments headed by both ANC and IFP MECs. The position of the IFP as the government in the provincial legislature was particularly at risk. The party's ability to carry out all aspects of its policy agenda became dependent upon Miller's capacity to reverse the provincial financial crisis and to put in place a system of checks and balances within each department, otherwise their power to act in policy matters would be controlled by the ANC at the

---

[9] For a discussion of Miller's biographical background and his route into politics and past political experience see the discussion later in this section.

[10] The Public Finance Management Act (No.1 of 1999) applies to the national sphere of government and the Public Finance Management Amendment Act (No.29 of 1999) extended this to the provincial sphere of government.

national level. This was a question of autonomy for the provincial ANC as much as for the IFP.

Miller's combination of educational, professional and political background demonstrate his capacity to excel in a policy environment. For example, he speaks fluent English, isiZulu, Xhosa and Afrikaans. He graduated with a BSc and an MSc, both cum laude and then served as a managing director of finance in two companies. Prior to entering the Provincial Legislature of KwaZulu-Natal he served in politics for more than 20 years beginning when he was elected to the position of Vice-Chairperson of the United Party[11] in 1973, then served as a Member of the Natal Provincial Council from 1979 and as a Chief Whip and active member of many standing committees from 1981-1986. He then served for seven years as a member of the Executive Council of the Natal Provincial Administration, in effect switching roles from that of policy oversight and policy scrutiny to that of policy-making until 1993. In 1994 he joined the IFP and was allocated the portfolio of local government and housing in the legislature before becoming MEC for Finance. Clearly, his skills and experience prove his potential to perform as an active member of the political elite in a number of roles, whether in a monitoring capacity or policy-making environment.

Despite this, Miller was not a good fit in the IFP. Without his skills it is highly unlikely that he would have been chosen by the IFP to serve the party in the provincial government. He repeatedly clashed with the party leadership in a manner that suggests that he neither shares the vision of, nor conforms to, the political etiquette in the party. This is evident in a number of core areas. Firstly, he does not share the party perspective upon the position of traditional leadership as a concept nor in reality. For example, in his previous portfolio of local government he repeatedly clashed with the IFP leadership over the range of powers and functions of traditional leadership at the local government level. So serious was this clash that other party members entered his office and comprehensively changed the document that he was to submit for discussion after Miller refused to do so (Pers. IFP Interview 46). Miller was stripped of the portfolio in 1996 by the IFP president, Mangosuthu Buthelezi who, in a candid outburst on the local radio station Ukhozi FM condemned Miller in no uncertain

[11] The United Party was formed by a merger between Barry Hertzog's National Party and Jan Smuts' South African Party and was South Africa's ruling party from 1934-1948. The party has a chequered history of divisions between conservatives and liberals. In 1975, the United Party was renamed the New Republic Party, but a significant number of parliamentarians did not remain with it and joined the anti-apartheid Progressive Federal Party instead. In the 1977 elections, the New Republic Party returned with only 10 seats out of the 41 the United Party had previously held.

terms. He said, 'he can tell us whether it is just because we are kaffirs that he will not heed what we have decided' (Buthelezi in: Khumalo 1999).

Secondly, Miller repeatedly argued with the party leadership in public, a factor that would not be tolerated if he was not useful to the party in the legislature. For example, when he headed the gambling portfolio (as part of the finance portfolio) he did not agree with the party over the favoured applicants for casino licenses, nor the merits of the gambling industry for the province per se. Rather than expressing this privately, his comments were openly reported by the media. So damaging was this to the party that IFP party chairman and provincial Premier Lionel Mtshali, who had taken over the portfolio from Miller, was forced to repudiate Miller's sentiments in a letter to the press (cf. Mtshali 2001).

As if that was not enough in terms of "disrespectful" political etiquette (a factor that, as we have seen, forced the IFP into a coalition with the ANC instead of the DA), he did not support Ulundi as the preferred seat of the provincial capital, and even when the party suggested that a referendum should be held to let the provincial electorate decide over the capital issue, Miller speculated in the media about the issue and the impact that this would have on the IFP coalition with the DA (cf. Kockott 2004). Clearly, Miller's value system, political etiquette and policy positions are contrary to the majority of those held in the party. Despite this he was, in the crucial moment of crisis, placed in the key portfolio of finance and provided with a free rein. Although epitomizing the tensions within the party, between those who had grown up within the traditions of the party and those who had not, the Miller IFP case is one of co-dependence. Hence, despite Miller's non-conformity, the party utilizes his skills and it is these skills that guarantee his longevity as a member of the provincial political elite.

Miller's case is also an example of guaranteed longevity of a technocratic sub-group who are able to hold their parties hostage through fear that they might cross the floor and join the competition to the benefit of another political party. In 1999 he did not originally appear on the IFP list for the provincial elections but was added at number 45 and then moved to number 10 on the candidate list at the intervention of the party president (Pers. IFP Interview 128). In Miller's case, his characteristics demonstrate that he is a desirable candidate to all parties in the legislature. He has been repeatedly and openly praised by other parties, not least during MINMEC[12] meetings by ANC national

[12] MINMEC (Intergovernmental Relations Committee of Ministers and Members of Provincial Councils) gives effect to the principles of cooperative government and the intergovernmental nature of the South African policy environment. The national minister for a policy sector and the nine corresponding provincial MECs meet on a

Finance Minister Trevor Manuel for his competence in the finance portfolio. Miller is also not new to political defections. For example, during his political career he has been a serving member of four political parties – the United Party, the New Republic Party,[13] the National Party and the Inkatha Freedom Party. A career politician, Miller defected from the NRP to the NP when the NRP lost its official opposition status to the Conservative Party. He defected again in 1993 from the NP to the IFP when he clashed with the Con. Botha administration over health policy in the province. In both cases he crossed the political spectrum from a position of lesser to greater influence. In this case, Miller's conservative ideology alienates him from many of the ANC provincial elite. Despite sharing social capital with members of the DA and NNP, many of whom were former colleagues in the Natal Provincial Administration, Miller's career aspirations tie him to one of the major parties which, in effect, leaves only the IFP. The potential for crossing the floor to the competition reinforces the position of technocratic elites in the legislative and executive.

However, the reinforcement of positions in government and the guaranteed longevity also increases the potential fluidity among this sub-group of the political elite. Miller is one of many examples within the parliamentary setting of a technocratic political elite whose members chose their political homes as a consequence of prior political beliefs and experiences and have since utilized their institutional capacity to cross the floor to the opposition. Other examples include Maurice Mackenzie, Gabriel Nadabandaba, Mike Tarr and Belinda Scott. Belinda Scott, for example, became an IFP MPP after completing an MSC and working in the Inkatha Institute as a political analyst. She was Director of the National Housing Forum in 1992 and then a Director of the Provincial Housing Forum whereby she did substantial housing policy work. She came into conflict in the policy arena with another IFP elite member, MEC Narend Singh and took the opportunity to cross the floor to the DA where she became Whip. Working closely alongside Ina Cronje, then ANC Chief Whip, she crossed again to the ANC.

Within this technocratic sub-group of elites that demonstrate policy capacity and chose their home as a consequence of past rather than present political perspectives none grew up in the history of the party. All are competent at negotiating the political environment and their skills base and positions in parliament has placed them in a superior position to negotiate new terms of

---

regular basis in this sectoral forum to discuss policy and legislation within that particular policy sector.

[13] The New Republic Party was formed out of the United Party in 1977. Most parliamentarians, however, did not stay with the new party and joined the anti-apartheid Progressive Federal Party instead. In the 1977 elections the New Republic Party returned only 10 seats.

office with the opposition. Hence, the capacity of some, within a parliament where low capacity is the norm, enables an additional guarantee of longevity for these MPPs and consequently increases fluidity and instability among the elite and the governing party in office.

Institutional incapacity and the provincial capital issue

The provincial capital issue is a clear example of the incapacity of a sub-group of the political elite in policy-making and of an agenda that is promoted and dominated by political and personal concerns rather than by policy concerns. The legacy of a dual capital for KwaZulu-Natal in both Ulundi and Pietermaritzburg[14] came to an end at the end of the second parliamentary term in 2004 when the new ANC provincial executive moved the Executive Council to Pietermaritzburg, leaving the Ulundi parliament redundant. Until this point, the Provincial Government had used both centres, alternating legislative sittings and committee meetings between the two, with the executive choosing which centre in which to locate itself. The IFP supported Ulundi as the seat of the legislative assembly[15] and the ANC and DA Pietermaritzburg where their patterns of regional identification are dominant. Although differences in perspective over where the seat of the legislative assembly should be was an issue of contention between the ANC and IFP, the coalition between the two parties meant that it was set aside. That was until the IFP moved into a coalition with the DA when the ANC used the opportunity to try and force a wedge between this alliance. The ANC 2004 victory resulted in a unilateral move of the executive, ending the matter for this parliamentary term.

The resolution of the provincial capital issue by the move of the Provincial Executive Committee to Pietermaritzburg is, in four main ways, one of the clearest examples of incapacity in public policy-making and scrutiny First, the move of the seat of the legislature to Pietermaritzburg was conducted without any feasibility study on the merits of the relocation. No consideration was given to the amount of space, accommodation of offices or even parking facilities. The Ulundi legislative complex was built in 1984 at a cost of R60 million to house the KwaZulu Legislative Assembly (cf. Mbanjwa 2006). Its main parliamentary chamber and galleries accommodate up to 460 people (cf. Mbanjwa 2006). There are 150 individual offices in the complex and many more chambers and conference rooms (cf. Mbanjwa 2006). There is sufficient overnight accommodation to house all MPPs and MECs for the, on average, three legis-

[14] See Chapter 3 for a discussion of the perspectives of the significance of the capitals at Ulundi and Pietermaritzburg.

[15] See Chapter 3 for a discussion on the reasons for the IFP preference of Ulundi as the provincial capital.

lative sittings per annum. The complex reflects an African influence with a circular legislative chamber thought to increase consensus, the outer wall covered in tapestries depicting the history of the Zulu and a life size bronze statue of Shaka Zulu just outside the entrance to the complex. In contrast, in the Pietermaritzburg parliamentary complex MPPs and MECs are squashed into a parliamentary chamber that is not big enough, the public gallery is restricted to 50 people. It does not have enough office space to accommodate even the MPPs of the majority party. The majority are housed in rented spaces outside the complex. The executive branch is located in Natalia House, a 15 minute walk away from the complex in rented offices. There is only parking for approximately 20 cars. There is no overnight accommodation in the complex so the administration books hotel accommodation for MPPs for the legislative sittings. On more than one occasion this meant booking hotel accommodation in Durban because there were not enough hotel rooms in Pietermaritzburg (Pers. Interview 140). The complex reflects a Westminster style influence with government and opposition facing each other in the chamber and there is a life size statue of Queen Victoria just outside the entrance to the complex. Instead of conducting a feasibility study on the merits of relocation prior to moving the legislature, a group of consultants[16] conducted a feasibility study of the Pietermaritzburg complex three years after the fact, and then suggested that the Pietermaritzburg complex in the central business district was too small and the legislature should move to an entirely new site at the Town Hill Hospital (cf. Alberts 2007). Hence, a feasibility study prior to the move would have shown that Ulundi was the only one of the two sites that could accommodate the needs of the legislature.

Secondly, the move was conducted without any economic assessment of the cost implications of the move. It was assumed that the move to Pietermaritzburg made economic sense and that the site of Ulundi was 'prohibitively expensive for staff and members of the provincial parliament to attend sittings' (Mbanjwa 2006). In fact, the majority of parliamentarians do not live in or around Pietermaritzburg and have to travel to parliamentary sittings and committee meetings anyway. If the legislature was located in Ulundi they could stay overnight at no cost for the entire duration of the sitting, thus mitigating the costs of petrol and the costs of hotel accommodation for week long sittings. The legislature pays for these costs anyway. Even if the legislature did not pay for these costs, they would not be prohibitive. For example, in 2005, the basic remuneration of an MPP at the lowest end of the salary scale was R373,678 per annum, for a committee chairperson at the lowest end of the scale it was R454,488 and for an MEC at the lowest end of the scale it was R618,326 per annum (Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal 2005: 3145). These are substantial salaries in

[16] Amafa Consortium.

the South African economy. Barkan et al claim that 'the single most important resource is the provision of appropriate salaries for members and staff' (Barkan *et al*. 2004: 229). Widely believed to be a method through which to attract high calibre MPPs and to avoid corruption and nepotism, salaries at the national, provincial and local level in South Africa are amongst the highest in Africa. Yet, as this research shows, substantial salaries are not a guarantee of institutional capacity among MPPs. Whereas poor salaries in relation to constituency expenses in Senegal, Benin and Ghana might result in personal financial pressures on the families of legislators (cf. Barkan *et al*. 2004: 229-230) this is not the case in KwaZulu-Natal. Perhaps rather than considering substantial salaries as a method of attracting high calibre MPPs, one might consider the claim of Bayart, that 'material prosperity is one of the chief political virtues' (Bayart 1993: 242) in African politics. As such substantial salaries serve as an expectation in the road to respect and has little bearing on the calibre of MPPs.

In KwaZulu-Natal the entire Ulundi parliamentary complex is owned by the government with no ongoing rental cost implications. In contrast, in Pietermaritzburg the only parts of the complex which is owned by the government is the main building which houses the chamber and the offices where the majority party is located (which does not even accommodate all the majority party members). All other buildings are rented at a significant cost. This includes the building that houses the library, the administration, and the offices for all other party caucus members. In addition, the legislature has since the move purchased another building in Pietermaritzburg at a significant cost and is currently renovating it at a further cost (Mbanjwa 2006). A move to a new site at the Town Hill Hospital would mean further significant costs. Hence, in reality, the move has resulted in significant cost implications that were not considered, and that reflect poor policy choices, and a lack of monitoring and scrutiny of decisions that have policy implications. In this case, a portion of the provincial budget that could have been spent on significant development needs has been channelled into an unnecessary and costly endeavour.

Thirdly, the move was conducted without any economic assessment of the impact that it would have upon the region in which Ulundi was located. It was assumed that the move made 'economic and developmental sense' (Kockett 2004). In fact, the move makes very little economic and developmental sense. The Ulundi complex is located in the Zululand District Municipality, an area of 15,307km squared with a population of just under 1 million people with a life expectancy of 48 years (Zululand District Municipality 2006). Within this district is the Ulundi local municipality. In the Ulundi local municipality only 12.5% of the population are formally employed, 40% of households have no income whatsoever and the primary employer is the public sector which em-

ploys more than 60% of those employed (Ulundi Local Municipality 2007). Key economic activities revolved around Ulundi as the seat of the provincial capital. It served as an economic development node for businesses in the northern KwaZulu-Natal area, attracted by the proximity to the legislature and with a fully functional airstrip for daily flights to Johannesburg. Zululand is today almost entirely rural and poor and made up predominantly of women headed households whose partners have migrated south to the cities such as Pietermaritzburg or north to the mines to find employment and of children. Just south of Zululand District Municipality is Uthungulu District Municipality encompasssing the local municipality of Nkandla. Today Nkandla suffers from 93% unemployment, 49% of the population live on social grants and it is the fourth poorest area in South Africa (Nkandla Local Municipality 2007). Ulundi was the closest economic node to Nkandla, providing employment for the majority of those employed before the legislature was relocated. Hence, the move of the parliament has direct and severe consequences for the poor in northern KwaZulu-Natal and for private economic development in this region more generally. In contrast to the economic conditions in the area surrounding Ulundi, in the local municipality of Msunduzi (which encompasses the city of Pietermaritzburg) there 60% of the population was employed in the formal economy in 2002 (Msunduzi Municipality 2002). This was mainly in social services, manufacturing and institutions. This was prior to the relocation of the legislature to Pietermaritzburg which evidently did not require the legislative seat as a drawer of economic development to the area.

Finally, the interests that were allowed to dominate the decision of the move of the provincial legislature are not those that the legislature should primarily represent. The rural poor who are predominantly women headed households and carry a double burden of poverty were not represented. They were not represented in the economic impact that moving the legislature has on the region and they are not represented in the substantial transfer of funds away from development to build and renovate a new legislative assembly. Instead, three other sets of interests have dominated this decision. The first is business interests, and particularly property developers, in the city of Pietermaritzburg. Prior to the 2004 election Pietermaritzburg property developer Russell Collins, supported by the Pietermaritzburg Chamber of Commerce, launched a campaign to convince voters to vote ANC so that the legislature was moved to Pietermaritzburg (Kockott 2004). His business partner, Lance Hackney then coordinated the Capital Coalition Campaign printing glossy news supplements and flyers to publicise their view (Kockott 2004). This was not supported by the Durban Chamber of Business who believed that the capital issue was a politicized matter. Clearly, business in the city of Pietermaritzburg was to benefit from the parliamentary move. With the new proposal to move again to a new Town Hill

site Pietermaritzburg Chamber of Business Chief Executive Andrew Layman complained that property values in the central business district would fall if the new move went ahead (cf. Alberts 2007). Clearly organized business was one of the main beneficiaries and interests represented in the parliamentary move to Pietermaritzburg. The ANC as a political party also benefited from the move, which located the provincial parliament within one of its key electoral support bases closer (than Ulundi) to the city of Durban which is another. In fact DA representative Radley Keys argued that the ANC had very close links to the business interests that organized the Capital Coalition Campaign (Kockott 2004). The party has little representation in the legislature or voting support from northern KwaZulu-Natal. In fact, many MPPs were the direct beneficiaries of the move to Pietermaritzburg, but for personal not policy reasons. It would appear that the location of the legislature in Pietermaritzburg supports a preferred lifestyle among some MPPs. For example, interviews revealed that when parliament is in session in Pietermaritzburg, many MPPs preferred to be booked into hotel accommodation in Durban (a 50 minute drive away) because the hotels were of a high quality standard and the social life in the evenings was good (Pers. ANC Interview 134 and Pers. IFP Interview 30). This was supported by one interviewee. He said,

> 'I must put this person into a hotel. There is nowhere for him to stay. He wants to be in Umhlanga … The restaurants are good … There are no good restaurants in Ulundi … There is a good jazz club in Durban … and it is just 45 minutes from (Pietermaritzburg) … they are going there tonight' (Pers. Interview 140).

The incapacity of the political elite in the legislature in policy-making, oversight, scrutiny and monitoring enabled the decision on the provincial capital issue to be made. They used their power as MPPs and their knowledge of the parliamentary environment to the benefit of personal and political interests instead of developmental ones and not to the benefit of the majority of the provincial population. This is a clear case of MPPs falling back upon the skills that they have in the absence of institutional training and institutional provisions to enable them to make better policy decisions. Hence, in the absence of capacity they revert to party political concerns and personal interests and the provincial agenda comes to mirror the incapacity of the elite. As it does so, the elite move the agenda farther from the real policy concerns of the province. Until, a political agenda becomes the norm.

Conclusion

In conclusion, there are two sub-groups of political elites in the provincial legislature of KwaZulu-Natal. There is a technocratic sub-group which mirrors Pareto's "upper stratum"; an elite that possess the qualities that enable them to

rule and have made the best use of their qualities and attributes. Their skill provides the method through which they maintain themselves in power. The legislature is the new arena of competition where the upper strata use their skill. The other sub-group of the political elite maintain themselves in power through Mosca's exploitation of the system. Their ability to develop capacity is dependent upon the support system and training that is absent from the legislature. While they may possess substantial salaries, they are not supported with institutional resources. In this absence, this sub-group utilizes its ability to understand political rather than policy issues to re-focus the provincial agenda so that their incapacity in policy areas no longer matters. Through this, the longevity in office of its members is guaranteed. Hence, the provincial business comes to mirror the capacity of MPPs, a consequence of the impact of political elite formation and political party interaction in the legislature.

Conclusion: The political elite of KwaZulu-Natal

This book is a study of the agents that construct, define and bring about change through the exercise of institutionalized power; it is a study of political elite formation in the context of the KwaZulu-Natal Provincial Legislature. The roots of political elite formation are located within the contested contexts of contested political ideas and shifting political institutional spaces through three political periods: early political movements, political elite formation during the struggle period and political elite formation during the democratic transition. The political elite that came to parliament in 1994 was ideologically divided into increasingly entrenched camps of contradictory and internally fragmented alliances. A range of ideological discourses competed throughout these periods in which I focused. Yet, despite this competition with other discourses, Africanist discourses were contained in the ideology of both the IFP and the ANC elites.

Secondly, the political parties represented in the legislature had prior experience of institutionalized power through one of three legitimate systems of authority. These were formal political legislative institutions, informal institutions of authority created through the merging of various struggle components and, finally, through the institution of traditional leadership. In the course of these experiences, political parties claimed these institutional spaces as their own, and in many cases elites operated within a charismatic form of politics by personalizing their positions. The political elite thus came to be seen as the institution in which they were located.

The political elite in the territory that made up KwaZulu and Natal existed historically with a large degree of autonomy from national political party dynamics. This theme can be traced throughout the three periods of history that I considered. As a consequence of this degree of autonomy, provincial political

discourses came to dominate national political dynamics, both in terms of political ideas and in terms of political spaces prior to 1994.

Since 1994, political elite formation in the Provincial Legislature of KwaZulu-Natal has consisted of a number of characteristics based on key themes. In the first of these themes, the social composition of the political elite, I categorized the political elite by race, gender, age, regional identification, family and lineage ties, religion, education, professional occupation and community related activities. Although heterogeneous, the political elite is not representative of the provincial population and, in most individual cases, already possessed elite status both prior to entering the legislature and prior to initial political involvement. This is most clear in gender terms. The political elite is overwhelmingly male. Parliamentary women are mostly extraordinary in comparison to their male counterparts, have gender specific experiences and possess support from the women's sections of their parties. To be in parliament they have overcome normative assumptions about their roles in society. That the political elite is not representative of the provincial population is further borne out in educational levels and family and lineage ties. MPPs have a strong family connection to politics. In the IFP, ancestral and lineage ties created patterns of respect. In occupational class, the political elite were found to be drawn from flexible careers – the "chattering classes" and small business owners. As the political spaces available to individuals narrowed in 1994, so did the range of elites that became parliamentarians. That the political elite is not representative of the provincial population is in keeping with the findings of Norris in research on legislatures in advanced democratic states where those who make themselves available for political office are a-typical of the electorate. This is possibly also indicative of a deferential political culture in KwaZulu-Natal as the population seek to choose their "betters" to represent them.

Although already established as an elite prior to taking office, the political elite in KwaZulu-Natal does not share the profile of a typical social background. This is in contrast with both Pareto's argument that the political elite share a common social background and with Mosca's contention that a political elite is an organized grouping formed on the basis of common material interests. Instead, in this context there are some clear divisions in the social characteristics of the political elite based upon party political lines. In terms of racial composition, the IFP elite was found to be the most diverse grouping followed by the NNP. The ANC and DA consisted of almost entirely one racial group. Since 1994, these profiles have begun to change. This is in the NNP and DA as a consequence of poor electoral chances, and in the IFP as a consequence of internal party political culture. In the DA and NNP race offers an additional guarantee to selection as the parties attempt to shed their non-black profiles. In terms of regional identification, the IFP is the only party in which its MPPs are drawn

from all thirteen districts which comprise both rural and urban settings. In addition, these MPPs syncretised their urban and rural affiliations in their patterns of regional identification. This is in sharp contrast to the ANC whose MPPs are overwhelmingly drawn from two districts that are overwhelmingly urban and whose urban MPPs from these two districts dominate in the legislature. Hence, the IFP elite is much more representative than previously thought and the ANC is distinctly urban. In terms of other differences, it was found that the IFP MPPs are more likely to have been involved in community-based developmental roles and the ANC in mobilization and protest type politics which provide clear distinctions in the experiences they bring to the legislature and the way they view their larger role. In terms of occupational experience, IFP, DA and NNP parliamentarians had a range of skills to fall back on, unlike many of their ANC counterparts where politics is most likely to be their only career.

While remaining socially fractured, in the distinctions between elites from different political parties, there is a slight trend in that the political elite has become more socially homogenous since 1994. This indicates that some social bias is present in elite formation and some measure of self-selection exists among the political elite. In addition, there are discernible clusters of political elites both within and across party political lines. In some cases, elites from different political parties share very similar social characteristics, a key factor in that makes fluidity and fragility in allegiance possible. Syncretic affiliations have served to integrate elites into a series of discernible clusters and to knit those clusters together.

The social characteristics of the political elite have enabled social networks and, in turn, social capital. Patterns of association among the political elite, based upon one or more shared social characteristic, have served to bind them in relationships of trust. Such patterns of association serve as reliability markers that connect elites and similarly structure some of their relationships to one another. This in turn has contributed somewhat to the patterns of recruitment and circulation that were found. Some elites were able to draw upon social networks, based upon shared social characteristics, to guarantee a place in the legislature. This was particularly so in 1994 in the IFP, where a substantial white bloc of MPPs was included on the electoral list. However, these social networks also exist across political party lines. The key element in most political parties is an elite that has become, in the post-1994 period, both fluid and fragile in political party allegiance.

The political elite in KwaZulu-Natal was already an elite before they came to parliament but not solely and primarily in terms of their social composition. They are an elite of the electorate, of the political experiences that they hold and of their political parties. The overwhelming majority held senior service roles

within their political parties prior to becoming parliamentarians. Hence, they are connected with political power, both in the present and in the past.

Specific political experiences provided an additional guarantee of a place in the provincial legislature to clusters of the political elite. These specific experiences were dependent upon political party affiliation. Hence, political capital is present in political elite formation in KwaZulu-Natal and is a product of shared political experiences. The political elite to some extent monopolise the administration of political careers through party political knowledge. The senior position holders have recalibrated their status in the new parliament based upon certain political experiences, and those experience types are dependent upon the parties with which they came to office with. They coalesce with people in their own image, elites who have been "blooded" by sharing similar political experiences and such shared experiences contribute to a common identity.

Despite developing connections to power, the reasons for the affiliations of the political elite were not based primarily upon the grand political context, but rather upon local contexts and personal circumstances and sometimes on chance. A limited choice and a desire for political involvement led individuals in some cases into their political affiliations. This is most common among the ANC elite. These limited choices were often as a consequence of fractious party politics and the control of turf. Such routes into politics injected a multiform dimension to political parties, explains the formation of particular political clusters within parties and means that for many, the reasons for their particular political party affiliations are not pertinent in the post 1994 period. For some, an alternative political home is now inconceivable as a consequence of their assimilation into political party structures. For others, their affinity to their political party is tenuous. This lack of affinity has two consequences. Firstly, some have come to identify their interests to the legislature, rather than their political party. Secondly, the potential for increased circulation within the legislature is present, adding increased uncertainty to the maintenance of democracy through competitive elections, as elites struggle to redefine their present day affiliations.

In countries in which a party list system of proportional representation is in operation, the potential for the political elite to form a political class is greatest as the parliamentary lists are by-and-large established by the higher ranks that set the rules and now have the potential to self-select. However, in KwaZulu-Natal the political elite does not constitute one self-conscious political class that transcends party affiliations, nor does the vast array of political experiences indicate that those in power determine their own composition, or act in unity. However, the ANC political elite in particular are frequently now *living from politics*.

While in KwaZulu-Natal there is not one political class, one may speak of many classes. These political classes in KwaZulu-Natal coalesce around parties,

and these classes co-exist. This is a consequence of the form of political capital that exists. However, the potential for the transformation of these fractured political classes into one political class exists because the currencies of political capital are mainly symbolic and includes respect, values, shared identity and shared experiences. This symbolism is based upon past, rather than present, political experiences. In the ANC, they are further based upon a need to be political, rather than policy preferences, which in turn creates a need to live from politics.

Elite theorists – Pareto, Mosca and Mills – and democratic elite theorists alike frequently focus upon the methods of circulation and they posit that elite recruitment and circulation is a key method of democratic replacement as new interests seek power. Unlike them, I added two further dimensions to the concept of political elite recruitment and circulation, that of the causes, characteristics and consequences of elite circulation and the impact of the context of political parties. Thus, I explored political elite recruitment in the party list processes in 1994 and 1999 and political elite circulation in the floor crossing processes within the legislature, locating these firmly within political party political culture and social and political capital as it has emerged within political parties in the legislature. As a result of this approach I found that in KwaZulu-Natal, while social and political composition often provide the currencies through which political elite recruitment and circulation often takes place within the legislature, prevailing norms of intra-party political culture provide the main reasons.

These political cultures are not identical in the ANC and IFP. In the ANC conceptions of etiquette including notions of respect and leadership are clearly related to past party political experiences and institutional positions held within the party and the legislature. In contrast, in the IFP, the prevailing norms of political etiquette mean that these conceptions are much more diverse and, although related to prior experiences have no direct relationship to the institutional position held by MPPs. Instead, leaders can emerge from almost anywhere and alongside the formal institutionalized structures of party and parliamentary offices, a parallel structure of leadership exists that serves to provide political relationships and the canvassing of ideas with a procedure and boundaries. Unlike in the ANC, the cleavages present in terms of who fits into the hierarchy are cross cutting rather than mutually reinforcing. Leaders can be leaders in more than one domain. As such, the route to leadership can take a variety of forms, does not dictate seniority in terms of debate and decisions and ties MPPs together across a whole range of cleavages. All MPPs follow these prevailing rules of political etiquette in their interactions with one another, so an idea can emerge from anyone, but is likely to be introduced through a leader.

A central feature of intra-party political culture is intra-party discipline, a factor that clearly demonstrates the prevailing rules of interaction between the political elite within each party. Central to party etiquette in the ANC is the concept of democratic centralism and discipline is thus predominantly private, formalised and institutionalized. Although debate and discussion is accepted in caucus, MPPs are expected to abide by the decisions that are taken by party leadership. Should they not, discipline is conclusive and MPPs are sidelined. In contrast to the ANC, discipline in the IFP, is frequently personal, public and related to conceptions of etiquette and respect through ubuntu-botho. Within these conceptions an individual is valued because he/she forms a part of a greater collective. Thus, it follows that discipline is also a collective enterprise and is frank, open and personal followed by a process of forgiveness and back reconciliation into the "collective".

Political elite circulation and volatility in the occupation of seats in Kwa-Zulu-Natal is a product of intra-party political culture in the IFP and ANC. Because these political cultures are not the same, they do not have the same consequences. In the IFP, elite circulation in the legislature has been a product of a re-casting of the political elite to incorporate those into the legislature who operate within the parameters of the prevailing norms of political etiquette, and the circulation out of the legislature of those who do not. The concept of leadership within these prevailing norms, as a role not tied to any particular legislative structure, means that the rules of canvassing of ideas provide for broader leadership opportunities in the party and not necessarily in government. As such the political elite do not extensively hold on to legislative opportunities. In contrast, in the ANC a more structured conception of leadership correlates to hierarchical distinctions in institutional position held. Circulation is a product of these conceptions as the legislature, provides a springboard to greater leadership positions in the national parliament and in other institutional managerial roles within the state. As such there is a growing affiliation to legislative structures to secure a political institutional role that is tied to conceptions of leadership and respect. Hence, the prevailing norms of political party culture means that political elite circulation in KwaZulu-Natal is not always a democratic indicator, and not on the same indicator for the elite in each party.

In addition, there has been increased volatility in political elite circulation in KwaZulu-Natal since 1994, which at face value appears to consist of a steady flow of recruitment and replacement. It is not so. This volatility is primarily a consequence of turnover in the IFP. In the IFP the high turnover of MPPs is a consequence of both replacement – as elites leave office for a range of alternatives – which is democratic, and floor crossing to the ANC in which case they tie their interests to the legislature and not democracy. In the ANC there are high levels of parliamentary retention and a growing affiliation to legislative

structures to secure a political institutional role as a springboard to greater positions.

While intra-party political culture has had a direct impact upon recruitment and circulation in KwaZulu-Natal, the attitudes and values of the political elite has had an impact upon political institutions. In the first parliamentary term from 1994-1999 the political elite gradually came to abandon a duality of political practice and focus their energies within the new framework of legislative politics. This was in line with Putnam's contention that the institutionalization of modern institutions of government is a central factor in moderating the behaviour of the political elite. There were three key reasons for the moderation of behaviour. Firstly, political elite circulation and a reining in of a militant core within parties removed the barrier to a working relationship among parties in the legislature. Secondly, the institutionalization of a peace process between the IFP and ANC contributed to a modification of attitudes. Thirdly, the understanding that the political elite were responsible for public policy in the province demanded an element of some cooperation between political parties.

However, the second election became a catalyst for the interaction of elites based upon their shared value systems and the hegemony of elite clusters that coalesced around Africanism. The equation of an IFP discourse of respect with a broader discourse of race set the scene for the negotiation of a coalition agreement with the ANC which had as its basis, this shared discourse between clusters of elites in both parties. Overall, the political elite, was found to display value systems in a range of categories. As such they were categorised as rewardist nationalists, cultural communitarians (African consciousness), traditionalists, ethno-linguistically bounded communitarians, cosmopolitan modernisers, individualists and pragmatic political pluralists.

It was found that clusters of the political elite based upon the value systems of rewardist nationalists, cosmopolitan modernisers and cultural communitarians were present in the coalition. The dynamics of interaction in the coalition provided for a political network consisting of a dominant cross-party discourse forged along the ideas of Africanism that supplanted the intra-party ideologies, excluded other discourses and created a new hierarchy within the legislature. At the same time other clusters of the political elite – ethno-linguistically bounded communitarians and traditionalists in their most anti-institutional form declined. Unlike Putnam's study it would appear that this simultaneous decline was through elite circulation and replacement and not the modification of behaviour and values through the effects of institutional frameworks.

This raises the question what is the impact institutionally when the attitudes and values of the political elite change? Can established values and attitudes remould political institutions? The ANC-IFP coalition brought together a set of value and belief systems that was not congruent with the new institutions and,

in fact, began to undermine them. In this case, modern political institutions proved themselves to be fragile in the face of a coalition of value systems and the political elite claimed the institutions as their space. This is congruent with the work of Bloch in that deeper not explicitly political traditions or values may have an impact institutionally.

Institutionally speaking, the most important result of the coalition was that it prevailed in such a manner that the institutions of government stopped functioning as they were supposed to – to process and to resolve conflict. The committee system that is supposed to provide scrutiny, monitoring and oversight of executive decisions stopped functioning to any real effect and the executive branch operated with impunity. The penetration of institutions by the value systems embodied in the coalition provided for accommodation and compromise. In so doing, it sheltered the political elite from scrutiny and enabled them to function autonomously in particular spheres of influence.

If democracy is as Przeworski contends – the act of subjecting interests to competition, structuring and processing conflict through rules, procedures and institutions and ensuring that uncertainty is institutionalized – the penetration of the political institutions by the value systems embodied in the coalition and the fragility of those institutions in the face of deeper not explicitly political traditions was the most serious threat to democracy the province has faced since 1994.

As the formation of the IFP – ANC coalition and its subsequent collapse demonstrated, the relative dominance of elite clusters was in turn bounded by the prevailing political party discourse of political etiquette within political culture. The primary reason for a coalition between the IFP and ANC, and not the IFP and DP in 1999 was because of a failure of the political elite in the DP to comprehend the prevailing rules of political etiquette in the IFP – a factor that led them to insult the collective through a lack of “respect” to a “leader”. The prevailing conception of respect as it is tied to leadership and advancement in the ANC led to direct attempts to control the legislature, through floor-crossing and this clash with the IFP's discourse ultimately led to the withdrawal of the IFP.

Hence, the clash over “respect” as it is embodied in the political culture of the IFP and ANC, and the DP’s ability to work within the political culture of other parties came to define the balance between different forms of alliances and the place of clusters of the political elite within them. Thus in KwaZulu-Natal, the value systems of an Africanist ideology of the IFP-ANC coalition were to penetrate political institutions, but another form of value system – that of political etiquette was found to compete with ideology in the legislature. In both cases, value systems shaped the behaviour of the political elite. Ultimately, in KwaZulu-Natal, the institutions of government do not diminish the way in

which members of the political elite relate to one another, as the value systems that they possess determine the balance between values and functions. In KwaZulu-Natal, values and attitudes remoulded these political institutions.

If value systems can penetrate modern political institutions and determine their functioning this also speaks to the levels of institutional capacity held by the political elite. The concept of institutional capacity is not a major theme in elite theory, yet the question of whether the political elite understand their role and can carry it out is a key means to evaluate inter-elite relationships. Institutional capacity is defined as the *active* power of political elites to use their knowledge of the institutional environment including the mandate of the position that they occupy to influence the policy agenda and its outcomes and thus any particular outcome in which the exercise of political power manifests is ultimately dependent upon the institutional capacity of political elites.

In KwaZulu-Natal, the institutional capacity of the political elite was found to be influenced primarily by their social and political characteristics. Unlike Mosca's claim that increasing bureaucratization makes the skills of the political elite less relevant, in KwaZulu-Natal the absence of parliamentary training and support systems means that these skills are the primary resources that the political elite possess. On the whole, in KwaZulu-Natal, the political elite was found to have a limited understanding of their parliamentary roles and responsibilities and was bounded by their understanding of the institutional environment, comprehension of their role within it, and ability to navigate the parliamentary environment effectively.

This lack of understanding was felt in all parties, but most acutely by the political elite in the ANC whose previous political experience – political mobilezation, extra-legal action, and the construction of broad ideological and policy statements – did not provide the political elite with any resources to provide for real, substantive legislative agendas with tangible developmental outcomes. This is the more so, given conceptions of leadership in the party and the increasing trend of MPPs who choose to live from politics and who are not members of the "chattering classes".

In terms of institutional capacity in KwaZulu-Natal, there were found to be two sub-groups of the political elite in the provincial legislature. Firstly, there is a technocratic sub-group that mirrors Pareto's upper stratum; an elite that possess the qualities such as institutional capacity that enables them to rule. This grouping have, according to Pareto, made the best use of their qualities and attributes. The legislature is the new arena of competition where the upper stratum uses their skill. This grouping influences political institutions in important ways. Firstly, they are able to use their key skills of education, past occupational experience and past political institutional experience to influence the substantive debates within the committee system of the legislature and within the

executive branch. In this way they become the policy experts in the province. In a context in which values penetrates political institutions their own political opinions become incorporated into policy. Secondly, their "skills" become the way that they maintain themselves in power. The case of provincial institutional finances demonstrated that despite clear evidence of violations of party etiquette and discipline, the skills of a member of this sub-group is considered valued by the party. The result is that this sub-group is offered an "additional guarantee" across party lines in the legislature as a consequence of its dominance in capacity. In this context of acute party competition this has the added potential of increasing affiliation to the legislature and not the party, increasing fluidity within the legislature and subverting the procedures of democracy.

Secondly, there is a sub-group that lacks capacity who maintain itself in power through Mosca's exploitation of the system. Their ability to develop capacity is dependent upon support systems and training that is absent from the legislature. In this absence, this sub-group fall back on their ability to understand political rather than policy issues. The implication of this in KwaZulu-Natal is that each party provincial caucus acts as a back up for the incapacitated. It is from the party caucus that MPPs receive direction and instruction that is followed through in the legislature. As a consequence, MPPs frequently revert to party political concerns over political power, loyalty and influence rather than over questions of governance, monitoring and scrutiny. Parliamentary debates become bogged down by debates of a party nature rather than a provincial one by the majority of MPPs. Such questions as to where the provincial capital should be located are clear indications of this – the subsequent move of the provincial capital to Pietermaritzburg without any form of provincial assessment of the impact of that move or whether the move could be accommodated is a clear manifestation of this. The result is a re-focused provincial agenda. As such, in refocusing the agenda, the lack of capacity in policy areas of this sub-group no longer matters. In refocusing the provincial agenda, the potential exists in this context of acute party competition for more security for political elites that lack capacity as the provincial agenda comes to mirror the incapacity of elites.

I claim that political elite formation in KwaZulu-Natal remains guided by the history of party fracture lines that existed in the province, and the new institutional context within which the political elite are located has provided for greater fluidity rather than stability among the elite. Social and political capital provides the currencies of political elite formation of a bifurcated political elite, most of which lacks institutional capacity. This elite has been able to change the content of provincial business as a direct consequence of institutional incapacity. Whether the values and attitudes of the political elite coalesce across party lines in the future or not, what is clear is that the influences of older ideologies

and political culture persist and form the basis of political elite interactions. These values frequently impact upon the new institutions of government in this context. As such, both now and in the future, the essential components of power accumulation by the political elite have the potential to conflict with the political party system and to influence the institutions of government that form the very basis of democracy in the province.

Theoretical development

Theories of political elites have thus far consisted of fractured and fragmented approaches to the *problematic* of political elites and have failed to provide a comprehensive framework through which political elites may be studied. This study expands and redefines the study of political elites in two key ways. Firstly, it provides a new theoretical framework through which the power and agency of political elites and their relationship to political institutions may be studied. This framework encompasses the elements of social and political composition, recruitment and circulation, values and attitudes and institutional capacity to demonstrate that political elite formation encompasses all of these factors, these factors influence each other, and for a true reflection of political elite formation cannot be studied independently of one another.

Secondly, any interrogation into political elite formation should exist within the context of the way in which those elites negotiate, exercise and accumulate power; that is, within the confines of institutionalized power – within the institutions of power in which they are located in the legislature and within political parties. Hence, the character and constraints of parties and political institutions and their relationship to political elites is a key component in political elite formation. Without the state, the agency of political elites is meaningless.

Methodologically, this study shows that political elite theory should be guided by three criteria. First, that it draws together the characteristics of social and political composition, recruitment and circulation, values and attitudes and institutional capacity as a complete framework for understanding political elite formation. Second, that political elite formation is investigated within the context of institutionalized power. In countries undergoing transitions a broader definition of institution and institutional power is needed to encompass the shadow institutions often created by opposition movements (in this case the ANCs state outside of a state). Indeed, it is the relationship of the political elite to those institutions that provides power. Third, studies of political elites must explore any hypothesis through an extensive empirical method of investigation. The values and attitudes of the political elite cannot be ascertained through an examination only of political party membership or policy choices measured through elite voting patterns in contexts where acute political fractures made

free political choice difficult and hardened political camps existed. Only through a process of extensive interviewing will the complexity of political affiliations be revealed.

The first ten years of newly created democratic institutions in KwaZulu-Natal provide a few key developments for scholars in African political contexts in transition and in which there has been a history of acute political fractures. First, it is clear that the agency of political elites is the key factor in shaping, enabling, undermining or destroying political institutions. That political agency is dependent upon a multiplicity of currencies and commodities that range from social and political capital to patterns of culture, respect and institutional capacity. Political party membership may not be the only factor in identifying political attitudes and value systems. Yet in countries entering a democratic arrangement for the first time, hardened political camps may still endure despite the emergence of new cross-party value systems. Political elites possess multiple roles of representation and responsibility that overlap, fuse and straddle. Hence, the way in which political elites relate to one another is a primary point of departure in political analysis of them.

Second, whereas ideology is often thought to be a key indicator of values and attitudes among elites, patterns of political etiquette may also frequently permeate political relationships *between* elites. In this case, patterns of respect overwhelmingly influenced the substance of political life. If the form of political power influences the substance of that power then it needs to be given accordance in any studies of elites. Institutional incapacity among large subsections of a political elite makes values and attitudes and political etiquette the key determining factors in how those elites relate to one another and to how they relate to the political institutions through which they exercise political power.

To consider that constitutions and the political institutions created at a specific point in time via one implicit process of elite pacting will last unchanged for a lifetime is a fallicy. The key question for the development of theory is not whether a political elite drawn together in a new institutional arrangement will succumb to the moderating effects of those political institutions. Studies of elites must now begin to consider, not *whether* elite values, attitudes and patterns of political etiquette penetrate institutions, but rather *how* they do so.

References

Primary sources

Personal interviews

I conducted Personal Interviews with 138 Members of the Provincial Parliament of KwaZulu-Natal out of a possible total of 152 members who served at some point during the period 1994-2004. In addition, I interviewed two senior parliamentary administrators, 1 personal assistant to an MPP who became an MEC, the surviving wife of 1 deceased MPP, a senior office bearer in SAMWU, and 1 secretary-general of a political party. For reasons of anonymity the names of these interviewees are not listed here. Each interviewee was coded and is distinguished from other interviewees in the text by a number. Interviewees from the IFP, ANC, DP and NNP are also identified by political party in the text. In order to protect the anonymity of interviewees in minority parties where there are less than three members, I have not assigned a political party affiliation to them in the text. Interviewee numbers 01-138 in the text consist of interviewees with MPPs. Interviewee numbers 139-144 consist of other interviewees listed above.

Direct observations

I attended various parliamentary portfolio and standing committee meetings as an observer between the years 1998-2004 in the areas of Agriculture, Safety and Security, the National Council of Provinces, Public Accounts, Welfare, Constitutional Affairs, Education, Finance, Health, Housing, Environmental Affairs and Transport. I attended various sittings of the legislature as an observer between the years 1998-2004 including the special sitting convened by Premier Mtshali in January 2003. I attended various party conferences of the IFP, ANC, DP and NNP as an observer between the years 1999-2003.

Government publications

BUTHELEZI COMMISSION (1982) *The requirements for stability and development in KwaZulu and Natal*, Volumes 1 & 2, Durban: H and H Publications.

KWAZULU GOVERNMENT (1987) Inkatha and the struggle for liberation in South Africa, *Clarion Call*, Department of the Chief Minister, KwaZulu Government.

KWAZULU-NATAL LEGISLATURE (2003) *Special sitting convened in terms of section 110(2) of the Constitution of the Republic of South* Africa (Act 108 of 1996), 8 January 2003, unpublished document.

KWAZULU-NATAL LEGISLATURE (2004) *Annual report 2003.*

KWAZULU-NATAL LEGISLATURE (2001) *Annual report 2000/1.*

KWAZULU-NATAL LEGISLATURE (2000) *Annual report 1999.*

KWAZULU-NATAL LEGISLATURE (1999) *Annual report 1998.*

KWAZULU-NATAL LEGISLATURE (1998) *Annual report1997.*

KWAZULU-NATAL LEGISLATURE (1997) *Annual report 1996/7.*

KWAZULU-NATAL LEGISLATURE (1996) *Annual report 1995.*

MSUNDUZI MUNICIPALITY (2002) *Integrated development plan, May 2002.*

MTSHALI, L.P.H.M. (2003a) *Address by Dr. L.P.H.M. Mtshali, Premier of KwaZulu-Natal*, Special Session of the Parliament of KwaZulu-Natal, January 8 2003, Pietermaritzburg.

MTSHALI, L.P.H.M. (2003b) *Statement by Dr L.P.H.M. Mtshali, Premier of KwaZulu-Natal*, delivered to the KwaZulu-Natal Legislature, 9 April 2003.

NKANDLA LOCAL MUNICIPALITY (2007) *Integrated development plan review 2006/2007.*

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (2005) *Provincial gazette of KwaZulu-Natal*, 27 October 2005.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (2000a) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Standing Committee* held on Wednesday 8 March 2000 in the Chamber, Parliamentary Complex, Pietermaritzburg.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (2000b) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Standing Committee* held on Wednesday 12 January 2000 in the NCOP Boardroom, Stock Exchange, Pietermaritzburg.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1999a) *Minutes of the Constitutional Affairs Standing Committee*, KwaZulu-Natal Provincial Government, November 1999.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1999b) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Committee* meeting held on Friday 5 November 1999 in the NCOP Boardroom, Stock Exchange Building, Pietermaritzburg.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1998a) *Minutes of the Provincial Standing Committee of the National Council of Provinces Meeting*, held on Tuesday 6 October 1998 at 13.00 in the NCOP Boardroom, Pietermaritzburg.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1998b) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Standing Committee* Meeting held on Friday 4 September 1998 at 10.00 in the NP Caucus Room, Ulundi.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1998c) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Committee* meeting held on Friday 7 August 1998 at 10.00 in the NCOP Boardroom, Pietermaritzburg.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1998d) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Standing Committee* held on Tuesday 20 March 1998 at 10.00 in the ANC Caucus Room, Ulundi.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1998e) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Committee* meeting held on Tuesday 27 January 1998 at 11.00 in the NCOP Boardroom, Pietermaritzburg.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1998f) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Standing Committee* held on Wednesday 12 January 1998 at 11.00 in the NCOP Boardroom, Stock Exchange, Pietermaritzburg.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1997a) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Committee* meeting held on Tuesday 2 September 1997 in the Mnyama Conference Room, Ulundi.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1997b) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Standing Committee* held on 6 August 1997 in the NCOP Boardroom, Pietermaritzburg.

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF KWAZULU-NATAL (1997c) *Minutes of the Provincial National Council of Provinces Standing Committee* held on 29 July 1997 in the NCOP Boardroom, Pietermaritzburg.

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (2002a) *Loss or retention of membership of national and provincial legislatures act* (Act No. 22 of 2002).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (2002b) *Constitution of the Republic of South Africa second amendment act* (Act No.21 of 2002).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (2002c) *The local government municipal structures amendment act* (Act No.20 of 2002).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (2002d) *Constitution of the Republic of South Africa amendmentaAct* (Act No.18 of 2002).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (2001a) *Migration and urbanisation in South Africa,* Pretoria: Statistics South Africa.

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (2001b) *Population census 2001,* Pretoria: Statistics South Africa. Accessible online at www.statssa.gov.za

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1999a) *Public finance management amendment act* (Act No.29 of 1999).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1999b) *Public finance management Act* (Act No.1 of 1999).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1997) *Provincial statistics KwaZulu-Natal*, Press Release issued by the Subdirectorate Communications and Publications of the Central Statistical Service, Pretoria, 19 February 1997.

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1996a) *Constitution of the Republic of South Africa* (Act No.108 of 1996).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1996b) *Population census 1996,* (Statistics South Africa). Accessible online at www.statssa.gov.za

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1995) *Report of the auditor-general on the appropriation and miscellaneous accounts in respect of the Province of KwaZulu-Natal.*

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1993) *Constitution of the Republic of South Africa* (Act No.200 of 1993).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1986a) *Joint Executive Authority for KwaZulu and Natal Act* (Act No.80 of 1986).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1986b) *Provincial Government Act* (Act No.69 of 1986).

REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1985) *Report of the commission of inquiry into the violence which occurred on 29 October 1983 at the University of Zululand* (Volume 1), Chaired by Professor A.J. Middleton, February 1985.
REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1983) *Constitution of the Republic of South Africa* (Act No.110 of 1983).
REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1961) *Urban bantu councils act* (Act No.79 of 1961).
REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1959) *Promotion of bantu self-government act* (Act No.46 of 1959).
REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1951) *Black (bantu) authorities act* (Act No.68 of 1951).
REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA (1950) *Population registration act* (Act No.30 of 1950).
ULUNDI LOCAL MUNICIPALITY (2007) *Integrated development plan 2007/2008 – 2011/2012*.
ZULULAND DISTRICT MUNICIPALITY (2006) *Zululand integrated development plan review 2005-2006.*

Political party documents

AFRICAN NATIONAL CONGRESS (2002a) *KwaZulu-Natal at a crossroads*, Political Programme adopted by the KwaZulu-Natal and Special Provincial General Council, 29 June 2002.
AFRICAN NATIONAL CONGRESS (2002b) *National caucus meeting*, March 2002, unpublished document.
AFRICAN NATIONAL CONGRESS (1991) *For the sake of our lives! Guidelines for the creation of the people's self-defense units*, Document released April 1991.
AFRICAN NATIONAL CONGRESS (1975) *Expulsion of a conspiratorial clique*, Statement by the National Executive Committee of the ANC, Morogoro, 11 December 1975.
AFRICAN NATIONAL CONGRESS (1969) *Strategy and tactics*. Statement adopted by the ANC at the Morogoro Conference, April-May 1969.
AFRICAN NATIONAL CONGRESS – SOUTH AFRICAN COMMUNIST PARTY (1986) *1987. What is to be done?* Unpublished document distributed to Regional Command Centres by the Politico-Military Council, October 1986.
AFRICAN NATIONAL CONGRESS – SOUTH AFRICAN COMMUNIST PARTY (1979) *Report of the Politico-Military Strategy Commission* (Commonly known as the Green Book) *to the ANC National Executive Committee*, August 1979.
BIKO, S. (1970) Who is black? Editorial in *SASO Newsletter*, September 1970.
BIKO, S. (1971) *White racism and black consciousness*, Speech delivered at the Abe Bailey Institute, Cape Town, January 1971.
BUTHELEZI, M.G. *Letter to former ANC MEC Jacob Zuma, Deputy President of South Africa from Dr. M.G. Buthelezi, President of the IFP*, 7 January 2003, unpublished document.
BUTHELEZI, M. G. (2002) *Speech delivered by IFP President Mangosuthu Buthelezi to the National Assembly*, 14 February 2002.
COMMUNIST INTERNATIONAL (1928) *Resolution on the South African question adopted by the executive committee of the Communist International following the Sixth Comintern Congress 1928.*
INKATHA FREEDOM PARTY (2003a) *IFP exit strategy*, Provincial Organising Committee, 5 May 2003, unpublished document.
INKATHA FREEDOM PARTY (2003b) *IFP Strategic Coordinating Unit (Stratcon) memorandum No.2 of 2003'*, 7 March 2003, unpublished document.

INKATHA FREEDOM PARTY (2001) *National Council resolution*, National Council Meeting, 5 May 2001.
INKATHA FREEDOM PARTY (2000a) *National Council resolution*, National Council Meeting, 24 November 2000.
INKATHA FREEDOM PARTY (2000b) *National Council Resolution*, National Council Meeting, 26 October 2000.
INKATHA FREEDOM PARTY (1998a) Open letter from the IFP to Mr. Amichand Rajbansi – leader of the Minority Front, *IFP Press Release*, 19 August 1998.
INKATHA FREEDOM PARTY (1998b) IFP responds to death of ANC MPP, *IFP Press Release,* 16 July 1998.
INKATHA FREEDOM PARTY-AFRICAN NATIONAL CONGRESS '*Minutes of the IFP-ANC 15-a-side meeting*, 6 June 2002, unpublished document.
INKATHA FREEDOM PARTY – DEMOCRATIC ALLIANCE (2003) *Joint statement by the IFP and DA*, Vineyard Hotel, Cape Town, 15 September 2003.
MAKIWANE, A. (1975) *Speech delivered by Ambrose Makiwane on the occasion of the unveiling of the late Robert Resha's Tombstone*, London, England, July 19 1975.
SOUTH AFRICAN COMMUNIST PARTY (1981) *South African communists speak: Documents from the history of the South African Communist Party 1915-1980*, London: Inkululeko Publications.
ZUMA, J. *Letter to Dr. M.G. Buthelezi, President of the IFP from former ANC MEC Jacob Zuma, Deputy-President of South Africa*, 7 January 2003, unpublished document.

Secondary sources

ABRAHAMSON, P. & R. INGLEHART (1995) *Value change in global perspective*. Ann Arbour: University of Michigan Press.
ADAM, H., F. VAN ZYL SLABBERT & K. MOODLEY (1997) *Comrades in business*. Cape Town: Tafelberg.
AJULU, R. (1992) A rejoinder to Morris & Hindson, *Review of African Political Economy*, (55): 67-83.
ALBERTS, D. (2007) PCB opposes parliamentary move, *The Mercury. Focus Network*, 19 September 2007.
ARDE, G. (1999) The hard man of Lindelani, *Sunday Tribune*, 28 February 1999.
ARON, R. (1955) *L'opium des intellectuels*. Paris : Calmann-Levy.
ARON, R. (1960) Social class, political class, ruling class, *European Journal of Sociology*, (1): 260-281.
ARON, R. (1997) The ruling minorities in western societies, excerpts from the Promthean dream: Society in search of itself, britannica perspectives (original 1968), In: E. Etzioni-Halevy, ed., *Classes and elites in democracy and democratisation. A collection of readings*. New York: Garland, pp. 86-91.
AYOOB, Z. (1998) Teachers call for Zulu's resignation, *Natal Witness*, 12 June 1998.
AYOOB, Z. (2000a) MEC played no role in CPS contract, *Natal Witness,* 31 August 2000.
AYOOB, Z. (2000b) Zulu denies he influenced CPS tender, *Natal Witness,* 6 July 2000.
BACHRACH, P. & M.S. BARATZ (1962) Two faces of power, *American Political Science Review* (56):641-651.

BAGAYOGO, S. (1987) L'Etat au Mali. Representation autonomie et mode de fonctionnement. In: E. Terray, ed., *L'Etat contemporain en Afrique*, Paris: L'Harmattan.

BAKER, D. (1997) Collaborative research and the members of parliament project, *Politics* (17)1: 59-66.

BARKAN, J., L. ADEMOLEKUN, Y. ZHOU, M. LALEYE & N. NG'ETHE (2004) Emerging legislatures: Institutions of horizontal accountability. In: Levy, B. & S. Kpundeh, eds, *Building state capacity in Africa. New approaches, emerging lessons*. Washington: WBI Development Series, pp. 211-256.

BARKAN, J. (2009) South Africa. Emerging legislature or rubber stamp? In: J. Barkan, ed., *Legislative power in emerging African democracies.* Boulder Colorado : Lynne Reinner, pp. 205-230.

BARKAN, J., R. MATTES, S. MOZAFFAR & K. SMIDDY (2010) *The African legislatures project: first findings.*

BARNES, S.T. (1986) *Patrons and power. Creating a political community in metropolitan Lagos*, Bloomington and Indianapolis: Indiana University Press.

BASKIN, J. (1991) *Striking back: A history of COSATU.* Johannesburg: Ravan Press.

BAYART, J.F. (1979) *L'Etat au Cameroun*, Paris: Pesses de la Foundation Nationale des Sciences Politiques.

BAYART, J.F. (1989) *L'Etat en Afrique*. Paris: Fayard.

BAYART, J.F. (1993) *The state in Africa. The politics of the belly.* London and New York: Longman.

BECKER, H.S. (1964) Problems in the publication of field studies. In: A.J. Vidich, J. Bensman & M.R. Stein, eds, *Reflections on community Studies*. London, New York and Sydney: John Wiley and Sons, pp. 266-284.

BENNUN, M.E. (1995) Understanding the nightmare: Politics and violence in South Africa. In: *Negotiating justice: A new constitution for South Africa*. Exeter: Exeter University Press, pp. 26-61.

BEUKES, J. (1998) IFP's expulsion of MPP flawed, *Natal Witness*, 8 August 1998.

BLOCH, M. (1924) *Les rois thaumaturges: Etude sur le caracteres surnaturel attribue a la puissance royale particulierement en France et en Angleterre*. Strasbourg: Istra.

BLONDEL, J. (1995) Toward a systematic analysis of government-party relationships, *International Political Science Review*, 16(2):127-143.

BONNER, P. (1982) The Transvaal Native Congress 1917-1921: The radicalization of the black petit-bourgeoisie on the Rand. In: S. Marks & R. Rathbone, eds, *Industrial and social change in South Africa 1870-1930*. London: Longman, pp. 270-313.

BOOYSEN, S. (1992) Changing relations of political power in South Africa's transition: The politics of conquering in conditions of stalemate, *Politikon*, 19(3): 64-80.

BRADFORD, H. (1984) Mass movements and the petit bourgeoisie: The social origins of the ICU leadership, 1924-1929, *Journal of African History*, 25(3):295-310.

BEALL, J., J. GREST, H. HUGHES, & G. MARE (1986) The Natal option: Regional distinctiveness within the national reform process, Paper presented to the *Seventeenth Annual Congress of the Association for Sociology in Southern Africa*, University of Natal, Durban, 1-4 July 1986.

BECK, C. & J. MALLOY (1964) Political elites: A mode of analysis, Paper presented at the *International Political Science Association*, Sixth World Congress, Geneva, 1964.

BRADFORD, H. (1987) *A taste of freedom. The ICU in rural South Africa 1924-1930*. New Haven: Yale University Press.

BREWER, J.D. (1989) Internal black protest. In: J.D. Brewer, ed., *Can South Africa survive? Five minutes to midnight*. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan, pp. 184-205.

BROUGHTON, T. (1995) Dispute over top education appointment, *The Natal Witness*, 11 October 1995.

BURTON, M.G. & J.P. RYU (1997) South Korea's elite settlement and democratic settlement, Excerpts. In: E. Etzioni-Halevy, ed., *Classes and elites in democracy and democratisation*. New York and London: Garland, pp. 194-204.

BUNDY, C. (1989) Around which corner? Revolutionary theory and contemporary South Africa*, Transformation*, 8: 1-23.

BUNTING, B. (1987) *Moses Kotane: South African revolutionary*. London: Inkululeko Publications.

BURTON, M. & J. HIGLEY (1987) Elite settlements, *American Sociological Review*, 52(3): 295-307.

BYSTYDZIENSKI, J.M. (1992) Influence of women's culture on public affairs in Norway. In: J.M. Bystydzienski, ed., *Women transforming politics. Worldwide strategies for empowerment.* Bloomington and Indiana: Indiana University Press, pp. 11-23.

CHABAL, P. & J.P. DALOZ (1999) Africa works. Oxford: James Currey.

CHAZAN, N., R. MORTIMER, J. RAVENHILL & D. ROTHCHILD (1988) *Politics and society in contemporary Africa*. London and Basingstoke: Macmillan.

CHILDS, S. (2001) In their own words. New Labour and the substantive representation of women, *British Journal of Politics and International Relations*, 3(2): 173-190.

CLAUDE, N. (1997) Mayhem in the midlands, *KwaZulu-Natal Briefing*, 9: 1-7.

COLEMAN, J.S. (1990) *Foundations of social theory*. Cambridge Massachusetts: Belknap Press of Harvard University.

CONNELL, D. (1999) Strategies for change: Women and politics in Eritrea and South Africa, *Review of African Political Economy*, 76: 189-206.

COPE, N. (1990) The Zulu petit bourgeoisie and Zulu nationalism in the 1920s: Origins of Inkatha, *Journal of Southern African Studies*, 16(3): 431-449.

COPE, N. (1993) *To bind the nation. Solomon kaDinzulu and Zulu nationalism 1913-1933.* Pietermaritzburg, University of Natal Press.

CRONIN, J. & B. NZIMANDE (1998) ANC Thatcherites want a party of black bosses. In: *Mail and Guardian*, 10 October 1998. In: T. Lodge (2002) *Politics in South Africa. From Mandela to Mbeki*. Cape Town: David Philip.

DAHL, R.A. (1961) *Who governs?* New Haven: Yale University Press.

DECALO, S. (1979) Ideological rhetoric and scientific socialism in Benin and Congo-Brazzaville. In: C.C. Roseberg & T.M. Callaghy, eds, *Socialism in sub-Saharan Africa. A new assessment*. Berkeley: Institute of International Studies, University of California, pp. 231-264.

DIAMOND, L. (1994) Rethinking civil society: Towards democratic consolidation, *Journal of Democracy*, 5(3):4-17.

DOONAN, C. (1997) Inkatha official sues for wrongful dismissal, *Sunday Tribune*, 2 February 1997.

DREW, A. (2000) *Discordant comrades. Identities and loyalties on the South African left*. Hampshire: Ashgate.

DUVERGER, M. (1954) *Political parties. Their organisation and activity in the modern state*. London: Meuthen and Co. (first English language edition).
DYE, T. & H. ZEIGLER (1990) *The irony of democracy. An uncommon introduction to American politics*. California: Brooks/Cole (8th edition).
DYE, T. & H. ZEIGLER (1996) *The irony of democracy. An uncommon introduction to American politics*. Belmont California: Wadsworth (10th edition).
DYE, T. & H. ZEIGLER (1997) The irony of democracy, Excerpts. In: E. Etzioni-Halevy, ed., *Classes and elites in democracy and democratisation. A collection of readings*. New York and London: Garland, pp. 155-159.
EDINGER, L.J. D.D. SEARING (1967) Social background in elite analysis: A methodological inquiry, *American Political Science Review*, 61: 428-445.
EHRENHALT, A. (1992) *The united states of ambition*. New York: Times Books.
ELLIS, S. (1981) The ANC in exile, *African Affairs*, 90: 349-447.
ERWIN, A. (1987) Democracy and KwaZulu, *Transformation*, 5: 107-116.
ESIASSON, P. & S. HOLMBERG (1996) *Representation from above: Members of parliament and representative democracy in Sweden*. Dartmouth: Aldershot.
ETZIONI-HALEVY, E. (1993) *The elite connection. Problems and potential of western democracy*. Cambridge: Polity Press.
EVERATT, D. (1991) Alliance politics of a special type: The roots of the ANC/SACP alliance 1950-1954, *Journal of Southern African Studies*, 18(1): 19-39.
FEIT, E. (1975) *Workers without weapons. The South African Congress of Trade Unions and the organization of the African workers*. Conneticut: Archon Books.
FELGATE, W. (1981) Cooperation between Natal and KwaZulu – An Inkatha view. In: L. Boulle & L. Baxter, eds, *Natal and KwaZulu, constitutional and political options*, Proceedings of the workshop on constitutional issues in KwaZulu and Natal, Durban 27-28 October 1980. Johannesburg and Cape Town: Juta.
FIELD, G.L. & J. HIGLEY (1985) National elites and political stability. In: G. Moore, ed., *Research in politics and society: Studies of the structure of national elite groups*. Greenwich, CT: JAI Press, pp. 1-44 (volume 1).
FIELDING, N.G. & J.L. FIELDING (1986) *Linking data*. London: Sage.
FINCH, J. (1984) It's great to have someone to talk to: The ethics and politics of interviewing women. In: C. Bell & H. Roberts, eds, *Social researching: Politics, problems, practice.* London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, pp. 70-85.
FLERON, F.J.JNR. (1969) *Communist studies and the social sciences*. Chicago: Rand McNally.
FORREST, J.B. (1987) The contemporary African state: A ruling class? *Review of African Political Economy*, 38: 66-71.
FOSTER, J. (1982) The workers struggle – Where does FOSATU stand? *South African Labour Bulletin*, 7(8): 67-86.
FOWLER, L & R.D. MCCLURE (1989) *Who decides to run for congress*. Yale: Yale University Press.
FRANCIS, S. (2009a) The IFP campaign: indlovu ayisindwa kwabaphambili! In: R. Southall & J. Daniel, eds, *Zunami! The 2009 South African election*. Auckland Park: Jacana, pp. 147-161.
FRANCIS, S. (2009b) Gender, numbers and substance: Women parliamentarians and the 'politics of presence' in KwaZulu-Natal, *Transformation*, 70: 119-141.
FRANCIS, S. (2010) Political violence and conflict transformation: The ANC-IFP peace process in KwaZulu-Natal, *Gandhi Marg*, January-March.

FRANE, A & M. TOMSIC (2002) Elite re-configuration and politico-economic perfomance in post-socialist countries, *Europe – Asia Studies*, 52(3): 435-454.
GASTROW, S. (1994) *Who's who in South African politics*. Johannesburg: Ravan Press.
GELLNER, E. (1994) *Conditions of liberty: Civil society and its rivals*. London: Hamish Hamilton.
GLASER, D. (1986) Behind the Indaba: The making of the KwaNatal option, *Transformation*, 2: 4-30.
GOOD, K. (2002) *The liberal model and Africa. Elites against democracy*. Basingstoke and York: Palgrave.
GOODENOUGH, C. (1998) Why Nkabinde walked free, *KwaZulu-Natal Briefing*, 11: 15-17.
GREST, J., H. HUGHES, J. MARE. & J. METELERKAMP (1988) The politics of regionalism: The Natal option. Paper presented at the *Workshop on regionalism and restructuring in Natal*, Department of African Studies, University of Natal, 28-31 January 1988.
GRIMBEEK, Y. (1996) Peacelords promise new deal in KZN, *The Mercury*, 31 May 1996.
GUY, J. (1994) *The destruction of the Zulu kingdom. The civil war in Zululand, 1879-1884*. Pietermaritzburg: University of Natal Press.
GWALA, H. (1992) Negotiations as presented by Joe Slovo, *African Communist*, 4th Quarter: 16-28.
HAGOPIAN, F. (1990) Democracy by undemocratic means? Elites, pacts and regime transition in Brazil, *Comparative Political Studies*, 23(2) 147-170.
HERRNSON, P.S. (1997) Chapter 10 – the United States. In: P. Norris, ed., *Passages to power. Legislative recruitment in advanced democracies.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, pp. 187-208.
HLELA, K. & T. RAPOO (2002) Winner doesn't have to take all, *Synopsis*, 6(3): 1-7.
HERZOG, D. (1975) *Politische karrieren*. Opladen: Westdeutscher Verlag.
HOLLOWAY, W. & T. JEFFERSON (2000) *Doing qualitative research differently. Free association, narrative and the interview method*. London: Sage.
HUGHES, H. (1995) *Politics and society in Inanda: The Qadi under Chief Mqhawe c1840-1906*. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of London.
HUNTINGTON, S. (1991) *The third wave. Democratization in the late twentieth century*. Norman and London: University of Oklahoma Press.
Hyden, G., J. Court & K. Mease (2004) *Making sense of governance. Empirical evidence from sixteen developing countries*. Boulder Colorado and London: Lynne Rienner.
HYDEN, G. (1981) *No shortcuts to progress: African development management in perspective*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
ILIFFE, J. (1983) *The emergence of African capitalism*, Macmillan: London.
INGLEHART, R. (1977) *Silent revolution*. Princeton: University of Princeton Press.
INGLEHART, R. (1991) *Culture shift*. Princeton: University of Princeton Press.
INSTITUTE FOR INDUSTRIAL EDUCATION (1974) *The Durban strikes 1973*. Durban and Johannesburg: I.I.E., in association with Ravan Press.
JEFFERY, A.J. (1992) *Spotlight on disinformation about violence in South Africa.* Braamfontein: South African Institute of Race Relations.
JEFFREY A.J. (1997) *The Natal story: Sixteen years of conflict*. Johannesburg: South African Institute of Race Relations.

JOHNSON, R.W. (1996a) The election, the count and the drama in KwaZulu-Natal. In: R.W. Johnson & L. Schlemmer, eds, *Launching democracy in South Africa. The first open election, April 1994*. London: Yale University Press, pp. 274-300.

JOHNSON, R.W. (1996b) The 1994 election: Outcome and analysis. In: R.W. Johnson & L. Schlemmer, eds, *Launching democracy in South Africa. The first open election, April 1994*. London: Yale University Press, pp. 301-322.

JOHNSON, R.W. (1998) Lindelani: Struggle in an IFP stronghold, *KwaZulu-Natal Briefing*, 12: 2-17.

JOHNSTON, A.M. (1994) South Africa: The election and the transition process – Five contradictions in search of a resolution, *Third World Quarterly*, 15(2): 187-202.

JOHNSTON, A. (1996a) The political world of KwaZulu-Natal. In: R.W. Johnson & L. Schlemmer, eds, *Launching democracy in South Africa. The first open election. April 1994*. London: Yale University Press, pp. 168-188.

JOHNSTON, A.M. (1996b) KwaZulu-Natal's new constitution: No losers … any winners? *KwaZulu-Natal Briefing*, 1: 1-11.

JOHNSTON, A.M. (1996c) The clash that had to come. African nationalism and the "problem" of traditional authority, *KwaZulu-Natal Briefing*, 1: 11-15.

JOHNSTON, A. (1997a) Politics and violence in KwaZulu-Natal. In: W. Gutteridge & J.E. Spence, eds, *Violence in Southern Africa*. London: Frank Cass, pp. 78-107.

JOHNSTON, A.M. (1997b) The local elections in KwaZulu-Natal: 26 June 1996, *African Affairs*, 96: 377-398.

JOHNSTON, A.M. & R.W. JOHNSON (1997) Peace talks and the Felgate factor, *KwaZulu-Natal Briefing*, 9: 17-20.

JONES, N. (1997) Scapegoat fears for his life', *Natal Witness*, 27 November 1997.

JOWITT, K. (1979) Scientific socialist regimes in Africa: Political differentiation, avoidance and unawareness. In: C.C. Roseberg & T.M. Callaghy, eds, *Socialism in sub-saharan Africa. A new assessment*. Berkeley: Institute of International Studies, University of California, pp. 133-173.

KARL, T.L. (1990) Dilemmas of democratization in Latin America, *Comparative Politics*, 23(1): 1-22.

KARL, T.L. & P.C. SCHMITTER (1991) Modes of transition in Latin America, Southern and Eastern Europe, *International Social Science Journal*, 128: 269-284.

KARIS. G.K. & G.M. GERHART (1997) *From protest to challenge. A documentary history of African politics in South Africa, 1882-1990*. Pretoria: Unisa (Volume 5).

KAZEE, T.A. (1994) *Who runs for congress? Ambition, context and candidate emergence*. Washington D.C.: Congressional Quarterly Press.

KERSTIENS, T. (1966) *The new elite in Africa and Asia. A comparative study of Indonesia and Ghana*. New York and London: Praeger.

KHUMALO, S. (1999) Getting the job done, *Daily News*, 9 September 1999.

KINDRA, J. (2003) Cruel setbacks for ANC's Ndebele, *Mail and Guardian*: 19: 2, 10 to 16 January 2003.

KOCKOTT, F. (2004) Ulundi or PMB – it's over to you, *Sunday Tribune*, 11 April 2004.

KOTZE, H. (1989) Cross-cultural research in South Africa: A discussion of some political, ethical and methodological problems, *Politikon*, 16(1): 121-128.

KUPER, L. (1965) *An African bourgeoisie. Race class and politics within South Africa*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press.

LA HAUSSE, P. (1988) *Brewers, beer halls and boycotts: A history of liquor in South Africa*. Johannesburg: Raven Press.

LA HAUSSE DE LALOUVIERE, P. (1994) The forgotten history of UZulukaMalandela: Petros Lamula and the origins of Inkatha, Paper presented to the *Journal of Southern African Studies 20th anniversary conference: Paradigms lost, paradigms regained? Southern African studies in the 1990s*, University of York.

LEVINE, L., ed., (1999) *Faith in turmoil. The seven days war*. Pietermaritzburg: PACSA.

LODGE, T. (1983) *Black politics in South Africa since 1945*. Johannesburg: Ravan Press.

LODGE T. (1983/1984) The African National Congress in South Africa, 1976-1983: Guerilla war and armed propaganda, *Journal of Modern African Studies*, 33(1-2): 153-180.

LODGE, T. (1989) The United Democratic Front: Leadership and ideology. In: J.D. Brewer, ed., *Can South Africa survive? Five minutes to midnight*. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan, pp. 206-230.

LODGE, T. (2002) *Politics in South Africa. From Mandela to Mbeki*, Cape Town: David Philip.

LOMBARD, J.A. (1979) *Alternatives to the consolidation of KwaZulu*. Pretoria: Bureau for Economic Policy Analysis, University of Pretoria.

LOVENDUSKI, J. (2001) Women and politics: Minority representation or critical mass, *Parliamentary Affairs*, 54: 743-758.

MACGAFFEY, W. (1970) *Custom and government in the lower Congo*, Berkeley: University of California Press.

MADLALA, B. (1998) I won't quit politics, says Shabalala, *Daily News*, 24 August 1998.

MADLALA, B. (2002) Inkatha tells Mtshali to call elections, *The Mercury,* 16 December 2002.

MAMDANI, M. (1996) *Citizen and subject. Contemporary Africa and the legacy of late colonialism*. Cape Town: David Philip and London: James Currey.

MANNHEIM, K. (1936) *Ideology and utopia*. London: Routledge.

MANSFIELD, P. (1991) *The Indaba's constitutional proposals revisited*. Durban: Centre for Social and Development Studies, University of Natal and Pretoria: Human Sciences Research Council.

MARE, G. & G. HAMILTON (1987) *An appetite for power: Buthelezi's Inkatha and South African politics.* Johannesburg: Ravan Press.

MARE, G. (1992) *Brothers born of warrior blood: Politics and ethnicity in South Africa*. Johannesburg: Ravan Press.

MARE, G. & G. HAMILTON (1994) The Inkatha freedom party. In: A. Reynolds, ed., *Election 94 South Africa*. Cape Town: David Philip, pp. 101-113.

MARKS, S. (1978) Natal, the Zulu royal family and the ideology of segregation, *Journal of South African Studies*, 4: 172-194.

MARKS, S. (1987) The politics of race, class and nationalism. In: S. Marks & S. Trapido, eds, *The politics of race, class and nationalism in 20th century South Africa*. London: Longman, pp. 1-70.

MATTHEWS, D.R. (1985) Legislative recruitment and legislative careers. In: G. Loewenberg, S.C. Patterson & M.E. Jewell, eds, *Handbook of legislative research*. Cambridge Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, pp. 17-55.

MAYLAM, P., S. MEINTJIES & J. WRight (1988) The political economy of Natal to c.1960: Three historical essays, Paper presented at the *Workshop on regionalism and restructuring in Natal*, Department of African Studies, University of Natal, 28-31 January 1988.

MAYNARD, M. & J. PURVIS (1994) *Researching women's lives from a feminist perspective*. London: Taylor and Francis.

MBANJWA, X. (2006) Lights are on, but no one's at home, *Sunday Tribune*, 14 May 2006.

MCHUNU, H. (1998) KZN may have to pay Shabalala, *Natal Witness*, 13 August 1998.

MELI, F. (1988) *A history of the ANC. South Africa belongs to us*. Harare: Zimbabwe Publishing House.

MICHELS, R. (1915) *Political parties: A sociological study of the oligarchical tendencies of modern democracy.* Translated into English by Eden Paul and Cedar Paul, New York: Free Press.

MICHELS, R. (1962) *Political parties: A sociological study of the oligarchical tendencies of modern democracy*. New York: Free Press and London: Collier-Macmillan.

MICHELS, R. (1971) *Les partis politiques. Essai sur les tendances les oligarchiques des democraties*. Paris: Flammarion.

MILLER, P.M. (1987) Administrative co-operation at the regional and local levels of government: The KwaZulu/Natal experience. In: W.A.J. Coetzee, ed., *Focus on government and administration in the Republic of South Africa*. Proceedings of a Symposium at the Malibu Hotel, Durban, Durban: UDW Press.

MILLS, C.W. (1956) *The power elite*. London: Oxford University Press.

MINAAR, A. (1992) Mayhem in the Midlands: Battle for Bruntville. *Indicator South Africa*, 9(3): 60-64.

MKHONDO, R. (1993) *Reporting South Africa*. London: James Currey.

MORRIS, M. & HINDSON, D. (1992a) South Africa: Political violence and reconstruction, *Review of African Political Economy*, 53: 43-59.

MORRIS, M. & D. HINDSON (1992b) The disintegration of Apartheid: From violence to reconstruction. In: G. Moss & I. Obery, eds, *South African Review 6*. Johannesburg: Ravan Press, pp. 152-170.

MOSCA, G. (1939) *The ruling class*. London and New York: McGraw-Hill.

MSOMI, S. (1998) Get me out of this dirty game – ex-IFP man, *Sunday Times*, 16 August 1998.

MTHETWA, W. (1999) KZN leaders heads roll over education, *The Natal Witness*, 1 February 1999.

MTSHALI, L. (2001) Miller's comments on casinoi amazing, *The Mercury*, 12 March 2001.

MZALA (1988) *Gatsha Buthelezi: Chief with a double agenda*. London: Zed Books, London.

NAIDOO, S. (1999) Zulu is on a learning curve, *The Independent on Saturday*, 23 January 1999.

NATTRASS, N. (1989) The KwaNatal Indaba and the politics of promising too much. In: J.D. Brewer, ed., *Can South Africa survive? Five minutes to midnight*. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan, pp. 165-183.

NGUBANE, P. (1998) IFP pariah says he will fight the party he is devoted to, *The Mercury*, 14 August 1998.

NGUBANE, P. (1999a) No crisis if Cele goes, says Mtshali, *The Mercury*, 9 April 1999.

NGUBANE, P. (1999b) IFP to reinstate Shabalala, *The Mercury*, 22 February 1999.

NGUBANE, P. (1999c) Cele heads KZN list of candidates, *The Mercury*, 16 February 1999.

NORRIS, P. & J. LOVENDUSKI (1997a) *Passages to power. Legislative recruitment in advanced democracies*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

NORRIS, P. & J. LOVENDUSKI (1997b) The United Kingdom. In: P. Norris, ed., *Passages to power. Legislative recruitment in advanced democracies*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, pp. 158-186.

NORRIS, P. & J. LOVENDUSKI (1995) *Political recruitment: Gender, race and class in the British parliament*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

OAKLEY, A. (1981) Interviewing women: A contradiction in terms. In: H. Roberts, ed., *Doing feminist research*. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, pp. 30-61.

OBERSCHALL, A. (1973) *Social conflict and social movements*. New Jersey: Prentice Hall, Englewood Cliffs.

O'DONNELL, G. & P.C. SCHMITTER (1986) *Transitions from authoritarian rule: Tentative conclusions about uncertain democracies.* Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press.

PAINEBANCO, A. (1988) *Political parties: Organisation and power*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

PARETO, V. (1935) *The mind and society*. New York: Harcourt, Brace & Company.

PARETO, V. (1976) *Sociological writings*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell.

PARETO, V. (1997) The governing elite in present day democracy, Excerpts from the mind and society (original 1935). In: E. Etzioni-Halevy, ed., *Classes and elites in democracy and democratisation. A collection of readings*. New York and London: Garland, pp. 47-52.

PHILLIPS, A (1991) *Engendering democracy*. Cambridge: Polity Press.

PIPER, L.E. (1999) *The politics of Zuluness in the transition to a democratic South Africa*. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Faculty of Social and Political Sciences, University of Cambridge.

PIPER, L.E. (2002) Nationalism without a nation: The rise and fall of Zulu nationalism in South Africa's transition to democracy, 1975-1999', *Nations and Nationalism*, 8(1): 73-94.

PLAUT, M. (1986) The political significance of COSATU. *Transformation*, 2: 62-72.

PLAUT, M. (1987) A rejoinder to von Holdt. *Transformation*, 5: 104-106.

POLAND, F. (1990) Breaking the rules. Assessing the assessment of a girls' project. In: L. Stanley, ed., *Feminist praxis. Research theory and epistemology in feminist sociology*. London and New York: Routledge, pp. 20-60.

PORTER, J. (1965) *The vertical mosaic.* Toronto: University of Toronto Press.

PRICE, J. (1996) Snakes in the swamp. Ethical issues in qualitative research. In: R. Josselson, ed., *Ethics and process in the narrative study of lives*. London: Sage, pp. 207-215.

PRICE R. (1991) *The apartheid state in crisis: Political transformation in South Africa 1975-1990*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.

PRZEWORSKI, A. (1977) Proletariat into a class: The process of class formation from Karl Kautsky's the class struggle to recent controversies, *Politics and Society*, 7: 343-401.

PRZEWORSKI, A. (1986) Some problems in the study of transition to democracy. In: G. O'Donnell, P.C. Schmitter & L. Whitehead, eds, *Transitions from authoritarian rule: Comparative perspectives*, Baltimore: John Hopkins University Press, pp.47-63.

PRZEWORSKI, A. (1991) *Democracy and the market. Political and economic reforms in Eastern Europe and Latin America*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

PRZEWORSKI, A. (1995) *Sustainable democracy*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

PUTNAM, R.D. (1976) *The comparative study of political elites.* New Jersey: Prentice Hall.

PUTNAM, R.D. (1993) *Making democracy work. Civic traditions in modern Italy*. New Jersey: Princeton University Press.

PUTNAM, R.D. (1995) Bowling alone: America's declining social capital, *Journal of Democracy*, 6(1): 65-78.

RANGER, T. (1988) Peasant consciousness: Culture and conflict in Zimbabwe. In: T. Shanin, ed., *Peasants and peasant societies*. Baltimore: Penguin, pp. 312-315.

RANTETE, J.M. (1998) *The African National Congress and the negotiated settlement in South Africa*. Pretoria: van Schaik.

REIS, E.P. & Z.B. CHEIBUB (1995) Politicos das elites e consolidacao democratica, *Dados – Revista. De Ciencias Sociais,* 38(1): 31-56.

REIS, E.P. & Z.B. CHIEBUB (1997) Elites' political values and democratic consolidation in Brazil. Excerpts in E. Etzioni-Halevy, ed., *Classes and elites in democracy and democratisation. A collection of readings*. New York and London: Garland, pp. 222-229.

RENO, W. (1998) *Warlord politics and African states*. Boulder, Colorado: Lynne Reinner.

RITCHKEN, E. (1981) Trade unions and community organizations. Towards a working alliance? *Transformation*, 10: 40-53.

SARTORI, G. (1997) The theory of democracy revisited, Excerpts (original 1985). In: E. Etzioni-Halevy, ed., *Classes and elites in democracy and democratisation. A collection of readings*. New York and London: Garland, pp. 168-173.

SAUL, J. (1991) South Africa: Between barbarism and structural reform, *New Left Review*, 188: 3-44.

SCHLETH, U. (1971) Once again: Does it pay to study social background in elite analysis? In: R. Wildenmann, ed., *Sozialwissenschafliches Fahrbuch fur Politik,* Munchen: Olzog, pp. 46-72.

SCHON, D. (1983) *The reflective practitioner. How professionals think in action*. New York: Basic Books.

SCHNATTSCHNEIDER, E.E. (1960) *The semi-sovereign people*. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston.

SCHUMPETER, J.A. (1954) *Capitalism, socialism and democracy*. London: Routledge.

SCHUMPETER, J.A. (1962) *Capitalism, socialism and democracy*. New York: Harper (original 1942).

SCHUMPETER, J.A. (1997) Capitalism, socialism, and democracy. Excerpts (original 1954). In: E. Etzioni-Halevy, ed., *Classes and elites in democracy and democratisation. A collection of readings*. New York and London: Garland, pp. 78-85.

SEEKINGS, J. (2000) *The UDF. A history of the United Democratic Front in South Africa 1983-1991*. Cape Town: David Philip.

SEELIGER, L. (1998) MF member loses seat to Raj's son, *The Mercury*, 14 January 1998.

SERENO, R. (1962) *The Rulers*. New York: Praeger.

SLOVO, J. (1992) Negotiations. What room for compromise? *The African Communist*, 3rd Quarter, pp. 36-40.

SOUTH AFRICA: USUTHU!, *Time*, 19 February 1973.

STANLEY, L. & S. WISE (1983) *Breaking out: Feminist consciousness and feminist research*. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul.

STANLEY, L. & S. WISE (1990) Method, methodology and epistemology in feminist research. In: L. Stanley, ed., *Feminist research praxis. Research, theory and epistemology in feminist sociology*. London and New York: Routledge, pp. 20-60.

SZELENYI, I. & S. SZELENYI (1995) The making of the Hungarian postcommunist elite: Circulation in politics, reproduction in the economy, *Theory and Society*, 24(5): 615-638.

SZELENYI, I. & S. SZELENYI (1995) Circulation or reproduction of elites during a postcommunist transformation of Eastern Europe: Introduction, *Theory and Society*, 24(5): 615-638.

TAGGART, P. (2004) Populism and representative politics in contemporary Europe, *Journal of Political Ideologies*, 9(3): 269-288.

TANGRI, R. (1985) *Politics in sub-saharan Africa*. London: James Curry.

THOENES, P. (1970) The elite in the welfare state. In: M.E. Olsen, ed., *Power in modern societies*. New York: Macmillan, pp. 172-180.

THOMAS, S. (1994) *How women legislate*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

TORDOFF, W. (1993) *Government and politics in Africa*. London and Basingstoke: Macmillan, 2nd edition.

TORDOFF, W. (1997) *Government and politics in Africa*. Bloomington and Indiannapolis: Indiana University Press, 3rd edition.

VAPI, X. (1999) Shabalala re-instated to boost IFP at polls, *Independent on Saturday*, 20 February 1999.

VENTER, A. (1989) The central government: Legislative, executive, judicial and administrative institutions. In. A. Venter, ed., *South African government and politics*. Johannesburg: Southern Book Publishers, pp. 45-98.

VON HOLDT, K. (1987) The political significance of COSATU: A response to Plaut, *Transformation*, 5: 94-103.

WAETJEN, T. (2006) *Workers and warriors. Masculinity and the struggle for nation in South Africa.* Cape Town: HSRC Press.

WALSHE, P. (1987) *The rise of African nationalism in South Africa*. Craighall: A.D. Donker.

WASILEWSKI, E. (1995) Poland: Winding road from the communist to the post-Solidarity elite, *Theory and Society*, 24(5): 669-696.

WEBER, M. (1958a) Politik als beruf, *Gesammelte politische schriften*. Mohr: Tubingen, pp. 396-450 (original 1921).

WEBER, M. (1958b) Politics as a vocation, in: *From Max Weber. Essays in sociology*. New York: Oxford University Press and London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, pp. 77-128.

WEBER, M. (1968) *Economy and society. An outline of interpretative sociology*. New York: Bedminster Press, Volume III.

WEBER, M. (1976) *Wirtschaft und gesellschaft*. Mohr: Tubingen.

WELSH, W.A. (1979) *Leaders and elites*. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston.

WESOLOWSKI, W. (1992) The role of political elites in the transition from communism to democracy: The case of Poland, *SISYPHUS*, 2: 77-100.

WESSELS, B. (1985) *Whalerschaft und Führungsschicht: Probleme politischer Representation*. Berlin: Universitatsdruck der Freien Universitat Berlin.
WESSELS, B. (1992) Zum Begriff der "politischen Klasse". In: *Gewerkscheftliche Monatshefte,* 43: 541-9.
WESSELS, B. (1997) Germany. In: P. Norris, ed., *Passages to power. Legislative recruitment in advanced democracies*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, pp. 76-97.
WICKENS, P. (1978) *The industrial and commercial workers union of Africa*. Cape Town: Oxford University Press.
WILLIAMS, G. (2002) Reforming Africa: Continuities and changes, Africa South of the Sahara, 31st edition, pp. 3-10.
WILLIAMS, J.M. (2001) Blurring the boundaries of "tradition". The transformation and legitimacy of the chieftaincy in South Africa, Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Wisconsin, Madison.
WOOLCOCK, M. (1998) Social capital and economic development: Toward a theoretical synthesis and policy framework, *Theory and Society*, 27(2): 151-208.
WORSNIP, M. (1998) The stinger and the stung, *The Natal Witness*, 22 April 1998.
Wyley, C. & C. Merrett (1991) Universities and the new censorship: Mzala's Gatsha Buthelezi: Chief with a double agenda, *Critical Arts*, 5(4): 98-115.
ZANKINA, E. (2006) Theorizing elite transformation in East European transitions, Paper presented at the Southern Political Science Association 2006.
ZASLOVE, A. (2008) Here to stay? Populism as a new party type, *European Review*, 16: 319-336.

Newspapers

City Press, 21 February 1993
Daily News, ANC man healing old wounds, 9 October 1991.
Independent on Saturday, The man behind the political mask, 27 February 1999.
Independent on Saturday, Are you angry with the ANC?, 3 July 1999.
Mail and Guardian, Cruel setbacks for ANC's Ndebele, 10-16 January 2003.
Mail and Guardian, Ashadevi tries to steal Tiger's thunder, 19 October 1998.
Natal Mercury, 10 September 1991.
Natal Mercury, Profile of Amichand Rajbansi, 26 April 1994.
Natal Mercury, Frankly, there's hardly room to crack a whip, 16 January 2003.
Natal Witness, 1 February 1989.
Natal Witness, IFP slams ANC's criticism of Zulu as "propagandist rhetoric", 15 July 1998.
Natal Witness, Rajbansi: IFP man split up my family, 24 March 1999.
Sunday Times, Buthelezi offers to quit post, 8 December 2002.
Sunday Times, KwaZulu Natal, Signature forged, 16 May 1999.
The Mercury, 20 May 1997.
The Mercury, 15 August 1998.
The Mercury, Inkatha tells Mtshali to call elections, 16 December 2002.
The Mercury, Power Balance Tips in ANC's favour, 3 April 2003.
Weekend Argus, July 20, 1991.

Index

Acts of Parliament
  Provincial Tertiary Education Act · 270
  Public Finance Amendment Act · 275
  Public Finance Management Act · 275
Adams College · 116, 142
African Christian Democratic Party (ACDP) · 23, 71, 76, 89, 112, 113, 127, 147, 149, 151, 162, 185, 198, 204, 211, 267
African National Congress (ANC) · 1, 5-7, 19-21, 23, 27, 30, 35, 36, 38-42, 44-48, 51, 53-55, 57-61, 63-72, 76-83, 88, 89, 91, 93-104, 106-112, 114-117, 119-122, 127, 128, 130-133, 139-143, 145-147, 149, 151-165, 167-174, 176, 178-186, 188, 190-201, 203-223, 225-228, 230-247, 252, 255-258, 261, 263, 266, 268, 270-273, 275, 277-279, 282, 285, 286, 288-293
  Kabwe Conference · 45, 54
  Mandela Plan (M-Plan) · 53, 67
  Operation Vula · 65, 69, 204
  Political-Military Committee · 159
  Prepare the Anvil for the Coming Hammer · 70
  Report of the Politico-Military Strategy Commission (Green Book) · 46, 67
  Self-Defence Units (SDUs) · 20, 31, 65, 69, 100, 156, 160, 204
  Women's League · 89, 91, 108, 128, 154
  Youth League · 44, 146, 155, 164, 172, 190
African nationalist movement · 44, 45, 101, 220, 221
Africanism · 37, 39, 41-43, 45, 71, 215, 216, 220, 223, 227, 241, 291
Africanist · 6, 23, 36, 37, 42, 43, 44, 48, 66, 71, 216, 285, 292
Amafa Consortium · 280
amakholwa · 36, 39, 113, 116
amakhosi · 35, 39, 42, 113, 124, 128, 183, 188, 215, 225
Amanzimtoti Zulu Training School · 116
Ambler-Moore, Margaret · 104, 113, 132
Anglo-Zulu War · 85, 100
anonymity · 29, 30
Aulsebrook, John · 86
Azanian People's Organisation (AZAPO) · 43

Baloyi, Olaf · 152, 193, 234
Bartlett, George · 104, 149
Bawa, Ibrahim · 96, 146
Bhengu, Geoffrey · 193
Bhengu, John · 146, 148, 189
Biko, Steve · 43, 167, 168, 222
bills · 265, 268-270
  Adjustments Appropriation Bill · 270
  Constitution of the Republic of South Africa Second Amendment Bill · 266
  Higher Education Bill · 270
  Joint Authority Bill · 50
  Pharmacy Amendment Bill · 266
  Rental Housing Bill · 266
  Road Transport Appeal Matters Amendment Bill · 270
  Section 75 · 270
  Section 76 · 264, 268, 270, 271
  Tobacco Products Amendment Bill · 266, 271
  Tourism Amendment Bill · 269
  World Heritage Convention Bill · 266
Biyela, Nkanyiso · 189
Black Consciousness · 42, 43-46, 142, 222
Black People's Convention (BPC) · 142
Blose, Happy · 128, 154
Botha, Stoffel · 51, 150
branch nominations · 232
Burrows, Roger · 104, 108, 149, 167, 212, 213

Buthelezi Commission · 50
Buthelezi, Mangosuthu · 42, 78, 104, 112, 245, 276
Buthelezi, Mildred · 102, 199

Cape High Court · 240
Capital Coalition Campaign · 282
caucus · 23, 26, 76, 96, 179, 180, 182, 193, 195, 204, 233, 255, 264, 281, 290, 294
Cele, Bheki · 103, 112, 116, 128, 141, 157, 163, 195, 205, 206, 232
Cele, Shakes · 160, 192
Champion, A.W.G. · 36, 37
charterist · 47, 54
Chesterville · 50, 53
chieftaincy · 35, 42, 101, 109, 110, 121, 210, 223, 227
cholera outbreak · 261
Christian Institute (CI) · 112
Clermont · 101, 173
Coady Institute · 117
coalitions · 58, 246, 266
  Inkatha Freedom Party – African National Congress Coalition · 67, 218, 229, 231, 232, 246, 247
  Inkatha Freedom Party – Democractic Alliance Coalition for Change · 236, 243, 246
  Inkatha Freedom Party – Democratic Alliance Coalition for Change · 8, 236, 244, 247
Coleman, Eric · 147
Collins, Russell · 282
Colonialism of a Special Type (CST) · 44, 45
Combrinck, Henry · 79, 85, 86, 105
communism · 18, 41, 45, 112, 170, 188, 207, 216
communist · 44, 46, 68, 168, 170, 171, 188, 213, 250
Communist Party of South Africa (CPSA) · 38-40, 44
Conference for a Democratic South Africa (CODESA) · 33, 189
confidentiality · 29, 30
Congress of South African Students (COSAS) · 142, 173
Congress of South African Trade Unions (COSATU) · 42, 47, 59, 64, 65, 140, 155, 158, 170, 190
conservatism · 35, 41, 44, 56, 96, 172, 208
consociational model · 50
Constitutional Assembly · 61
Constitutional Court · 193, 194, 200, 240
Cooperative Development Funding · 52
Cornell, Patrick · 79, 84, 126, 149, 187
cosmopolitan modernisers · 226, 227, 230, 291
Creation of a state outside a state · 53
Cronje, Ina · 102, 108, 122, 143, 147, 241, 278
cultural communitarians · 222

De Klerk, F.W. · 140, 172
democracy · 2, 4, 9, 10, 14, 15, 17, 18, 24, 47, 60, 79, 136, 138, 179, 188, 194, 195, 197, 199, 200, 202, 221, 226, 235, 243, 244, 246, 249, 272, 288, 290, 292, 294, 295
Democratic Alliance (DA) · 5, 8, 76, 167, 178, 185, 188, 193, 196, 198, 219, 236, 239-247, 256, 277-279, 283, 286
democratic elite theory · 16, 203
Democratic Party (DP) · 23, 49, 76-78, 82, 93, 99, 104, 107, 112-114, 120, 121, 126, 129, 132, 148-151, 162, 164-168, 170, 173, 178, 185, 198, 211-214, 219, 220, 228, 229, 236, 238, 239, 241-243, 257, 258, 261, 266, 292
democratisation · 58, 60, 202, 226, 263
departments · 20, 226, 253, 257, 268, 271, 274, 275
  Department of Health · 266
  Department of Transport · 258
Devi, Asha · 77
Diakonia · 57, 112
Dingila, Thanda · 130, 146, 189, 205
discipline · 13, 20, 112, 177-180, 182, 184, 253, 290, 294
district municipality · 92, 99
  Amajuba · 98-102, 107
  eThekwini · 81, 98-105, 107, 132
  Ilembe · 98
  Sisonke · 98-101, 104, 105, 107

Ugu · 98-101, 104, 105, 107, 108
Umgungundlovu · 98, 132
Umkhanyakude · 98, 100-102, 104, 107
Umzinyathi · 98, 100, 102, 104, 107, 130
Uthukela · 98, 100
Uthungulu · 98-100, 102, 104, 105, 107, 163, 282
Zululand · 37, 39, 40, 49, 92, 98-101, 104, 105, 107, 142, 228, 281
Dlamini, Felix · 97, 199, 233
documentary sources · 3, 19, 24, 25, 33
Downs, Jo-Ann · 127, 147
Dube, John · 35, 99, 159, 222
Durban Chamber of Business · 282
Durban Chamber of Commerce · 165
Durban strikes · 49
Durham, David · 187

Edendale · 208
education · 6, 12, 35, 52, 75, 88, 98, 109, 112, 114-117, 119, 121, 122, 131-133, 141, 162, 177, 188, 190, 210, 244, 263, 274, 286, 293
Edwards, Brian · 83, 104, 126, 150, 154
elite circulation · 14, 15, 18, 40, 48, 82, 93, 122, 175-177, 186, 189, 191, 192, 195-197, 200, 209, 226, 230, 289-291
Ellis, Mike · 212, 213
ethno-linguistically bounded communitarians · 226, 291
European Union funding · 253
Executive Council · 4, 238, 257, 276, 279

Fakude, Alex · 149
Federal Alliance · 76, 242
Federation of South African Trade Unions (FOSATU) · 48, 159
Felgate, Sue · 107
Felgate, Walter · 86, 94, 107, 112, 187
floor crossing · 7, 78, 198, 219, 241-243, 246, 278, 289, 290
Ford, Olive · 84
Freedom Charter · 47, 146, 171

Gabela, Lucky · 94
Galea, Connie · 104
Garveyism · 38, 39
Gasa, Faith · 88, 89, 94, 117, 142, 154, 189, 213
Gcabashe, Lungi · 101, 158
Gcabashe,Sipho · 64, 65, 94, 155, 158
gender · 6, 75, 87, 89-96, 105, 132, 154, 286
Gender Commission · 95
Gingindlovu · 205
Goldstone, Judge Richard · 63, 70
Golela incident · 69
Growth Employment and Redistribution Strategy (GEAR) · 171
Gumede, Inkosi Simon · 42, 146, 148, 154, 193
Gumede, Josiah · 39
Gwala, Blessed · 102, 107, 120, 142, 146, 205, 209
Gwala, Harry · 46, 59, 65, 97, 108, 130, 145, 147, 155, 157, 158, 160, 190-192, 200, 204, 206

Hamilton, Alexander · 86, 105, 147
Haripersaad, Romlall · 189
Haygarth, Gordon · 104, 147, 150
Heunis, Chris · 150
HIV-AIDS · 242
House of Delegates · 78, 150
House of Representatives · 78

Ilanga Lase Natal (Ilanga) · 37, 159
Inanda · 35, 50, 99, 106, 116, 186, 209
Inanda Seminary · 116
Independent African Movement (IAM) · 185, 198
individualists · 225, 226, 291
Industrial and Commercial Worker's Union (ICU) · 36-38, 40, 44
Inkatha Development Office · 52
Inkatha Freedom Party (IFP) · 1, 5-7, 19-21, 23, 27, 30, 42, 43, 48, 49, 51-55, 57-59, 61-72, 76-79, 83-89, 91, 93-99, 101-121, 123, 126-133, 139-143, 145-173, 176, 179, 181-200, 203-228, 231-247, 252, 253, 255-257, 259-261, 263, 266-268, 270-283, 285-287, 289-292

National Coordinating Committee · 54, 189
National Council · 5, 22, 68, 83, 84, 109, 184, 186, 188, 198, 215, 224, 232, 236, 237, 239, 246, 264
Self-Protection Units · 20, 31, 70, 156
Women's Brigade · 89, 154
Youth Brigade · 78, 108
Inkatha Institute · 143, 159, 278
Inkatha Yenkululeko Yesizwe · 35
Inkathagate · 59
institution · 6, 33, 35, 42, 52, 71, 116, 120, 121, 129, 145, 221, 223, 224, 227, 285, 295
institutional capacity · 2, 8, 9, 18, 152, 249-251, 259, 261, 265, 268, 274, 278, 281, 293-296
institutionalization · 18, 52, 60, 209, 210, 231, 291
Intergovernmental Relations Committee of Ministers & Members of Provincial Councils (MINMEC) · 5, 254, 273, 277
interviews · 19, 25-29, 33, 57, 75, 85, 87, 88, 106, 119, 124, 137, 179, 185, 198, 216, 217, 221, 228, 229, 240, 252, 256, 257, 272, 283
Isolomuzi · 53
Ixopo · 106, 208
Izingwevu · 66

Jeebodh, Tim · 78, 94, 193, 240, 241
Jeffrey, John · 64, 65, 122, 155, 158, 199
Jiyane, Ziba · 110, 117, 120, 142, 146, 154, 189
Johnson, Lydia · 101
Joint Executive Authority (JEA) · 50, 150
Joint Rent Action Committee (JORAC) · 112, 141
Joint Services Board (JSB) · 51, 150
Joint Tagging Mechanism (JTM) · 270
Joint Working Committee · 64, 155, 158

Kadalie, Clements · 37
kaNkosi-Shandu, Eileen · 88, 89, 94, 116, 117, 189
Keys, Radley · 104, 113, 283
Khawulu, Inkosi Calalabakubo · 105, 108, 148
Khubeka, Mbuso · 94, 102
Khubisa, Nhlanhla · 97, 118, 142, 192
King Solomon ka Dinuzulu · 34
Konigkramer, Arthur · 97, 159
Konrad Adenauer Stiftung · 52
Krog, Johannes · 104, 126
KwaMashu · 28, 47, 50, 53, 101, 105, 106, 140, 143, 158, 165, 173, 209
KwaMashu Resident's Association (KwaMara) · 53
KwaZulu Homeland · 142, 151
KwaZulu Legislative Assembly (KLA) · 23, 49-53, 61, 67, 72, 76, 78, 79, 84, 108, 113, 144, 148-152, 165, 186, 189, 194, 252, 264, 279

Lamontville · 50, 53, 103, 112, 141, 146
Lamula, Reverend Petros · 36
LEARN · 165
Lee, Hugh · 187
Lembede, Anton · 44, 222
Liberal Study Group · 167
Lindelani · 106, 209
longue duree · 18
Luthuli, Albertina · 108
Luthuli, Chief Albert · 35, 36, 54
Luyt, Louis · 242

Mabuyakhulu, Mike · 102, 158, 216, 240
Mackenzie, Maurice · 86, 94, 141, 143, 147, 193, 194, 240, 241, 278
Madadeni Teacher Training College · 116
Madondo, Mjabulise · 94, 102, 122, 130, 158
Magubane, Emmanuel · 94
Magwaza-Msibi, Zanele · 92
Makhaye, Dumisani · 97, 101-103, 119, 128, 155, 159, 160, 195
Makiwane 8 · 46
Malakoana, Mandla · 97, 105, 142, 147
Malema, Julius · 164
Mandela, Nelson · 44, 120, 130
Marxist Workers Tendency · 190
Mass Democratic Movement · 67, 159
Matthee, Cliff · 113, 141

Matthews, Joe · 44
Mayibuye · 159
Mbatha, Elias · 193
Mbeki, Thabo · 157
Mchunu, Abbie · 154, 189
Mchunu, Senzo · 94, 102, 122, 155
Mchunu, V.J. · 78
Mchunu, Willies · 67, 155, 158
Mdlalose, Frank · 107, 108, 116, 146, 148, 150, 154, 199
Mdlalose, Gideon · 107, 108, 148
Mdletshe, Inkosi Bonginkosi · 189
Meer, Ismail · 96, 97, 120, 122, 145, 157, 158, 167
Mehlwesizwe Education Trust · 88
Members of the Provincial Parliament (MPPs) · 5, 24, 26, 31, 49, 75-133, 139, 140, 141, 142-173, 177-182, 185-190, 192-194, 196-200, 204, 205, 208, 209, 212-214, 216, 218, 219, 221, 222, 224-227, 229-231, 233, 234, 240-244, 246, 247, 250, 252-272, 279, 281, 283, 284, 286, 287, 289, 290, 293, 294
Metal and Allied Workers Union (MAWU) · 159
methodological problems · 18, 19
Mfayela, Senzo · 108, 116, 154
Mhlungu, Senezele · 146, 275
Midlands Club · 65
migrant workers · 37, 48
Miller, Peter · 51, 86, 107, 142, 149, 274, 275-278
Millin, Theresa · 185, 194, 195, 197, 198
Ministry of Finance · 274, 275
Ministry of Health · 238
Minority Front (MF) · 23, 77, 89, 107, 108, 150, 151, 162, 185, 198, 211, 213, 240, 266
Mkhize, Nomthandazo · 130, 154
Mkhize, Sipho · 78, 105, 108
Mkhize, Zweli · 102, 158, 163, 212, 238
Mkhwanazi, Joe · 112, 116, 126, 142, 146, 155
Mlaba Camp · 70, 156
Mlaba, Inkosi Zibuse · 130, 155
mobilisation of bias · 56, 62
Mohlomi, Thami · 64, 158
Mokaba, Peter · 171
Morar, Raj · 104
Morogoro Conference · 33, 44, 45
Mothopeng, Zeth · 167
Msinga Peace and Development Committee · 130, 158
Mtalane, Lissah · 105, 148
Mtetwa, Celani · 107, 113, 146, 148, 245
Mthembu, Bheki · 94, 102, 192, 205, 209
Mthiyane, Nzameni · 105
Mtshali, Lionel · 107, 144, 146, 148, 154, 189, 213, 237, 243, 244, 277
Multiparty Negotiating Forum · 61
Municipal Demarcation Board · 81
Mvelase, Vitus · 146, 158, 189
Mxenge, Griffiths · 167
Mzala · 19, 21
Mzimela, Robert · 188
Mzobe, Mziwamandla · 189, 234

Nahara, Fatima · 88, 128, 145, 195
Nair, Billy · 54, 66, 69
Natal African Teachers Union · 88
Natal Indian Congress (NIC) · 54, 66, 146
Natal Midlands · 46, 55, 59, 64, 65, 67, 69, 128, 130, 154-156, 160, 183, 191
Natal Native Congress (NNC) · 36, 39, 40
Natal Provincial Administration (NPA) · 23, 84, 264, 276, 278
Natal Provincial Council (NPC) · 50, 77, 104, 141, 149, 150, 276
National Assembly (NA) · 179, 208, 240, 242, 264, 268, 271
National Council of Provinces (NCOP) · 5, 22, 198, 224, 264, 265, 267-271
  funding · 268
National Council of Provinces Standing Committee (NCOPSC) · 264-269, 271-274
National Hostel Residents Association · 208
National Party (NP) · 23, 49, 51, 57-59, 61, 62, 63, 77, 140, 143, 154, 211, 217, 276, 278
National Peace Accord · 61, 63, 218
National Peace Committee · 63
National Peacekeeping Force · 70

National Union of Metalworkers of South Africa (NUMSA) · 159
National Union of South African Students (NUSAS) · 142
National Women in Agri-Business Co-operation · 89
Native Republic Thesis (NRT) · 38, 39, 44
Ndabandaba, Gabriel · 194, 246
Ndebele, Sibusiso · 97, 102, 116, 117, 127, 142, 146, 157, 159, 160, 163, 195, 237-239
Ndlovu, Curnick · 54, 66
Ndlovu, Velaphi · 148, 193
negotiating mandates · 266
Nel, Wessel · 108, 149, 213
New National Party (NNP) · 23, 76-78, 82, 93, 99, 104, 107, 108, 112-114, 120, 121, 126, 129, 132, 139-141, 145, 147, 149-151, 154, 162, 165, 172, 178, 185, 198, 211, 212, 219, 229, 239, 240, 242, 259, 260, 278, 286
New Republican Party (NRP) · 49, 278
Ngcobo, J.M.A. · 193
Ngcobo, Lauretta · 106, 143, 146, 189, 267
Ngcobo, Wilson · 79, 104, 113, 132, 148
Ngcuka, Bulelani · 204
Ngema, Mzikayise · 143, 146, 193
Ngidi, Nhlanhla · 101, 103, 116, 122, 142, 195, 199, 233
Ngidi, Sibusiso · 193
Ngubane, Ben · 107, 116, 142, 148, 154, 199
Ngubane, Inkosi Nyanga · 105, 107, 148, 206
Nkabinde, Sifiso · 156, 160, 182, 190, 191, 200, 204, 205, 207, 208
Nkandla · 100, 104, 163, 191, 282
no-go areas · 209
Nongoma · 28, 100, 105, 107
Northern Natal · 59, 64, 65, 67, 69, 100, 155, 159, 191
Ntombela, David · 146, 183
Ntuzuma · 106, 144, 165
Nxumalo, Sam · 94, 156, 193, 240, 241

pacted transition · 16, 60, 75
Pan-Africanist Congress (PAC) · 23, 42-45, 64, 67, 71, 106, 112, 116, 120, 126, 142, 143, 145, 153, 155, 162, 164, 166-169, 173, 185, 198, 211, 222
  Treason Trials · 157
Panday, Kamal · 105
Parliamentary Portfolio, Select and Standing Committees
  Household Committee · 259
  Portfolio Committee on Health · 228, 261, 266, 271
  Portfolio Committee on Housing · 184, 208, 266
  Portfolio Committee on Safety and Security · 204, 205, 209
  Provincial Peace Committee · 209
  Richmond Sub-Committee · 204
  Select Committee on Land and Environmental Affairs · 269
  Standing Committee on Constitutional Affairs · 97, 229
  Standing Committee on Private Members Bills, Petitions and Pensions · 211
parliamentary training · 293
party competition · 71, 177, 265, 272, 274, 294
party-list system · 176, 178, 239
Phosa, Matthews · 183
Pietermaritzburg · 26, 27, 28, 36, 54, 63, 79, 84, 85, 99, 104, 105, 108, 150, 157, 207, 239, 242, 252, 253, 279-283, 294
Pietermaritzburg Chamber of Business · 283
Pietermaritzburg Chamber of Commerce · 282
political background · 135, 137, 147, 174, 216, 276
political class · 14, 136, 147, 172, 173, 197, 288
political culture · 7, 8, 101, 111, 121, 166, 176, 179, 181, 182, 184, 186-189, 191-196, 200, 214, 226, 230, 252, 286, 289-292, 295
political etiquette · 8, 16, 166, 167, 182, 188-191, 193, 194, 201, 211-214, 235, 247, 257, 276, 277, 289, 290, 292, 296

political ideas · 6, 32, 33, 35, 37-44, 46-48, 51, 57, 58, 61, 146, 216, 220, 221, 226, 230, 235, 285, 286
political spaces · 33, 40, 48, 57, 70, 72, 133, 286
political violence · 19, 20, 21, 34, 55, 57, 96, 140, 160, 204, 205, 207, 218, 220
populism · 41, 44, 47, 136, 208
populist · 36-38, 42, 47, 53, 57, 65, 71, 121, 164, 183, 207, 208
Powell, Philip · 108, 120, 142, 143, 183, 189, 267
pragmatic political pluralists · 225, 247, 291
profession · 13, 113, 125, 128
Progressive Federal Party (PFP) · 49, 108, 276, 278
Province of KwaZulu-Natal · 1
provincial capital · 84, 85, 99, 242, 263, 264, 274, 277, 279, 282, 283, 294
Provincial Commissioner of Police · 205
provincial finances · 274, 275
Provincial Government of KwaZulu-Natal · 11, 16, 24, 266-268, 274, 280
Provincial Legislature of KwaZulu-Natal · 4, 32, 76, 137, 177-179, 184, 216, 251, 255, 276, 285, 286
provincialised · 40, 67, 68, 72, 195, 245
Public Service Commission · 210, 265

Qadi · 35

race · 6, 36, 75-77, 81-83, 86, 87, 95, 105, 112, 165, 215, 286, 291
Radebe, Jeff · 59, 66, 191
Radebe, Meshack · 101, 130, 154
Rajbansi, Amichand · 77, 107, 108, 150, 151, 211
Record of Understanding · 61, 62, 65, 217
Regional Executive Committee · 47
regional identification · 6, 75, 98, 101-103, 132, 279, 286
religion · 6, 12, 286
respect · 30, 35, 43, 63, 95, 103, 109, 110, 139, 157, 166, 167, 174, 180, 181, 184, 188, 190-192, 196, 200, 201, 208, 214-217, 223, 227, 238, 243, 245-247, 258, 281, 286, 289-292, 296
rewardist nationalists · 226, 227, 230, 237, 246, 291
Richmond · 69, 130, 156, 183, 204
Robben Island · 46, 64-66, 103, 153, 157, 159, 160, 195, 207
Roopnarain, Usha · 88, 89, 97, 105, 143, 147, 192

Sastri College · 167
Schutte, Danie · 104, 108, 150
Scott, Belinda · 94, 104, 143, 185, 188, 193, 240, 241, 262, 278
Self-Protection Units (SPUs) · 20, 31, 70, 156
Shabalala, Thomas · 107, 146, 184, 185, 205, 208
Singh, Narend · 105, 107, 141, 189, 278
Singh, Omie · 104, 243, 246
Sisulu, Walter · 44, 183
Sithole, George · 94
Slovo, Joe · 61, 69
Sobukwe, Robert · 43, 44, 167
social background · 3, 12, 13, 73, 74, 87, 131, 133, 242, 286
social capital · 6, 74, 87, 95, 121, 127, 131, 187, 192, 193, 221, 241, 278, 287
social class · 1, 2, 12, 13, 74, 129
socialism · 57, 170, 171, 172
socialist · 37, 38, 47, 48, 61, 64, 119, 121, 146, 171, 215, 216, 219, 226
source validity · 21
South African Communist Party (SACP) · 19, 38, 39, 44, 45, 46, 51, 54, 58, 59, 61, 63-65, 67, 69, 70, 145, 169, 188, 190, 191, 207, 216
  Politico-Military Council · 215
  Prepare the Anvil for the Coming Hammer · 70
  Report of the Politico Military Strategy Commission (Green Book) · 46, 67
South African Congress of Trade Unions (SACTU) · 51, 54, 146, 158
South African Democratic Students Organisation (SADSM) · 142

South African Democratic Teachers Union (SADTU) · 210
South African Native National Congress · 35, 36
South African Sugar Association · 50
Southern Natal · 46, 48, 53, 55, 59, 66, 99, 101, 102, 104, 159, 160, 190, 191, 232
Soweto Action Committee · 43
special sitting of parliament · 243
St. Francis Roman Catholic Mission · 116
Sutcliffe, Mike · 81, 199, 233

Tarr, Mike · 86, 94, 193, 194, 240, 241, 262, 278
Teenage Pregnancy and Child Abuse Concerned Committee · 89
Terrorism Act · 157
Thakur, Shireen · 77, 107
Thusi, Weziwe · 94
traditionalism · 35, 41
traditionalist · 48, 71, 224
Transitional Executive Council (TEC) · 61, 70
Transkei Defence Force · 69
Transport and General Workers Union (TGWU) · 158
Treatment Action Campaign · 237
Tricameral Parliament · 4, 23, 78, 150, 264
Truth and Reconciliation Commission (TRC) · 20, 207
two turnover test · 4

Ubuntu · 43, 166
Ulundi · 28, 50, 84, 85, 100, 107, 142, 163, 188, 252, 253, 277, 279-281, 283
Ulundi Accord · 50
Umkhonto we Sizwe (MK) · 19, 21, 45, 51, 53, 54, 57, 62, 65-67, 69, 70, 103, 115, 116, 152, 153, 155-158, 160, 173
  Conference in Venda · 69
  Natal Provincial Command · 103, 156
  Regional High Command · 53
  Revolutionary Council · 44, 45, 215
Umlazi · 28, 50, 53, 105, 158
Umlazi Resident's Association (Umra) · 53
United Democratic Front (UDF) · 19, 20, 21, 33, 42, 47, 50, 53, 54, 56, 57, 59, 64, 66, 68, 103, 106, 142, 143, 155, 158, 159, 169, 170, 173, 216
United Democratic Movement (UDM) · 23, 114, 156, 162, 163, 183, 185, 193, 198, 205, 211, 240
United Party (UP) · 49, 108, 141, 145, 276, 278
United States of America Council of Legislatures · 273
United Workers Union of South Africa (UWUSA) · 59, 158
university · 20, 112, 114, 115, 117, 120, 142, 263
University
  of Fort Hare · 120
  of Natal · 117, 120, 142, 143
  of Zululand · 66, 118, 120, 142

van Eck, Charles · 79, 84, 149
Venter Commission of Inquiry · 127
Vezi, Ellis · 105, 131, 150, 189, 193, 194
Vilane, Jeff · 102
VIP Protection Unit · 70
Volker, Valentino · 77, 104, 145, 150
Vos, Suzanne · 52

warlord · 20, 56
Watterson, Derek · 145, 149
Weslyan Women International · 89
whips · 230
Wilkins, Clive · 187
Willowfontein Community Committee · 158
workerism · 41, 48, 49, 67
workerist · 47, 48, 64, 159

Xaba, Cyril · 96, 101, 117, 128, 142, 155, 195
Xulu, Maria · 193
Xundu, Reverend · 112, 142

Zulu monarch · 35, 63
Zulu royal family · 34
Zulu royal house · 34
Zulu, Prince Gideon · 107, 146, 148, 213
Zulu, Vincent · 107, 148, 154, 199, 210

Zuma, Jacob · 59, 67, 91, 97, 100, 104, 107, 111, 119, 146, 157, 159, 160, 163, 183, 191, 192, 199, 206, 215, 245, 246
Zuma, Nkosazana · 107, 120